

INTRODUCTION

As a Christian school, the staff of St. Patrick's attempt to establish, maintain and adhere to Christian values and ethics. These values lead us to believe that all persons are children of God and that service to anyone in need is rendered to God himself. Each boy is accepted for who he is and not for what he does or has done. This attitude reflects belief in the basic dignity of the person which leads us to a more caring society and helps us to remain responsive to the special needs of youth by a greater sensitivity of changing times.

Whatever is done in St. Patrick's is intended to help each boy grow in awareness of his own goodness and worth. Ultimately, it is this awareness which makes possible a more fulfilled, more responsible and more constructive life.

While respecting individual differences, St. Patrick's provides the young person with the secure setting needed for growth towards adulthood. This security is found, primarily within a community of caring, supportive and understanding people. Although the degree of personal involvement varies, no staff member - Caring, Teaching, Medical, Ancillary - is unimportant. Meeting needs, actualizing potentials and developing skills are essential elements in the school programme. Dealing with irresponsible behaviour must also be included. Irresponsible behaviour is damaging to the sense of self-worth and the good of others and therefore, must be opposed by all who care. Wisdom, as well as active concern,

is needed to turn occasions of irresponsibility into opportunities for personal growth and understanding.

In living this philosophy, our contribution to a young person's life is to enhance his opinion of himself and heighten his regard for others.

This paper, which is issued on behalf of the Board of Management, sets out guidelines governing the use of Slemish House (Close Supervision Unit). It is intended to be of assistance to those who are involved in the day-to-day running of the unit. It should also make a useful contribution to staff training and development. In addition it is hoped that the paper will provide useful guidance and information for Social Workers, Courts and other agencies and staff who are involved with children and their families when this type of placement has to be considered. It may also be made available, on request, to any children placed, or about to be placed, in the unit or their parents.

maintained by Bishop Anthony Farquhar, an Auxiliary Bishop of the Diocese and a member and subsequent chair of the Board of Management of St. Patrick's from 1983. This documentation is being collated for the Inquiry and a schedule along with an electronic copy will be provided at the earliest opportunity.

Diocesan Chaplains.

5. A full list of priests appointed by the Diocese to serve as Chaplains to St. Patrick's during the period under consideration has also been provided to the Inquiry. After consultation with the Diocesan Safeguarding Office I can confirm that the Diocese has no record of allegations of child abuse being made against any of the Chaplains who served at St. Patrick's Training School arising from their time there.

Early History of St. Patrick's Training School.

6. St Patrick's Industrial School, Belfast was established in 1869 by the late Bishop Patrick Dorrian (Bishop of Down and Connor from May 1865 to his death on 3rd November 1885), shortly after the passing of the Industrial Schools Act (Ireland) 1868. The first premises were at Donegall Street with an initial intake of between 20-24 boys. The principal focus of the school was to assist the boys in acquiring a trade. From its foundation it appears to have been under the management of a Committee comprising the Bishop of the Diocese as chair and five to six senior Parish Priests/ Administrators in the city, as well as the Vicar General of the Diocese. This remained the case until the early 1980's.
7. In 1870 the Diocese acquired a lease on a property known as 'Milltown House', in the vicinity of the present day Falls Road. After a short period in which both sites were in operation, St. Patrick's Industrial School moved to the 'Milltown House' site on the 11th January 1873. The first reference in Diocesan records to the De La Salle Order being invited to 'take charge' of the school occurs in the Minute Book recently discovered in the Glenmona Resource Centre. The first minute recorded relates to a meeting of the 'Committee of Ind. School' held on 5 March 1917. Chaired by the then Bishop of the Diocese, and later Cardinal Archbishop of Armagh, +Joseph MacRory, the minute records that the school accounts of 1916 were examined and 'found satisfactory', with 'Cash on hands' of £558:19:0 and a surplus of assets over liabilities of £1388:16:11. The minute then records, 'Discussion of question regarding the De La Salle Brothers taking charge of the School' before noting that the meeting was adjourned until 12 March 1917, one week later. The minute for this subsequent meeting on 12 March indicates that the 'Brother Provincial' and a 'Brother Michael' were present. The short minute of this meeting, signed by Bishop MacRory, simply records that 'Conditions of acceptance by brothers discussed' before noting a further postponement. A further meeting was held on 26 March

1917 but adjourned to 2 April 1917. The minute for this meeting of 2nd April simply records, 'finally arranged for Brothers to take charge of the school on 1 May 1917'.

8. From the Minute Book, it would appear that until 25th April 1955, meetings of 'the Committee' were generally held on an annual basis and focused on matters of finance, maintenance and development of buildings and property, as well as the appointment of staff. The annual auditors report from the very first meeting after the move to Milltown indicates that the finances of the institution were considered 'satisfactory' or 'very satisfactory' in every case. Indeed, at the request of the Brothers, a number of increases to the salary provided to the Brothers were approved in these early years. On 25th Oct 1920, for example, it is recorded that at the request of Br. Joseph, the 'salaries' of the Brothers would be increased 'by £20 per head per annum'. This same meeting records that 'the debt incurred by the purchase of the farm was paid off', suggesting that the five acre farm purchased with the Milltown site was a key source of revenue for the school as well as various bequests that are occasionally referenced in the minutes. The minutes also confirm that all purchase of lands and property throughout the history of the Institution were financed by the Diocese, latterly on the proportional grant-aided basis agreed at the time with the relevant government department.
9. Notably, each minute from 7th June 1929 up to April 1955, when meetings became quarterly, mentions that the reports of the 'Diocesan Examiner' and of the 'School Inspectors' (in some minutes specified as 'the Board of Education Inspector + the Home Office Inspector') were read at the meeting. Without exception, these annual reports are recorded as being 'very' or 'highly satisfactory'. The minutes indicate that the Committee itself undertook occasional inspections of the school. In 1930, for example, it is recorded that such an inspection had found the 'Tailoring Shop' to be 'very unsatisfactory' and that a 'change in the working of the shop' considered necessary. It is perhaps important to note that the role of the 'Diocesan Examiner', consistent with the practice in all Catholic schools in the Diocese at the time, would have been limited to an assessment of the quality of religious instruction in the school. This is confirmed by occasional use in the minutes of the title 'Catechetical Inspector' rather than the title 'Diocesan Examiner'.
10. In terms of engagement with the statutory authorities, it is worthy of note that as early as 19th February 1924 reference is made to engagement with the 'Superintendent' who is asked to 'look about Malone Reformatory' and 'to inquire the cost, fitness and assistance from Home Office to be got for the Industrial School.' Of interest in relation to the later development of the home at Rubane, the minute of this meeting as far back as February 1924 records that, in 'the opinion of the Committee [it] is undesirable to have Ref. boys in the same Estb. with Industrial

PRIVATE

Life after care

38. When I left care I got money from my sister and went to England. I went between Belfast and England. I stayed with my family in England, to get away from everything that was going on over here. My sister had a young family, and she moved to Birmingham to bring them up rather than here. My brother and I went to London to see our father as he had left the navy at that time because he had lost an eye. I was never that close to my father. I did menial and manual work. In those days I couldn't get a job. I moved back to Northern Ireland in 1970 as I felt that I was out of my depth in England.

39. Years ago, the police tried to contact me about my time in Rubane, but I kept avoiding them. It's not a question of wanting justice in the sense that I want to see somebody punished or to go to prison. I would like to understand why these people felt the need to do what they did.

40. I think that the people working in the homes should never have been in those positions. They were vindictive, evil people. They were just violent people in disguise as disciples. There was no humanity. There was nothing that would indicate that we actually existed. We only existed for the Brothers to punish us, and take their frustrations out on us. I think there was a lot of resentment from them, because they had to be looking after us. In my view, it shouldn't have been all men looking after boys. There should have been some sort of balance. There was no community and no affection. There was no steadying influence, and nobody to show me the way. A child should go in to an environment where there is balance and a little bit of love. It was all dogma. It was all rammed down your throat. I don't have any feelings in regard to religion. The only reason I ever went to chapel was because of my wife, such as having our children baptised. I don't blame all the religious community. I admire people that believe and have the sense to go to chapel, and feel community with people, but I don't have that feeling.

1917 but adjourned to 2 April 1917. The minute for this meeting of 2nd April simply records, 'finally arranged for Brothers to take charge of the school on 1 May 1917'.

8. From the Minute Book, it would appear that until 25th April 1955, meetings of 'the Committee' were generally held on an annual basis and focused on matters of finance, maintenance and development of buildings and property, as well as the appointment of staff. The annual auditors report from the very first meeting after the move to Milltown indicates that the finances of the institution were considered 'satisfactory' or 'very satisfactory' in every case. Indeed, at the request of the Brothers, a number of increases to the salary provided to the Brothers were approved in these early years. On 25th Oct 1920, for example, it is recorded that at the request of Br. Joseph, the 'salaries' of the Brothers would be increased 'by £20 per head per annum'. This same meeting records that 'the debt incurred by the purchase of the farm was paid off', suggesting that the five acre farm purchased with the Milltown site was a key source of revenue for the school as well as various bequests that are occasionally referenced in the minutes. The minutes also confirm that all purchase of lands and property throughout the history of the Institution were financed by the Diocese, latterly on the proportional grant-aided basis agreed at the time with the relevant government department.
9. Notably, each minute from 7th June 1929 up to April 1955, when meetings became quarterly, mentions that the reports of the 'Diocesan Examiner' and of the 'School Inspectors' (in some minutes specified as 'the Board of Education Inspector + the Home Office Inspector') were read at the meeting. Without exception, these annual reports are recorded as being 'very' or 'highly satisfactory'. The minutes indicate that the Committee itself undertook occasional inspections of the school. In 1930, for example, it is recorded that such an inspection had found the 'Tailoring Shop' to be 'very unsatisfactory' and that a 'change in the working of the shop' considered necessary. It is perhaps important to note that the role of the 'Diocesan Examiner', consistent with the practice in all Catholic schools in the Diocese at the time, would have been limited to an assessment of the quality of religious instruction in the school. This is confirmed by occasional use in the minutes of the title 'Catechetical Inspector' rather than the title 'Diocesan Examiner'.
10. In terms of engagement with the statutory authorities, it is worthy of note that as early as 19th February 1924 reference is made to engagement with the 'Superintendent' who is asked to 'look about Malone Reformatory' and 'to inquire the cost, fitness and assistance from Home Office to be got for the Industrial School.' Of interest in relation to the later development of the home at Rubane, the minute of this meeting as far back as February 1924 records that, in 'the opinion of the Committee [it] is undesirable to have Ref. boys in the same Estb. with Industrial

Boys. We recom. that provision be made for these Ref. boys elsewhere'. It would seem that the intake of the Milltown School remained a mixture of Reformatory and Industrial boys until the founding of Rubane House in 1950. Up to that time numbers in Milltown fluctuated, from 161 in 1917, to 87 in 1931, to a peak of 235 in 1943.

11. The minute of 8th May 1918 makes it clear that 'Fr. Convery being the chaplain at present is', however, 'not entitled by the Agreement to be a member of the Committee or to assist at the meetings'. The Diocese has no other record of those priests appointed chaplain until the appointment of Fr Peter McCann in 1948. This may suggest that the appointment was associated with a curacy in one of the nearby city parishes until 1948. This would be consistent with the decision recorded in the Minute Book for 5th March 1947 to appoint a 'full-time chaplain with suitable living accommodation provided on the school premises'. There is no evidence to suggest that the chaplain ever had any role beyond that of providing for the sacramental and spiritual care of the residents.
12. Perhaps because of the impact of the Second World War, no meetings are recorded in the Minute Book for the three years from 25th March 1938 to 9th May 1941. At this May '41 meeting a decision is made to take a lease on a property known as 'Alexander House' in Forkhill and to transfer sixty of the younger boys there 'to ensure their safety in the present crisis'. A decision is also taken to 'construct shelters on the school grounds for the safety of the boys who remain' and to install a film projector in the recreation hall of Milltown. In February 1943, in response to a request from the Management Committee, the minutes record that the Ministry for Home Affairs agreed to increase the maintenance grant to 'a pound for each boy per week'.

Decision to Build a New School on the Glen Road.

13. The February 1943 meeting also records the decision to build a new school at the earliest possible date on a suitable site 'convenient to the city and if the Ministry would be willing to give financial assistance'. It is clear that Brother Stephen, the new director of the school in August 1942, acted with great alacrity and concern for the needs of the boys in response to this decision. He presented the next meeting of the Committee on 31st March 1943 with a possible site for the new school. The purchase of this site at the cost of £16,500 was approved as was an increase in the salaries of the Brothers 'by 50% per head per annum', requested by Br Stephen. The then Bishop of the Diocese, Dr Daniel Mageean, subsequently purchased the site on the Glen Road comprising of 99 acres on 30th August 1943 (folios 22714 and 2688 County Antrim). By a deed of Declaration of Trust dated 28th March 1944, a trust for

Br. Stephen Kelly was sent to St. Patrick's Milltown in 1942 as a junior assistant and was appointed Director in September 1944. BR 97 had been transferred from St. Patrick's in March of that year. Br. Stephen received an OBE for his work in Child Care.

Concerned for the safety of the young people because of the air raids in Belfast, a meeting was held on the 9th May 1941 and it was decided to transfer 62 of the younger boys were transferred to Alexander House in Forkhill which was five miles from Dundalk. The junior boys continued in Forkhill until March 1944.

We do not have access to records of Forkhill or of St. Patrick's. I understand that if [REDACTED] wished to view his records, he would have to apply to the N.I. Office and would be allowed to view them under supervision.

I hope that this information will be of some help to [REDACTED]. If I can be of any further help, please let me know.

Yours sincerely,

BR 32

BR 32



VIEW OF ST. PATRICK'S NEW TRAINING SCHOOL AND BROTHERS' RESIDENCE



OLD MILLTOWN BOYS' HOME

1 Q. And are now therefore --

2 A. [REDACTED]

3 Q. You've reached the age of [REDACTED]

4 A. **Correct.**

5 Q. And you first came to St. Patrick's on

6 [REDACTED].

7 A. **Correct.**

8 Q. At that stage you were [REDACTED] years of age.

9 A. **Yes.**

10 Q. And at that stage the training school was based at
11 Milltown.

12 A. **Milltown, yes.**

13 Q. And can I just ask you, if we pause at that point, can
14 you recollect, doing the best you can, going back many,
15 many years -- can you describe for the Panel what life
16 was like in Milltown and perhaps contrast it then with
17 the new facilities that became available in 1957, when
18 you moved to the Glen Road?

19 A. **Yes. I'll try. It was an old ramshackle building.**
20 **Most of the boys that were resident in it apart from**
21 **a group of about thirty that had to go down the lane way**
22 **at night to what was an old mill for sleeping purposes,**
23 **and I happened to be one of those people that was --**
24 **there were two members of staff and I would be one of**
25 **them that slept in the old mill at that time with about**

1 thirty boys. Conditions were grim. We had nothing, but
2 in a strange sort of way we wanted nothing either,
3 because we didn't know any better, and the lads were
4 very, very contented for the most part. Now they were
5 vastly different to what I encountered over the years,
6 especially in the '70s, '80s and onwards.

7 Q. The type of boys were vastly --

8 A. Yes.

9 Q. That's what I wanted to ask you.

10 A. Vastly different.

11 Q. What you were -- in terms of your management of the
12 boys, the type of boys that you were having to deal with
13 in the '50s in Milltown compared to the type of problems
14 that the boys had who were being sent to St. Patrick's
15 in the '70s, '80s and early '90s, can you give the Panel
16 some idea of any differences there were between the type
17 of boys?

18 A. They were very, very different. The young lads coming
19 in in my [REDACTED] years there from [REDACTED] onwards, a lot of
20 them were in for very, very minor offences, fairly
21 trivial offences, pilfering and that sort of thing and
22 maybe out of shops or whatever. A number of them were
23 committed for not going to school. A number of them
24 were committed because of broken homes and family
25 background. There would have been maybe six or eight

1 thirty boys. Conditions were grim. We had nothing, but
2 in a strange sort of way we wanted nothing either,
3 because we didn't know any better, and the lads were
4 very, very contented for the most part. Now they were
5 vastly different to what I encountered over the years,
6 especially in the '70s, '80s and onwards.

7 Q. The type of boys were vastly --

8 A. Yes.

9 Q. That's what I wanted to ask you.

10 A. Vastly different.

11 Q. What you were -- in terms of your management of the
12 boys, the type of boys that you were having to deal with
13 in the '50s in Milltown compared to the type of problems
14 that the boys had who were being sent to St. Patrick's
15 in the '70s, '80s and early '90s, can you give the Panel
16 some idea of any differences there were between the type
17 of boys?

18 A. They were very, very different. The young lads coming
19 in in my [REDACTED] years there from [REDACTED] onwards, a lot of
20 them were in for very, very minor offences, fairly
21 trivial offences, pilfering and that sort of thing and
22 maybe out of shops or whatever. A number of them were
23 committed for not going to school. A number of them
24 were committed because of broken homes and family
25 background. There would have been maybe six or eight

1 young lads in voluntary -- in a voluntary capacity, not
2 having gone through the courts, but having made an
3 arrangement with the principal of the school at the time
4 to take them maybe for a month or two months or whatever
5 almost on a charitable basis. They might have
6 contributed marginally towards their upkeep, but that
7 was never the main issue really, you know.

8 Q. Am I right in saying, BR26, that the type of complex
9 behavioural difficulties and more serious criminal
10 offending backgrounds of individuals that pertained in
11 the '70s, '80s, '90s, it was not that type of boy that
12 you were dealing with in the '50s in Milltown?

13 A. No.

14 Q. So it's over time the level of difficulty, behavioural
15 difficulty or level of offending that was presenting
16 itself in an individual coming into St. Patrick's was
17 much greater?

18 A. Took on a different level altogether, much more serious.

19 Q. And then in [REDACTED] you are [REDACTED] years of age and you move as
20 part of the community of Brothers and the training
21 school to the new premises on the Glen Road.

22 A. Correct.

23 Q. And the Panel during the openings looked at newspaper
24 articles that I drew to their attention of how the great
25 and the good were describing the Glen Road facility, but

Home Affairs, the 99 acres of the Glen Road farm were reassigned for the specific purpose of providing and managing a Training School as contemplated by the *Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1950*. Under the terms of this new Trust, the Trustees declared that they held the property for the said purposes for a period of 50 years.

Tensions over Governance and Funding of the new Glen Road facility.

18. It is clear that paralleling the concern over mixing voluntary and 'committed' children, tensions existed between the Ministry for Home Affairs and the Diocesan Trustees, supported by the Brothers, about governance arrangements for any prospective new facility on the Glen Road site. At the meeting of 15th February 1950, the minute records that 'The new Rules and Regulations for Training Schools was then considered and it was decided to resist any regulation that changed the present status of the Governing Board.' The precise nature of the concern of the Board is not elaborated at this point. However, a subsequent minute sheds some light on this position. At the meeting of 3rd February 1953, the Committee records that "A letter was read from the Ministry for Home Affairs with reference to the new *Training School Rules 1952*, pointing out that under Rule 4 the Board of Management of boys' schools should include at least two lady members. The Manager was instructed to write to the Ministry drawing their attention to Rule 56 and to point out that no change in the present constitution of the Board of Management was advisable". As no change occurred in the mode of composition of the Management Board until the late 1980's, it appears that the matter was considered resolved by the correspondence arising from the February 1953 meeting. The main anxiety of the Committee in resisting the implementation of 'Rule 4' in favour of the requirements of 'Rule 56' seems to have been a concern to ensure the integrity of the religious ethos and character of the school. It is perhaps worth noting that a few years before this dispute arose, on 8th February 1944 the Committee had agreed, in direct response to the Home Office Inspectors report, 'to appoint a trained nurse and arrange her duties and salary'. This heralded the arrival of an element of feminine care staff, with the Bon Secour Order providing several Religious Sisters as nurses.

19. In 1952 the 'Brother's House' was built on the site at a cost of £37,687.11.4. After consideration by the Board of Management and approval by the Ministry, a tender of £221,699.19.7 from 'Walls & Brothers', which was the lowest received, was accepted and building of the new Training School on the Glen Road site began. On 11th August 1952 the first of a considerable number of Legal Charges was registered against the property in favour of the (then) Ministry of Finance for Northern Ireland as security for grants amounting to approximately 50% of the costs of building of the school.

20. During the years when the new school was being built, a number of tensions emerged between the Management Board and the Ministry over the funding of a Chapel and a swimming pool on the site. The Board considered the presence of a swimming pool as 'an essential facility' (Minute 26th March 1956) but the Ministry withdrew its approval for the funding. The Bishop of the Diocese (+Daniel Mageean) subsequently provided the £18,000 of funds required for the pool out of Diocesan resources. In terms of providing a chapel at the new school, the tensions around use of public funds to support the erection of such a building is perhaps best captured by the following exert from the minute of 19th October 1955: 'Br. Stephen then submitted a report of a recent interview he had with Mr G.B. Hanna QC, MP, Minister of Home Affairs and Mr Aidan Robinson, Permanent Secretary. At this interview the Minister pointed out his difficulty in approving a grant for the erection of the new chapel owing to the resolutions he had received from the Evangelical Protestant Society. He agreed to sanction a gymnasium in lieu of the Chapel with the provision that the Board of Management would be free to equip this building for religious services if they desired to do so at their own expense. His Lordship and the other members of the Board approved this decision and thought a happy solution had been reached.' In subsequent years further sums were advanced to the Trustees by the Ministry for Home Affairs towards the cost of various enhancements of the facility including, inter alia, a gate lodge, classroom accommodation and ancillary accommodation, a pre-licence hostel, a Playing Field, Children's playground and other recreational facilities. In the opinion of the Diocese, the position of the Ministry of Home Affairs appears to have been much more satisfactory in respect of St. Patrick's throughout its history than with the voluntary home at Rubane.

Opening and progress of the new Glen Road Facility.

21. The new Training School was officially opened on 1st September 1957. It continued as a Technical School where in addition to tuition on literary and mathematical subjects the Senior boys received training in bricklaying, woodwork, mechanics and painting. Two years later, discussions began with the Ministry for Home Affairs about introducing the Secondary Intermediate System, noting that this would require an extension to the existing building and an increase in teaching staff. Building of the new extension began in the spring of 1964 with a projected cost and approved tender to P&F McDonnell of £37,991. Up to this point the Board of Management continued its practice of meeting on an annual basis, with occasional 'Special Meetings' to deal with major decisions such as building the new School on the Glen Road site. With the apparent approval of the Ministry, this practice of annual meetings changed to quarterly meetings in February 1965. The minute of

Home Affairs, the 99 acres of the Glen Road farm were reassigned for the specific purpose of providing and managing a Training School as contemplated by the *Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1950*. Under the terms of this new Trust, the Trustees declared that they held the property for the said purposes for a period of 50 years.

Tensions over Governance and Funding of the new Glen Road facility.

18. It is clear that paralleling the concern over mixing voluntary and 'committed' children, tensions existed between the Ministry for Home Affairs and the Diocesan Trustees, supported by the Brothers, about governance arrangements for any prospective new facility on the Glen Road site. At the meeting of 15th February 1950, the minute records that 'The new Rules and Regulations for Training Schools was then considered and it was decided to resist any regulation that changed the present status of the Governing Board.' The precise nature of the concern of the Board is not elaborated at this point. However, a subsequent minute sheds some light on this position. At the meeting of 3rd February 1953, the Committee records that "A letter was read from the Ministry for Home Affairs with reference to the new *Training School Rules 1952*, pointing out that under Rule 4 the Board of Management of boys' schools should include at least two lady members. The Manager was instructed to write to the Ministry drawing their attention to Rule 56 and to point out that no change in the present constitution of the Board of Management was advisable". As no change occurred in the mode of composition of the Management Board until the late 1980's, it appears that the matter was considered resolved by the correspondence arising from the February 1953 meeting. The main anxiety of the Committee in resisting the implementation of 'Rule 4' in favour of the requirements of 'Rule 56' seems to have been a concern to ensure the integrity of the religious ethos and character of the school. It is perhaps worth noting that a few years before this dispute arose, on 8th February 1944 the Committee had agreed, in direct response to the Home Office Inspectors report, 'to appoint a trained nurse and arrange her duties and salary'. This heralded the arrival of an element of feminine care staff, with the Bon Secour Order providing several Religious Sisters as nurses.

19. In 1952 the 'Brother's House' was built on the site at a cost of £37,687.11.4. After consideration by the Board of Management and approval by the Ministry, a tender of £221,699.19.7 from 'Walls & Brothers', which was the lowest received, was accepted and building of the new Training School on the Glen Road site began. On 11th August 1952 the first of a considerable number of Legal Charges was registered against the property in favour of the (then) Ministry of Finance for Northern Ireland as security for grants amounting to approximately 50% of the costs of building of the school.

1 you were there taking possession of it with others. How
2 would you describe it and in comparison to where you'd
3 come from at Milltown?

4 **A. It bore no relation to what we had experienced in**
5 **Milltown in terms of the building and facilities and all**
6 **that, admitting now that everything was not yet complete**
7 **in the Glen Road. As the years progressed, a swimming**
8 **pool was provided and another recreation hall was built**
9 **and furniture and furnishings were improved vastly over**
10 **the years, but that took a period of time, but in the**
11 **general layout it was a state of the art building in,**
12 **what, 100 acre complex.**

13 **Q. So the facilities --**

14 **A. It was a dream come true really and for the young lads**
15 **too.**

16 **Q. The facilities were excellent?**

17 **A. Absolutely.**

18 **Q. And you are describing -- in passing you've mentioned**
19 **the swimming pool, the recreation hall. There were**
20 **pitches and sporting activity. Engaging the boys in**
21 **sporting recreation was a major focus --**

22 **A. Absolutely.**

23 **Q. -- of how life at St. Patrick's operated, and you had**
24 **teams that participated then beyond --**

25 **A. Oh, indeed.**

general charitable purposes in the Diocese of Down and Connor was declared by Bishop Mageean and his Diocesan co-trustees in respect of the property.

14. It is clear from the subsequent minutes, however, that the substantial revenue from the 'Glen Road' farm associated with the new site was directed to the benefit of the school. The minutes of 8th February 1944, a year after purchase, record that the accounts for the 'Glen Road Farm' had shown a profit for the year of £697:9:1, a profit regarded by the Committee as 'most satisfactory'.
15. In January 1946, Architects plans for the proposed new school were submitted by the Committee to the Ministry for Home Affairs, along with a recommendation that the new school, according to the minute, 'be available for the reception of orphan boys on a voluntary basis', the orphan boys to 'be paid for at the same rate as committed cases'. The following year it is decided to rent 'a mansion from Joseph Maguire, Ballinluig, Glenarriffe, at an annual rent of £150 to be used as a summer holiday camp for orphan boys'.

The need to provide separate facilities for 'voluntary' and 'committed' boys.

16. The question of having voluntary boys in the same type of care facility as so-called 'committed cases' seems to have been a matter of particular and ongoing concern for the Management Committee and the Brothers, particularly as the prospect of a facility on the new site developed. At the meeting of 16th March 1949, for example, it is decided to defer the question of the 'advisability of admitting voluntary boys to avail of our present training facilities', while at the next meeting on 15th February 1950 a decision is made to 'take immediate steps to procure a large mansion convenient to Belfast' for the reception of 'Catholic boys coming in to the care of the Welfare authorities' as a voluntary home. Perhaps intensified by the passing in to law of the Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1950, this concern to address the particular needs of 'voluntary boys' on the one hand, and the imminent prospect of a new facility for 'committed cases' on the Glen Road site on the other precipitates a series of what are described in the minutes as 'Special Meetings' throughout the year 1950.
17. At the 'Special Meeting' of 31st March 1950 the decision is taken to accept the proposal by Brother Stephen to purchase 'Rubane House' as 'a Voluntary Home for boys' which was 'offered for sale at £35,000'. At the very same meeting a decision is made to accept an offer from the Ministry of Home Affairs to vest the Glen Road Farm site for 'a new school', the full cost to be met by way of a 'special grant' from the Government Loan Fund of £13,651:9:2. By a subsequent Declaration of Trust dated 26th June 1951, made between the Diocesan Trustees and the Ministry of

1 Q. Paragraph 14 here you talk about the intensive care
2 unit, again a semi-secure unit with a high ratio of
3 staff to young people. That was seen as a short-term
4 provision aimed at reintegrating young people back into
5 the open school. Now at this stage this is before the
6 separation of care and youth treatment, and I wondered
7 did the intensive care unit -- is that what became
8 Shamrock?

9 **A. It did. It became Shamrock.**

10 Q. And then we've heard that Fox Lodge was the intensive
11 care unit effectively for the youth treatment side of
12 the centre.

13 **A. That's right.**

14 Q. Just talking about that split between care and youth
15 treatment, you informed me that the actual term "youth
16 treatment" was yours, that you felt that the term
17 "justice" was an inappropriate term, and you didn't want
18 that used, because you wanted an emphasis on the
19 individual and assessment of the individual. You talk
20 about that certainly when you talk about the APRU and
21 the individual profiles -- assessment profiles that were
22 created in respect of each child. Your view was that it
23 was about treating the child --

24 **A. Uh-huh.**

25 Q. -- whether they had come in on a justice side Training

1 School Order or on a care Training School Order.

2 **A. Yes. That's true.**

3 Q. That would have been your philosophy.

4 **A. Absolutely.**

5 Q. And you made the point to me -- and again I know I'm
6 doing a lot of talking here, and I know you are
7 conscious of focusing on certain things, Campbell -- but
8 the backgrounds of the kids who came into Rathgael you
9 are saying were very much the same whether they had been
10 an offender or whether they had been come in --

11 **A. That's true.**

12 Q. -- on a care order.

13 **A. Yes.**

14 Q. They -- they had -- in terms of behaviour you say that
15 the care children, in fact, were more problematic.

16 **A. Uh-huh.**

17 Q. And you made also the point, and I think you make it in
18 your statement, that during its operation Rathgael dealt
19 with the most difficult and disturbed children in
20 Northern Ireland, because other institutions simply
21 couldn't cope with them.

22 **A. Correct.**

23 Q. I think you use a phrase, and perhaps you wanted to
24 repeat it to me, that -- the Inquiry to hear that you
25 say that you consumed the smoke that choked others.

In the early 1990's, St Patrick's Main School Block which was an institutional type of building was considered to be outdated and no longer suitable to provide child care facilities. Between 1992-1995, this Department provided a major capital investment of over £1.9m in the school which allowed for the building of two new purpose built units and the refurbishment of an existing double unit. These units replaced the old school block which was by then considered to be in a dangerous condition and was demolished in 1996. However, the recreational facilities and workshop that were part of the old building were not replaced.

On 4 November 1996, the introduction of the Children (NI) Order 1995 removed the responsibility from the Secretary of State of those children in need of care and protection, thereafter those children became the responsibility of the Department of Health & Social Services (DHSS). The "Justice" children remained the responsibility of the NIO.

Under the terms of the Children (NI) Order 1995, St Patrick's took out a contract with the DHSS to provide bed spaces within the new Care Reception Units and newly refurbished Care Units and that part of the St Patrick's campus became known as Glenmona Resource Centre. Their contracts with DHSS are continuing.

On 1 February 1999, the Criminal Justice Children (NI) Order became effective, thereafter that part of the former Training Schools which provided facilities for offenders were renamed as Juvenile Justice Centres. Under the terms of the new Order only the most serious of offenders would be sent to custody. The Order therefore, significantly reduced the numbers of children in the Juvenile Justice Centres with the effect that a review of Juvenile Justice Estates was undertaken during 1999 followed by a consultation exercise in mid 2000.

On 29 November 2000, the Minister of State announced his decision on the future of Juvenile Justice Estates that a new single centre would be built on the present Rathgael site and despite St Patrick's best expectations both St Patrick's and Lisnevin Centres would close.

In effect St Patrick's Centre is now closed and staff have either transferred to the employment of the Juvenile Justice Board or have opted to take redundancy. The closure exercise was completed in January 2001.

continued work in this sphere led to his being awarded an O.B.E. by Queen Elizabeth II of England. On the occasion the editorial in a Belfast newspaper had this to say about Brother Stephen Kelly:¹⁰⁹

Those who look to the Honours List to reflect the best of the social pattern in all its variety will be warmed by the O.B.E. awarded to Rev. Brother Stephen Kelly. Something of the nobility of his work among boys can be seen in his acceptance, for it is a positive step towards a society in which service to mankind transcends all divisions.

After his work for St Patrick's Training School and for De La Salle Orphan Boys' Home at Kircubbin was firmly established Brother Stephen Kelly died, and few who knew him and his work were unaffected by his passing.¹¹⁰ Mr Robert Porter, Minister for Home Affairs, paid him this tribute: "It was with real regret that I learned of the sudden death of Brother Stephen Kelly, O.B.E. Brother Stephen devoted his life to children in need. The success of St Patrick's Training School for about thirty years has been due to his careful direction, initiative and drive."¹¹¹ May A.F.E. Haughten of the Northern Ireland Council of Social Services, wrote: "We have lost a fine, wise and generous man and one whose service to the community has been of great value not only to St Patrick's but to all organisations working in the field of Child Care".¹¹² In a tribute to Brother Stephen Kelly, Bishop Michael Harty of Killaloe said that: "He was the most outstanding Toomevara man of his generation and when I heard the priests of Belfast sing his praises, I was always proud to remind them that we came from the same place. His early and sudden death is a great tragedy for Belfast, just at a time when the City needs his charity and his dedication, but God will inspire others to carry on his great work".¹¹³

Brother **BR 5** who had been director of the community since 1965 became manager of St Patrick's immediately after Brother Stephen Kelly's death, when there were 19 brothers and 45 lay teachers and instructors on the staff, with 147 boys ranging in ages from 10 to 18. The school was then committed to follow the current international trend in institutional child care: the cottage unit, with resident houseparents. Within a few months work commenced on two cottages, one for fifteen junior boys, and another for seniors. A pre-licence chalet was opened in February 1975 for boys due for release in three or four months to give them the opportunity of living with a

in
ers'
ered
the
was
B.A.
in
ight
ege,
970
He
the
or a
buth
the
, for
ional

ourg,
llege.

Karen Pearson
Head of Criminal Justice Division

Mr Paddy Butler
Solicitor to the Historical Institutional
Abuse Inquiry
HIA Inquiry
P Box 2080
Belfast

Criminal Justice Division
Massey House
Stormont Estate
Belfast
BT4 3SX
Direct line 028 9016 9568
Textphone 028 9016 3426
E-mail: karen.pearson@dojni.x.gsi.gov.uk

28 August 2015

Dear Paddy,

Request for confirmation of pupil files held by DOJ

Counsel to the Inquiry has requested confirmation of the minimum number of residents in St Patrick's Training School between 1926 and the closure of the school. I can advise that the Department's initial analysis of the personal files which it holds in respect of ex-residents of St Patrick's has identified 4,537 pupils. Please note that this assessment has not been validated and may contain errors or duplications.



Karen Pearson
Department of Justice

Date of 1953	NAME	Complaint
28th January	Miss Miller, Ministry of Home Affairs, visited the school	
29th		
30th		
31st	[REDACTED] (S.I.B.) licensed	
1st February		
2nd		
3rd		
	<p>MEETING OF BOARD OF MANAGEMENT</p> <p>Meeting of Board of Management, His Lordship, Mpt Rev. Dr. Mageau presided and there was a full attendance of members present. Bro. Stephenson instructed to forward the plans of the new Training School to the Ministry for final approval. It was decided to purchase Ballinlurg House, Glenariffe, as a Holiday Home for the boys. A letter was read from the Ministry drawing attention to Rule 14 of Training School Rules (1952) which required at least 2 members of the Board of Management of a Boys' Training School to be ladies. The Manager was instructed to write to the Ministry informing them that the Board did not consider it advisable to change its present constitution.</p>	
4th	<p>Bro. Stephenson, Mr MacLandal & Mr McGeagh went to the Ministry of Home Affairs for a conference regarding the plans for the proposed new Training School at Glen Road (Mr McGeagh being unable to attend). Also present at the conference were: Mr A. Robertson (Per. Sec.), Mr Jackson (Vice Principal) & Mr Knight (Architect)</p>	

Home Affairs, the 99 acres of the Glen Road farm were reassigned for the specific purpose of providing and managing a Training School as contemplated by the *Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1950*. Under the terms of this new Trust, the Trustees declared that they held the property for the said purposes for a period of 50 years.

Tensions over Governance and Funding of the new Glen Road facility.

18. It is clear that paralleling the concern over mixing voluntary and 'committed' children, tensions existed between the Ministry for Home Affairs and the Diocesan Trustees, supported by the Brothers, about governance arrangements for any prospective new facility on the Glen Road site. At the meeting of 15th February 1950, the minute records that 'The new Rules and Regulations for Training Schools was then considered and it was decided to resist any regulation that changed the present status of the Governing Board.' The precise nature of the concern of the Board is not elaborated at this point. However, a subsequent minute sheds some light on this position. At the meeting of 3rd February 1953, the Committee records that "A letter was read from the Ministry for Home Affairs with reference to the new *Training School Rules 1952*, pointing out that under Rule 4 the Board of Management of boys' schools should include at least two lady members. The Manager was instructed to write to the Ministry drawing their attention to Rule 56 and to point out that no change in the present constitution of the Board of Management was advisable". As no change occurred in the mode of composition of the Management Board until the late 1980's, it appears that the matter was considered resolved by the correspondence arising from the February 1953 meeting. The main anxiety of the Committee in resisting the implementation of 'Rule 4' in favour of the requirements of 'Rule 56' seems to have been a concern to ensure the integrity of the religious ethos and character of the school. It is perhaps worth noting that a few years before this dispute arose, on 8th February 1944 the Committee had agreed, in direct response to the Home Office Inspectors report, 'to appoint a trained nurse and arrange her duties and salary'. This heralded the arrival of an element of feminine care staff, with the Bon Secour Order providing several Religious Sisters as nurses.

19. In 1952 the 'Brother's House' was built on the site at a cost of £37,687.11.4. After consideration by the Board of Management and approval by the Ministry, a tender of £221,699.19.7 from 'Walls & Brothers', which was the lowest received, was accepted and building of the new Training School on the Glen Road site began. On 11th August 1952 the first of a considerable number of Legal Charges was registered against the property in favour of the (then) Ministry of Finance for Northern Ireland as security for grants amounting to approximately 50% of the costs of building of the school.

1 **A. Yes, and I could have spoken my mind and I wasn't**
2 **frightened to do so.**

3 **Q. Can I just ask about the management committee? Were you**
4 **-- did you have contact with them? Were you aware of**
5 **them being around the place?**

6 **A. Well, not in -- not in the early stages. I think in the**
7 **early day the management committee was probably made up**
8 **more of religious priests and members of the diocese,**
9 **maybe of the trustees, but certainly in the late '80s,**
10 **I think following an inspection report in 1988, you**
11 **know, which was a bit critical of the management**
12 **structures, more lay people came in on to the management**
13 **board, people with experience of -- you know, of various**
14 **occupations related to social work, I mean, teaching and**
15 **human resource management and various things. They**
16 **would -- they would have had a much higher profile in**
17 **the school and would have been in contact much more with**
18 **the staff, but that was towards the latter end of the**
19 **training school's period.**

20 **Q. And do you remember in relation to inspections was there**
21 **any -- I mean, were staff -- you were talking about that**
22 **was kind of a critical inspection, but were staff told**
23 **about the outcomes of inspections? Did they see**
24 **inspection reports or ...?**

25 **A. I don't remember many inspections, but the 1988**

1 Q. And --

2 A. Another one of them would have been the Licensing
3 Committee.

4 Q. And can you just explain a little bit about the
5 Licensing Committee to the Panel Members, because you
6 have touched on something that I was going to raise with
7 you. If you just deal with that now.

8 A. That was set up to review the progress or lack of it of
9 individual -- of all the boys really, you know, and it
10 used to meet I think once a month. It was comprised
11 mainly of three or four people from the community who
12 had long work experience of young people and young
13 people in difficult situations and that. They would be
14 very sympathetic towards them, and their conduct and
15 progress was reviewed, and the panel would make
16 recommendations to the school management as to the
17 future of this young lad, whether he should be
18 considered for work experience or early release or
19 whether his best interests are being served by staying
20 on where he is and encouraging him in this line, that
21 line or the other line.

22 Q. Again is that another example, BR26, of -- I can recall
23 the documents that show there was always a licensing
24 process where the head of the school would have written
25 to the Ministry of Home Affairs saying, "We are going to

1 license this boy out early and this is what he is going
2 to do". As time goes on and we get towards -- more
3 towards the end of the Inquiry's terms of reference in
4 the early '90s and so on, that had become a much more
5 elaborate evaluation exercise by this Licensing
6 Committee with external elements contributing. So
7 a much more broad view is being taken than simply the
8 head talking to his housemasters about a particular boy.

9 **A. Right.**

10 Q. So it's bringing more structure perhaps to the system --

11 **A. Very much --**

12 Q. -- albeit it is carrying out the same task, just in
13 a different way.

14 **A. Yes, very much so. The reports of the Licensing**
15 **Committee on individual fellas were compiled by the**
16 **young lad's housemaster, because the housemaster --**
17 **I would always see the housemaster as being the person**
18 **who has got the pulse of the young lad. Whether it is**
19 **ticking fast or ticking slow, he has still got the pulse**
20 **of the young fella and that's the very person you would**
21 **depend on to present the report. If needs be, if the**
22 **young lad wanted to go to the Panel himself and meet**
23 **them, he was welcome to do so.**

24 Q. Another subcommittee appeared to be engaged in, as
25 an example, the West Side Project, which began --

1 Q. And the other one was?

2 A. There was a committee formed -- Canon Peter McCann was
3 on it and SJM11 was on it. It had to do with the
4 medical oversight of the school --

5 Q. Oh, right.

6 A. -- mainly.

7 Q. Did the make-up of the Board of Management change during
8 your time there?

9 A. Oh, it did, because different personnel got moved around
10 to different --

11 Q. Sure.

12 A. -- appointments.

13 Q. We have heard that in the first place it was mostly
14 local clergy.

15 A. That's right, yes.

16 Q. But it seems to have broadened out.

17 A. Oh, it did, yes, in latter years.

18 Q. Was there anything in particular that triggered that or
19 was it just the way things developed?

20 A. I think it was the way things developed really, you
21 know, and evolved.

22 Q. As the [REDACTED] did you see anything of
23 the junior school or were you really quite separate from
24 that?

25 A. Oh, we were quite separate.

1 Q. And in terms of the management of shared facilities who
2 looked -- who looked after that, things like gymnasium
3 or whatever?

4 **A. That was on a rota.**

5 Q. Right. Thank you. Right. I think that's everything.
6 Thanks very much.

7 **A. Thank very much.**

8 CHAIRMAN: Well, BR26, Mr Aiken I think has one more
9 question he wants to raise with you.

10 **A. Right, Chairman.**

11 **Further questions from COUNSEL TO THE INQUIRY**

12 MR AIKEN: I thought I'd finished for the day, but just one
13 more matter. This might turn out to be careful what you
14 wish for, but the Departments are just wanting to ask
15 for a bit of clarity about when you describe there being
16 mixed messages between the approach of the NIO and the
17 approach of the Inspectorate, and you gave an example,
18 could you say a little more about what exactly the mixed
19 messages were, and if you can, at what point in time did
20 you have that impression that the same song sheet was
21 not being used?

22 **A. Well, particularly I would say in relation to the report
23 from the APRU, was it, the APRU?**

24 Q. The APRU report?

25 **A. Yes.**

1 license this boy out early and this is what he is going
2 to do". As time goes on and we get towards -- more
3 towards the end of the Inquiry's terms of reference in
4 the early '90s and so on, that had become a much more
5 elaborate evaluation exercise by this Licensing
6 Committee with external elements contributing. So
7 a much more broad view is being taken than simply the
8 head talking to his housemasters about a particular boy.

9 **A. Right.**

10 Q. So it's bringing more structure perhaps to the system --

11 **A. Very much --**

12 Q. -- albeit it is carrying out the same task, just in
13 a different way.

14 **A. Yes, very much so. The reports of the Licensing**
15 **Committee on individual fellas were compiled by the**
16 **young lad's housemaster, because the housemaster --**
17 **I would always see the housemaster as being the person**
18 **who has got the pulse of the young lad. Whether it is**
19 **ticking fast or ticking slow, he has still got the pulse**
20 **of the young fella and that's the very person you would**
21 **depend on to present the report. If needs be, if the**
22 **young lad wanted to go to the Panel himself and meet**
23 **them, he was welcome to do so.**

24 Q. Another subcommittee appeared to be engaged in, as
25 an example, the West Side Project, which began --

1 I think SPT26 was responsible for taking it forward.

2 **A. That's right.**

3 Q. It was during your time [REDACTED]. That's another example
4 of a subcommittee of the Board of Management working
5 with the staff to develop. That was a project in the
6 community.

7 **A. That's right.**

8 Q. That was the idea behind it --

9 **A. That's right. It was.**

10 Q. -- to try and integrate the boys back.

11 **A. Give them another outlet, yes.**

12 Q. The -- you mentioned the inspectors, and I want to turn
13 to external assistance that you were given.

14 I wonder, Chairman, whether if we took a lunch at
15 this point and resumed ...

16 CHAIRMAN: Yes. I was about to suggest we might do that.

17 If we aim to start somewhere about 1.40 perhaps.

18 MR AIKEN: Yes.

19 CHAIRMAN: Thank you.

20 (12.55 pm)

21 (Lunch break)

22 (1.55 pm)

23 MR AIKEN: BR26, when we broke for lunch we had been talking
24 about the assistance that you were given from the Board
25 of Management [REDACTED]

1 **a bedroom next to the night man's office.**

2 Q. So you would have had sleeping-in staff. You would have
3 taken it in turns to sleep in?

4 **A. You took it in turns over the number of staff. You**
5 **would hit one night a week.**

6 Q. Okay. So that is in addition to the rota. So that's --
7 yes.

8 **A. Yes.**

9 Q. Can I just ask -- I know you say you didn't see any
10 inspectors. Did you have any contact with the
11 Management Committee of St. Pat's? Were you aware of
12 them?

13 **A. Very little.**

14 Q. What sort of contact would you have had?

15 **A. Being interviewed for a job.**

16 Q. Okay, but after that no other ...?

17 **A. No.**

18 Q. Do you remember a regular visitor, an independent
19 visitor to the -- anybody ever come on a regular basis
20 just to see how ...?

21 **A. Well, if they were, they could have been in these groups**
22 **of people that we were -- you know, I said we were**
23 **pestered with visitors, you know.**

24 Q. Right. So it could just have been one of them that were
25 coming round and asking you?

1 **A. Could have been, yes.**

2 Q. Would those visitors have had access to the boys to talk
3 to the boys when you --

4 **A. Oh, yes.**

5 Q. Yes, and can I ask: did you have any contact with the
6 families of the boys?

7 **A. Yes.**

8 Q. What would that be like? Would that be organised or
9 casual or ...?

10 **A. It would be at visiting times or sometimes it was home
11 visits.**

12 Q. You'd actually go out and meet ...?

13 **A. Yes.**

14 Q. And would you try sometimes, if you were trying to
15 change a boy's behaviour, engage the family in that as
16 well?

17 **A. Yes. Before the boy was sent home you had to gauge what
18 the set-up was at home.**

19 Q. Right, and was that just for Slemish that that was done
20 or would it be across --

21 **A. That would have been done throughout the school.**

22 Q. All the time that you worked there, SPT2, or just more
23 towards the end of the time you worked there, or from
24 the very start?

25 **A. What was that? The visits?**

Lawlor, woodwork teacher at St Patrick's, and well-known breeder and international judge of canaries.

Conditions were less than perfect: there was no running water, and they used storm lanterns for lighting. Food was in reasonably good supply: they grew their own vegetables; butter they obtained south of the border as well as sugar; tea, which was scarce in the south, they procured north of the border. Bicycles and a pony-and-trap were the ordinary means of transport, and these the brothers used of a morning to attend Mass at the Marist Fathers' College in Dundalk. There was Mass for the boys in the house on Sundays. Classes, games, house-cleaning and light outdoor jobs were supervised by an attentive and youthful staff.³⁸

For the safety of those remaining at Milltown, the Belfast Corporation had air-raid shelter built and these were inspected regularly by city officials. In August 1944, the ageing Brother William Fogarty (1869-1948), director and manager of St Patrick's, retired, his place being taken by thirty-two-year-old Brother Stephen Kelly who had come to St Patrick's as a junior assistant two years previously.³⁹ Born in Toomevara, County Tipperary, Brother Stephen Kelly had very little formal education and apart from managing his mother's grocery store for a few years he had very little experience of any kind but, in the ensuing twenty-seven years, by the quality and nobility of his work among deprived boys in Northern Ireland, he won friends for his Order and his Church while enhancing his own reputation as a leading authority on child welfare. Not the least of his many gifts of character and personality was his ability to inspire in those privileged to work with him, his own spirit and zest for achievement, his own enjoyment in the service of children in care.

Without delay he had a junior praesidium of the Legion of Mary established in the school, had the staff and pupils solemnly consecrated to the Sacred Heart, and then approached the Bishop and the government for more money to run the school. Dr Mageean responded by increasing the brothers' stipends by 50 per cent to £90 per year as from 1 January 1943, the manager's to £150, at a time when the staff were not in receipt of government salaries.⁴⁰ The Minister for Home Affairs notified the increase of the weekly living allowance per boy to £1, retrospective to 1 April 1942. There was significant progress also in the important matter of providing a new school. The committee of management authorised Brother Stephen Kelly to search for a site,

31st December, 1959.

My dear Brother **BR 46**,

Some days ago I received a letter from Messrs. James F. Fitzpatrick & Co. Solrs., acting in the administration of the estate of [REDACTED] late [REDACTED] who died on 10th August, 1958.

By a Codicil to his Will deceased bequeathed a sum of £2,000 to the Reverend Principal of the De La Training School, Glen Road, for the charitable and benevolent purposes of the School and provided that in the event of his death within 3 months from the date of making the Will the sum of £2000 be paid to the Bishop of the Diocese for his own use and benefit absolutely. In point of fact, he died 5 days later.

There is no reason to doubt that the deceased wished the amount in question to go to the Glen Road Training School and, accordingly, I enclose cheque for £2,000. I have already received payment from Messrs. Fitzpatrick.

Gladly availing myself of the opportunity to send you all good wishes for the New Year,

Yours very sincerely,

H. Maguire

Bishop of Down and Connor.

20. During the years when the new school was being built, a number of tensions emerged between the Management Board and the Ministry over the funding of a Chapel and a swimming pool on the site. The Board considered the presence of a swimming pool as 'an essential facility' (Minute 26th March 1956) but the Ministry withdrew its approval for the funding. The Bishop of the Diocese (+Daniel Mageean) subsequently provided the £18,000 of funds required for the pool out of Diocesan resources. In terms of providing a chapel at the new school, the tensions around use of public funds to support the erection of such a building is perhaps best captured by the following exert from the minute of 19th October 1955: 'Br. Stephen then submitted a report of a recent interview he had with Mr G.B. Hanna QC, MP, Minister of Home Affairs and Mr Aidan Robinson, Permanent Secretary. At this interview the Minister pointed out his difficulty in approving a grant for the erection of the new chapel owing to the resolutions he had received from the Evangelical Protestant Society. He agreed to sanction a gymnasium in lieu of the Chapel with the provision that the Board of Management would be free to equip this building for religious services if they desired to do so at their own expense. His Lordship and the other members of the Board approved this decision and thought a happy solution had been reached.' In subsequent years further sums were advanced to the Trustees by the Ministry for Home Affairs towards the cost of various enhancements of the facility including, inter alia, a gate lodge, classroom accommodation and ancillary accommodation, a pre-licence hostel, a Playing Field, Children's playground and other recreational facilities. In the opinion of the Diocese, the position of the Ministry of Home Affairs appears to have been much more satisfactory in respect of St. Patrick's throughout its history than with the voluntary home at Rubane.

Opening and progress of the new Glen Road Facility.

21. The new Training School was officially opened on 1st September 1957. It continued as a Technical School where in addition to tuition on literary and mathematical subjects the Senior boys received training in bricklaying, woodwork, mechanics and painting. Two years later, discussions began with the Ministry for Home Affairs about introducing the Secondary Intermediate System, noting that this would require an extension to the existing building and an increase in teaching staff. Building of the new extension began in the spring of 1964 with a projected cost and approved tender to P&F McDonnell of £37,991. Up to this point the Board of Management continued its practice of meeting on an annual basis, with occasional 'Special Meetings' to deal with major decisions such as building the new School on the Glen Road site. With the apparent approval of the Ministry, this practice of annual meetings changed to quarterly meetings in February 1965. The minute of

ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

HISTORY AND LOCATION

St Patrick's Boys Home was first established as a Catholic Home in 1862 and was housed in premises in Donegall Street in Belfast. In 1872 it moved to premises at Milltown on the Upper falls Road and in the following year (1873) it was certified as the first Industrial School in Ireland. At that time it was ruled by a group of lay masters under the control of the Bishop of the Diocese of Down & Connor.

In 1917, at the request of the late Cardinal McRory, the school was placed under the care of the De La Salle Brothers.

After the partition of Ireland in 1921, Milltown, as the only Industrial School for Catholic boys in Northern Ireland, had to cater also for the reception of reformatory boys. As a consequence of this, numbers increased from 100 to 160 boys. From that time provision of adequate accommodation became a problem and in 1941, the Bishop of Down & Connor purchased land on the Glen Road with a view to transferring the school from Milltown.

In July 1952 the Trustees of St Patrick's took out a mortgage with the Minister of Finance for Northern Ireland to commence building the new Training School, a number of deeds of further change were made in 1954, 1957, 1968 and 1971 as St Patrick's developed the site. The mortgage was paid annually from the Grant-in-Aid issued by this Department.

In 1957 the new St Patrick's Training School was opened on what was then the rural fringe of West Belfast. The school was situated on approximately 80 acres of land, it had capacity for 145 Catholic boys with classroom facilities, workshops, administration offices, gymnasium and chapel. It was managed by a Voluntary Board, the members of which were appointed by the Catholic Church. The Government provided funding through a Grant-in-aid to staff and run the school.

20. During the years when the new school was being built, a number of tensions emerged between the Management Board and the Ministry over the funding of a Chapel and a swimming pool on the site. The Board considered the presence of a swimming pool as 'an essential facility' (Minute 26th March 1956) but the Ministry withdrew its approval for the funding. The Bishop of the Diocese (+Daniel Mageean) subsequently provided the £18,000 of funds required for the pool out of Diocesan resources. In terms of providing a chapel at the new school, the tensions around use of public funds to support the erection of such a building is perhaps best captured by the following exert from the minute of 19th October 1955: 'Br. Stephen then submitted a report of a recent interview he had with Mr G.B. Hanna QC, MP, Minister of Home Affairs and Mr Aidan Robinson, Permanent Secretary. At this interview the Minister pointed out his difficulty in approving a grant for the erection of the new chapel owing to the resolutions he had received from the Evangelical Protestant Society. He agreed to sanction a gymnasium in lieu of the Chapel with the provision that the Board of Management would be free to equip this building for religious services if they desired to do so at their own expense. His Lordship and the other members of the Board approved this decision and thought a happy solution had been reached.' In subsequent years further sums were advanced to the Trustees by the Ministry for Home Affairs towards the cost of various enhancements of the facility including, inter alia, a gate lodge, classroom accommodation and ancillary accommodation, a pre-licence hostel, a Playing Field, Children's playground and other recreational facilities. In the opinion of the Diocese, the position of the Ministry of Home Affairs appears to have been much more satisfactory in respect of St. Patrick's throughout its history than with the voluntary home at Rubane.

Opening and progress of the new Glen Road Facility.

21. The new Training School was officially opened on 1st September 1957. It continued as a Technical School where in addition to tuition on literary and mathematical subjects the Senior boys received training in bricklaying, woodwork, mechanics and painting. Two years later, discussions began with the Ministry for Home Affairs about introducing the Secondary Intermediate System, noting that this would require an extension to the existing building and an increase in teaching staff. Building of the new extension began in the spring of 1964 with a projected cost and approved tender to P&F McDonnell of £37,991. Up to this point the Board of Management continued its practice of meeting on an annual basis, with occasional 'Special Meetings' to deal with major decisions such as building the new School on the Glen Road site. With the apparent approval of the Ministry, this practice of annual meetings changed to quarterly meetings in February 1965. The minute of

for £13,651 from the Trustees. It is not clear whether the Ministry of Home Affairs or another Government department gained any legal interest in the title. Certainly, the De La Salle Order never owned any of the site.

33. The 'Brothers House' was completed in 1952 and Mr Hunter details certain political tensions raised by the public financing of the construction. The 'Brothers House', in contrast to the school still stands today and operates as Glenmona Resource Centre.

34. The new school was officially opened on the 1st September 1957. Br [REDACTED] **BR 26** [REDACTED], now 85, served in Milltown and then St Patrick's Training School from 1951 until 1995 and is the only surviving member of the Order with experience of the old school in Milltown.

35. I have attached hereto some of the contemporaneous newspaper coverage which describes the provision of the new facilities – see **Exhibit 1**.

36. The funding issues which afflicted Rubane Boys Home do not appear to have been replicated in St Patrick's Training School. There is material at SPT 10516 detailing the Order's discussions with the Ministry of Home Affairs in the 1940s regarding maintenance charges but overall the impression I have is that the Ministry of Home Affairs funding was significantly more generous than in respect of the Rubane boys and that the interaction and co-operation between Church and statutory authorities was much more harmonious which was clearly conducive to better relations between the two. I appreciate today, that the statutory and legal basis of the boys in Rubane does help explain the obvious discrepancy between the two Homes in respect of funding. The contrast is perhaps illustrated by the quotation attributed to Br Lawrence O'Toole, Assistant General of the De La Salle Order who according to the Belfast Newsletter described the Ministry of Home Affairs as a 'fairy godmother' and went on to add;

'He had never before come across such a palatial building, and it was the Ulster Ministry of Home Affairs a liberal and benevolent Ministry, which had provided the money without which the De La Salle Order could not carry on.'

This, in 1957, was at a time when Rubane House was facing significant and severe funding and resources problems.

37. In 1949 the School was a Technical School where in addition to tuition on literary and mathematical subjects the Senior boys received training on bricklaying, woodwork, metal-work and painting. After 1959 the School was redefined as a Secondary Intermediate School. The School, at all times after the 1947 Education Act was under the auspices of the Ministry of Education. The Brothers were in the minority in terms of teaching staff with the vast majority of the teaching from 1950, at least, being provided by lay teachers employed by the Ministry/Department of Education. It is noted within the disclosed material that the Ministry of Education inspected and reported on the School regularly.

38. Br Stephen Kelly, was awarded an OBE, in 1966. He died in December 1969.

In the early 1990's, St Patrick's Main School Block which was an institutional type of building was considered to be outdated and no longer suitable to provide child care facilities. Between 1992-1995, this Department provided a major capital investment of over £1.9m in the school which allowed for the building of two new purpose built units and the refurbishment of an existing double unit. These units replaced the old school block which was by then considered to be in a dangerous condition and was demolished in 1996. However, the recreational facilities and workshop that were part of the old building were not replaced.

On 4 November 1996, the introduction of the Children (NI) Order 1995 removed the responsibility from the Secretary of State of those children in need of care and protection, thereafter those children became the responsibility of the Department of Health & Social Services (DHSS). The "Justice" children remained the responsibility of the NIO.

Under the terms of the Children (NI) Order 1995, St Patrick's took out a contract with the DHSS to provide bed spaces within the new Care Reception Units and newly refurbished Care Units and that part of the St Patrick's campus became known as Glenmona Resource Centre. Their contracts with DHSS are continuing.

On 1 February 1999, the Criminal Justice Children (NI) Order became effective, thereafter that part of the former Training Schools which provided facilities for offenders were renamed as Juvenile Justice Centres. Under the terms of the new Order only the most serious of offenders would be sent to custody. The Order therefore, significantly reduced the numbers of children in the Juvenile Justice Centres with the effect that a review of Juvenile Justice Estates was undertaken during 1999 followed by a consultation exercise in mid 2000.

On 29 November 2000, the Minister of State announced his decision on the future of Juvenile Justice Estates that a new single centre would be built on the present Rathgael site and despite St Patrick's best expectations both St Patrick's and Lisnevin Centres would close.

1 Q. We think that was the Certificate in Residential Social
2 Work.

3 **A. Yes.**

4 Q. We are not entirely clear, but we think that's what it
5 was.

6 **A. I think it is, yes.**

7 Q. That was -- you did that training after about two years
8 there. So roughly about 1972/'73 you might have
9 qualified?

10 **A. Yes.**

11 Q. Now just talking about the -- when you first started
12 working there, what was your role exactly?

13 **A. As a**

14 Q. And that was in --

15 **A. That would be -- today would be residential social
16 worker.**

17 Q. You were explaining to me you were residential social
18 worker

19 **A. Yes.**

20 Q. And I was asking you about the -- in your time, the
21 entire time you were there, the school was split into
22 junior and senior boys.

23 **A. That's correct.**

24 Q. We have heard descriptions of it being like an L-shaped
25 building. Would that be your recollection? There was

1 one wing was the junior wing and one wing was the senior
2 wing and they were quite separate --

3 **A. Yes.**

4 Q. -- at that time. This is before --

5 **A. There is a full corridor separating the two, two**
6 **schools.**

7 Q. And I wondered how many staff looked after the junior
8 school that you were in?

9 **A. When I went in, I would say five or six --**

10 Q. Okay.

11 **A. -- and that would be split between two shift.**

12 Q. So there might have been three on a shift?

13 **A. There could have been two started early in the morning,**
14 **someone coming in between and then two the rest of the**
15 **evening.**

16 Q. So maximum maybe about five in total all day?

17 **A. You would never have five on.**

18 Q. Together?

19 **A. No.**

20 Q. So maximum of three?

21 **A. Until later -- until later years, you know.**

22 Q. But in the early days?

23 **A. No. It was ...**

24 Q. I was wondering if -- how -- how many lay staff there
25 would have been in comparison to Brothers or -- can you

1 "He was also in St. Patrick's, but was on a period
2 of home leave",

3 and his mother allowed to you stay that night, but
4 when you went to bed, she phoned the training school to
5 let them know where you were. You understand she was
6 only doing what she thought was best for you, but you
7 left the next morning as soon as you could. So you were
8 brought back and then you ran away again the next day.

9 **A. Yes.**

10 Q. Now I wanted to go into this in a little more detail
11 with you. We have heard that there was a room at the
12 end of the dormitory where a Brother would have slept.
13 Now is that your recollection?

14 **A. There was a room where a Brother would have slept, but**
15 **I have never known anybody to have ever slept in that**
16 **room.**

17 Q. And what did you think the room was used for when you
18 were there?

19 **A. It was like an office for the nightwatchman.**

20 Q. So he might have used that room at the end of the
21 corridor?

22 **A. But, you know, just to go in and do whatever, you know.**
23 **Maybe stay there ten, fifteen minutes and gone.**

24 Q. You were saying that -- I mean, this is coming -- when
25 we were talking earlier, you were talking about the fact

1 **A. Yes.**

2 Q. Okay. Thanks very much, SPT2.

3 MR LANE: When you were describing the staffing for Slemish
4 House just now, were there no Brothers who were on the
5 staff there or was it totally lay staff?

6 **A. No. -- there was one Brother.**

7 Q. And he went on the rota along with everybody else?

8 **A. Yes.**

9 Q. In the early days when you first went there did the
10 Brothers join in the rota there as well in addition --
11 you described the two shifts.

12 **A. Yes.**

13 Q. That was lay staff you were talking about then.

14 **A. Yes.**

15 Q. The Brothers did the shifts as well, did they?

16 **A. Oh, aye. They would have had to have done one night.**

17 Q. Uh-huh, and you mentioned that you started in

18 Were there a lot of people who did
19 like that?

20 **A. No. There was nobody.**

21

22 Q. Okay. You mentioned the separation between the senior
23 and the junior schools. Did you get to know the staff
24 in the other part or was it -- were they totally
25 separate?

1 **A. The only time they ever met was at their 11 o'clock**
2 **break after the boys were put back into school, and they**
3 **went into a -- there was a room in there for a cup of**
4 **tea for ten minutes or maybe fifteen minutes, and then**
5 **they had to go back up into the office to do their books**
6 **and ...**

7 Q. So you would meet up with the staff at times like that?

8 **A. Yes.**

9 Q. Right. You were obviously seconded I presume on full
10 pay, were you, for the qualifying course?

11 **A. Yes.**

12 Q. Was there a regular policy of secondment or were you the
13 only one who went in that way?

14 **A. Oh, there was several staff went -- seconded after**
15 **me.**

16 Q. Like one or two each year you mean?

17 **A. Yes. It all depended. You know, you'd take one out of**
18 **one shift and one from another shift.**

19 Q. Right, and these -- you wouldn't have been replaced then
20 while you were seconded?

21 **A. No.**

22 Q. Did you do any work while you were on secondment? Did
23 you come in at weekends or anything like that?

24 **A. No.**

25 Q. In terms of the numbers in the school we have heard that

1 had other members of the family that were in other
2 institutions and they had only wished that they would
3 have been in St. Pat's. We got fantastic support from
4 the vast majority of the parents, especially the
5 mothers. One really has to tribute -- pay tribute to
6 them and the enormous problems that they had in their
7 own life and the situation pervading, especially all
8 during the years of The Troubles, and the tension and
9 problems of rearing teenage children. We got fantastic
10 support from the vast majority of them really and truly.

11 In my latter years working I used to visit
12 on occasions to see fellas who got
13 kneecapped and it was well-known that e
14 was referred to as You would
15 meet fellas there and och, they did this and did that
16 and caught doing this and caught doing that and
17 whatever, but the parents were always very appreciative
18 that somebody called to visit them even when they were,
19 dare I say it, crippled and some of them almost crippled
20 for life.

21 Finally, reference has been made here and there to
22 the openness of the school and absconding and all that.
23 We were a huge institution sitting in -- an open
24 institution sitting in the middle of 100 acre site, and
25 while there was only one official entrance leading on to

1 the Glen Road, there were unofficial entrances, and one
2 of them particularly leading on to the nearest estate,
3 Monagh Road, where Turf Lodge estate is built. It
4 became known as the Ho Chi Minh Trail, because the
5 solders were using it by day and by night.

6 There is a palisade fence dividing our property from
7 the Monagh Road, but young lads had no problem in
8 driving a car up against that and that opened it up
9 again as a pathway.

10 I would also have to say that at that time we would
11 have had a number of lads from that area: Turf Lodge,
12 leading on to Ballymurphy, leading on to New Barnsley,
13 to Whiterock. It was always a shortcut for them going
14 home officially and for others going out unofficially
15 and for parents coming in and for some ancillary staff
16 who are living locally coming in. It was just simply
17 known as the Ho Chi Minh Trail from the number of times
18 that the soldiers were using it by day and by night.

19 Thank you, Chairman.

20 CHAIRMAN: Well, thank you very much, BR26. As you
21 appreciate, we have today been dealing with the matters
22 that concern you as someone who has been named by
23 various individuals, but there are I think a number of
24 general issues about the way St. Patrick's was run and
25 so on that we would be grateful for you to help us with,

1 reason that you took early retirement you said was
2 because you found it very hard to entertain the boys,
3 because the resources had been -- the resources that
4 were open to you at the beginning had been closed, such
5 as the major play hall and the swimming pool had closed,
6 and that was because there was no money really to fix
7 the roof on the play hall and the pool proved too costly
8 to heat. So they closed it down. Is that right?

9 **A. That's correct.**

10 Q. And you also made the point that there was what you
11 describe a cage out the back of Slemish --

12 **A. Yes.**

13 Q. -- that you then had to use. That was the only place
14 open for you to entertain children in the evenings.

15 **A. Yes.**

16 Q. So that would have been from -- when would that have --
17 when would that have been the only place? Would that
18 have been just in the 1990s or ...?

19 **A. Well, we had the cage had the cage from the very**
20 **start.**

21 Q. Yes.

22 **A. But to be -- for me to bring boys on activities to**
23 **another part of the school, they either had to be on**
24 **green or red. If they were on black, the only way**
25 **I could transfer them -- green or amber I'd say. I had**

PRIVATE

- 2 OCT 2013

HIA REF: 314

Witness Name: HIA 314

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF HIA 314

I, HIA 314 will say as follows:-

Personal Details

1. I was born on [REDACTED] in Belfast.
2. I was sent to St. Patrick's Training School in 1957 under a court order when I was thirteen. I was there for three years until I was allowed home in 1960 when I was sixteen.

St. Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast (1957 – 1960)

3. I was sent to St. Pat's in 1957 for failing to attend school. I had been up in court a few times and I remember the judge asking me if I would go to school. I said no and he said he would send me somewhere where I had no choice. I was sent straight to St. Pat's that day. It was a huge shock and I felt alone and frightened. I didn't see my parents for a week after I went in to the home. I didn't know how long I was going to be in for at the start; nobody I asked could tell me. Even when my parents tried to find out, they were told it was for an indefinite period.
4. When I first arrived in St. Pat's, it was in Milltown but then they moved us all to the Glen Road. BR 1 received me when I first went in. He was a small man who worked in the office and wore glasses but not all the time. He

HIA 314

PRIVATE

1

PRIVATE

showed me up to my dormitory and gave me clothes to change in to. I was given a number and I had to sew that number onto all my clothes. I was given washing and dental gear as well. The clothes were of reasonable quality. I'll say that much. We had to do our own private washing – our underwear and socks but the big washing like sheets was sent away. Every Friday night we were issued with a linen bag with our clothes in it for the next week and we put our old clothes in the bag to be sent away to be washed.

5. Brother Stephen was the principal of St. Pat's while I was there and Brother BR 46 was his second in command. BR 26 was in charge of the clothing. BR 46 and the other Brothers lived over in the main building. BR 47 and BR 42 had rooms off the dormitories. There was no privacy as their rooms had a window over the dormitory. We used to call BR 42 as his nickname.
6. The daily routine in the home was we were woken at 5.30am by a hurley stick being banged along the ends of our beds or a whistle being blown by a civilian worker. We washed and dressed, and then we were sent back to the dorm to clean and tidy and make our beds. We had breakfast after that. We had all our meals in a large dining room. There were four boys at a table and there was always a mad scramble for food, especially on Tuesdays and Thursdays when we got baps. You would have to run to your table, grab your bap and put it down your shirt. We were always hungry in the home.
7. After breakfast we were put out into the yard, no matter what the weather was like. Then after a period of time we either went to school or to technical workshops. These were both onsite. I went to the woodwork shop. Other boys went to the craft workshop where they learned how to weld and others worked on the farm. I remember I made a statue of the pope once and a dressing table for one of the Brothers. I used to make racks and things for people on the outside as well who I didn't know. At school, we were given the strap on our bottoms for any minor offence such as looking at each other in class.

PRIVATE

showed me up to my dormitory and gave me clothes to change in to. I was given a number and I had to sew that number onto all my clothes. I was given washing and dental gear as well. The clothes were of reasonable quality. I'll say that much. We had to do our own private washing – our underwear and socks but the big washing like sheets was sent away. Every Friday night we were issued with a linen bag with our clothes in it for the next week and we put our old clothes in the bag to be sent away to be washed.

5. Brother Stephen was the principal of St. Pat's while I was there and Brother BR 46 was his second in command. BR 26 was in charge of the clothing. BR 46 and the other Brothers lived over in the main building. BR 47 and BR 42 had rooms off the dormitories. There was no privacy as their rooms had a window over the dormitory. We used to call BR 42 as his nickname.
6. The daily routine in the home was we were woken at 5.30am by a hurley stick being banged along the ends of our beds or a whistle being blown by a civilian worker. We washed and dressed, and then we were sent back to the dorm to clean and tidy and make our beds. We had breakfast after that. We had all our meals in a large dining room. There were four boys at a table and there was always a mad scramble for food, especially on Tuesdays and Thursdays when we got baps. You would have to run to your table, grab your bap and put it down your shirt. We were always hungry in the home.
7. After breakfast we were put out into the yard, no matter what the weather was like. Then after a period of time we either went to school or to technical workshops. These were both onsite. I went to the woodwork shop. Other boys went to the craft workshop where they learned how to weld and others worked on the farm. I remember I made a statue of the pope once and a dressing table for one of the Brothers. I used to make racks and things for people on the outside as well who I didn't know. At school, we were given the strap on our bottoms for any minor offence such as looking at each other in class.

PRIVATE

8. After our workshops, we would be given more work to do like cleaning the corridors, showers, toilets or changing rooms until supper time. After supper we went outside and waited until the civilian workers let us inside to watch television. They had the keys and we would have to stand outside until they decided to let us in. I remember one of them was a small man called Mr SPT 23. If it was raining there was only one place to shelter and we used to fight for that spot but then the Brothers would punish you for fighting.
9. We were sent to bed very early while it was still daylight outside. We could hear people still playing outside but we had to go to bed. At bedtime, the Brothers helped the younger boys into their pyjamas. We had to sleep in pyjamas only and they checked you weren't wearing your underwear beneath. One of the civilian staff patrolled the dorms regularly during the night. The lights were never put out; there was always a light in the form of a statue in the centre of the floor on a pedestal. I was often woken in the middle of the night to perform sexual acts on the Brother who was on duty that night – BR 47 or BR 42. He would put his hands under the sheet and fondle me. Whenever we had showers, the Brothers always watched us. They would examine us; they even went as far as checking under our arms and between our legs.
10. Physical abuse was rife in the home. The Brothers would hit you with keys or sticks, often for no reason. BR 47 carried a hurley stick and he would beat you with it to get out of his way or to make you do something. He thought nothing of laying into you with that hurley. That was his personal stick. He also carried a leather strap that was approximately twelve inches long and half an inch thick. BR 46 carried a stick as well but he wasn't as vicious as BR 47. He would only hit you if you were in his way or something whereas BR 47 took pleasure out of hitting you. It was a harsh regime and people just accepted their punishment. Nobody ever queried anything or wondered what they did to deserve it.
11. I was sexually abused in the home by a number of different Brothers. Brother [REDACTED] took a special interest in me. He brought me and a couple of other

PRIVATE

and had to be in bed by nine o'clock which was when the lights were turned out.

6. Christian Brothers would come round to turn the lights out but you could hear the Christian Brothers walking up the corridor. Once we knew a Brother was coming you could have heard a pin drop in that dormitory and before he turned to go into that dormitory everybody was in bed and ninety per cent of the boys were lying on their side with their eyes closed pretending to be asleep, that's how terrified they were of the Brothers. We would have been sitting on somebody's bed talking away and we were like rockets getting into the bed. If you were not in bed he would have used the strap to slap your leg.
7. At the weekends, there was always cleaning to be done and there was always a trip to Broadway Cinema. Any boy who wanted to go was allowed to go and all the boys walked down to the cinema in a group. There was a Brother who was at the head of the group and another couple at the rear. There were always a number of Brothers who went in case anyone tried to abscond. I do not remember anyone trying to run off whilst I was at St Patrick's. I used to look forward to the trip because it was the only time I was allowed outside of the school site.
8. I remember that the food was a bit scant to and there were no extras. To my recollection you could not go up and ask for more. The place was clean and the bedclothes were changed. I believe my mum would have taken my dirty washing home, washed it and brought it back up again on her next visit. I think there were visits twice a week but I am not a hundred per cent certain. There was always a visit on Sundays and I believe that the second visit was on Wednesdays. To be honest my mum would have been up every day if she could have been. She always brought me sandwiches, biscuits and sweets so that I never went hungry. My dad travelled all over the country and he would have rang my mum up when she had to come up to visit me. I do not remember any Social Workers coming to see me but things were different back then and the Christian Brothers answered to no one as far as I was concerned.

PRIVATE

3

1 A. Yes.

2 Q. -- where they were able to go and buy jeans and things
3 like that --

4 **A. Yes.**

5 Q. -- as you said, at a good discount.

6 **A. Yes.**

7 Q. These changes were brought about you say through staff
8 meetings really.

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. And where you as a group of lay staff came to the
11 conclusion that this would be a good thing, you then
12 went to the -- sort of up the ranks, as it were, to your
13 bosses to try to effect that change?

14 **A. Yes.**

15 Q. That did either happen slowly or more quickly, depending
16 on the attitude?

17 **A. Yes.**

18 Q. Did you find that the Brothers were receptive to change
19 or ...?

20 A. Some and some weren't. The younger brothers were more
21 receptive to it than the older ones.

22 Q. Now you then got promoted within St. Pat's. You became
23 at one point.

24 **A. Yes.**

25 Q. And can you -- I know we are having trouble over our

PRIVATE

knew for a fact he was abusing one younger boy at least. If we saw this abuse, the Brothers obviously saw it too but nothing was done about it. It was part of the whole culture, the whole regime.

18. My mother used to come up to visit me every Thursday evening from 7.30pm to 9pm. These visits were always supervised. If our visitors brought us food, very often the older boys would take it off us. An older boy called [REDACTED] used to look after me so I would share my food with him. On a Sunday we would get out to visit our families as well but there was a points system and if your points were too low on a Sunday you would be held back. Even while you were queuing to get the bus home, you could be refused permission over the smallest indiscretion.

19. We had morning Mass daily and then the Angelus in the evenings. I often saw boys being abused during the Angelus while they were at the rear with the Brothers. I think [REDACTED] BR 1 was one of the Brothers who abused boys during the Angelus.

20. I couldn't tell my parents about the abuse as they were very religious and would not accept that a member of the Catholic Church would do such a thing. There were two nuns there and they must have known about the abuse. We tried to mention it to the nuns because we thought we might get a bit of support or help from a woman but they just called us liars and hit us. I believe one of the nuns was called [REDACTED] SR 74 and though I cannot be positive, I recall a [REDACTED] SR 75 as well.

21. Boys would often run away from the home, especially those from the country. Whenever they did, the Brothers would take us bigger ones out in the car to look for them. If you done a runner, as punishment the Brothers would shave your head and take one of your shoes off so you couldn't run. There was one boy nicknamed [REDACTED] who ran away a couple of times and they shaved his head and took one shoe off him to stop him running away.

22. There were rooms underneath the kitchen with just a bed in them. We called them the cells and you would be put in there as punishment anytime you

1 Q. Right. Thank you. What was the pattern of religious
2 observance at St. Patrick's?

3 A. There was a mass every Wednesday. That was during
4 school time. Saturday night there was a weekly mass,
5 and again the religious instructors -- as I say, there
6 was different clergy, different lay people came in to
7 instruct the young people the ways of life in a sense
8 and which weren't suitable again because of their
9 religious background. They -- the words they used were
10 alien to the young people and, given that, that they
11 were encouraged to attend. Nuns, elderly nuns again,
12 and again weren't suitable for that type of environment
13 for the young people.

14 Q. And the mass on Wednesday and Saturday, was that
15 compulsory for the boys?

16 A. Oh, yes.

17 Q. Yes, and was that just for the juniors or did both sides
18 --

19 A. It was for both sides.

20 Q. Right. What sort of measures were taken to prevent
21 absconding? We have heard about Slemish being set up
22 partly for that purpose.

23 A. Right. Aye.

24 Q. What else besides that?

25 A. Again lock doors. That was the only thing we could do,

PRIVATE

walking around holding the hands of young boys and letting them have treats and cigarettes.

14. We slept in dormitories at first but after a while small houses were built and the boys from the country stayed there and all the boys from the city stayed in the dormitories. I think the houses had single bedrooms for the boys. The Brothers slept in the same building as the boys and in fact one Brother slept in a small room at the end of every dormitory. I was told by some boys that some Brothers used to come in during the night to keep them company in the rooms but it never happened to me. I remember that a boy called **SPT 43** was Brother **BR 86** pet and he told both me and other boys that **BR 86** had sex with him. I also remember one occasion where **SPT 43** was hiding under Brother **BR 86** cassock. I was also told by **SPT 44** that **BR 42** had taken him into the Brother's bedroom and abused him.

15. If any of the boys misbehaved sometimes the Brothers put you into a punishment cell and gave you bread and water. You got porridge in the morning but the rest of the day you got bread and water. The cell would have been about six feet by eight feet with a steel double door which locked. There was a bed and you got a mattress at night. The cell was absolutely freezing and there was a small window. You would have been there for up to three days but when you are a child that seems like a lifetime. I remember that I was sent to the punishment cell on two or three occasions.

16. On a normal day a Brother woke the boys in a dormitory about half past seven in the morning and then I washed, got dressed, made my bed and had breakfast before going to school. The school was on site and was massive. There were around thirty boys in each class and in my time there the boys moved from class to class for different subjects rather than staying in the same classroom. I do not remember ever having to do any homework in the evenings. A couple of Brothers taught as well as some outside lay teachers. The lay teachers came in for nine o'clock and left about half past three when school finished for the day. Sometimes I did not go to school but had to stay behind and clean and dust the

PRIVATE

dormitories. This usually happened if I had done something wrong. After being in St Patrick's for five months or so I did not really go to school. I was not learning anything and actually preferred to clean because it was something different to do. I worked up to teatime which was at six o'clock then I worked for another hour after tea.

17. In the evenings we used to play football because there were always footballs about the place. There were some facilities like a television and I remember that there were a couple of table tennis tables and an old snooker table as well which we could use. We would then have to go to bed at about nine o'clock in the evening.

18. There was clean bedding as far as I remember and in general the food was okay. Sometimes we would go on what we called hunger strike for maybe six hours so that the Brothers would put some jam for example on the table. All the boys got the same amount so some of them perhaps went a little hungry because they were bigger. I was fine although sometimes other boys would try to take my food and I would have to stand up for myself.

19. There was a nurse but she was really a nun who was classed as a nurse. I don't remember whether there was ever a dentist who examined me. There was a doctor who called if he was needed but he did not stay on the site. I can never remember a Social Worker ever coming to see me and the only visitors I really had were members of my family. I think I may have been ordered to see a Psychiatrist at St Pat's due to an unfounded allegation of self harm but I have no memory of ever actually meeting one.

Life after Care

20. I left St Pat's in 1973 when I was sent to Millisle Borstal. I absconded in November 1973 and went to St Pat's and made a statement to a member of staff about the abuse I had suffered. I was afraid of other kids getting tortured in the same way that I had been. I did not know who to make the statement to because I knew there was no point telling the Brothers and I felt that no one would believe me. People seemed to think then that they could do no wrong. I

1 **A. Who is this?**

2 Q. BR42.

3 **A. BR42. I've just seen the name up the top there.**

4 Q. Well, we see -- as you know, we see lots of names and
5 none of them can be used outside the chamber either
6 publicly or privately.

7 **A. Uh-huh.**

8 Q. So the one thing you talked about and doing well at was
9 . You mention in paragraph 19 of your
10 statement at 015, please, and I was clarifying with you
11 that you don't remember BR26 ever being involved in

12

13 **A. No.**

14 Q. And I was asking you have you any recollection of him
15 and you don't really have any recollection of BR26?

16 **A. He probably looked after the senior ones that were**

17 . **He certainly had nothing to do with me**
18 **anyway.**

19 Q. Nothing to do with you. The one last thing I was going
20 to cover when we were talking earlier, in paragraph 24
21 of your statement you mention the cleaning and being --
22 having to do the polishing and so on and so forth, the
23 major cleaning, as it were, where you would have stuff
24 on your feet to do --

25 **A. Yes.**

1 Q. -- the floor, and I was asking you is there any chance
2 that was more at the weekend than having to do that type
3 of thing every day? I think you were reflecting on
4 whether maybe it was more at the weekend and it was just
5 a tidy-up each day.

6 A. Yes.

7 Q. Are you clear about what level of cleaning you did every
8 day?

9 A. Yes. Well, we definitely had to do the -- I would have
10 worked -- I worked in the thing. I did not go to school
11 as such, you know. I worked -- I worked cleaning and
12 I worked in the laundry, you know. So I would have been
13 cleaning in the corridors and stuff and working in the
14 laundry. So -- and some of that using the buffer thing
15 and cleaning floors and that, that was part of your
16 punishment as well, you now, if you were kept in, you
17 know, for misbehaving or whatever the case may be or
18 whatever.

19 Q. So people who were stewed would have done the cleaning
20 then --

21 A. Yes, yes.

22 Q. -- or been involved in the cleaning?

23 A. Which would have been at the weekends.

24 Q. It would have been at the weekend.

25 HIA100, there is just two other questions I'm going

1 boys in your class and you moved from class to class for
2 different lessons. There was only one Brother called
3 BR86 who taught classes and the rest of the teachers
4 were civilian staff.

5 **A. Uh-huh.**

6 Q. You go on to say that there was no real education and
7 the teaching was very basic. You never had to do
8 homework, and after school there were activities until
9 around 5 o'clock, and then there was free time until you
10 got your tea served at 6 o'clock. In the evenings the
11 boys went back to the chalets and played football or
12 pool if they wanted and there was also a gym on site,
13 which you went to from time to time. You went to bed
14 about 9.30 or 10 o'clock and during summer you went down
15 to a holiday home in the Glens of Antrim, at Waterfoot
16 you thought.

17 **A. Uh-huh.**

18 Q. You go on in paragraph 12 to describe the point system
19 that operated in the training school for good work and
20 good behaviour. If you received enough points, you were
21 allowed to go home to your family for the entire
22 weekend. You always had enough points, but sometimes
23 you chose to stay in the chalet because of the
24 circumstances at home. You didn't see your brother. He
25 was actually , and that was part of the reason

1 (12.40 pm)

2 WITNESS SPT125 (called)

3 CHAIRMAN: Yes.

4 MR AIKEN: Chairman, Members of the Panel, the next witness
5 today is SPT125 -- I've got that right, SPT125,
6 haven't I --

7 **A. Close.**

8 Q. -- close -- who is SPT125, and, Chairman, he is aware
9 that you are going to ask him to take the oath and he
10 wants to preserve his anonymity.

11 WITNESS SPT125 (sworn)

12 CHAIRMAN: Thank you very much, SPT125. Please sit down.

13 Questions from COUNSEL TO THE INQUIRY

14 MR AIKEN: SPT125, coming up on the screen will be your
15 statement at 833, please. Obviously, as we were
16 discussing, SPT125, in terms of anonymity when the
17 statement is published, it is redacted so that
18 information from which you could be identified won't
19 appear, and we move through to page 835, please, which
20 is the final page of the statement, can you just confirm
21 for me that is the final page?

22 **A. Yes, I can confirm that.**

23 Q. And that you have signed the statement?

24 **A. Yes, I have signed it.**

25 Q. And you want to adopt it as part of your evidence to the

1 that very week of the report in June '71, and

2 arrangements had been made

3 --

4 Then he

5 concludes by saying:

6 "Although this youth has stated he is

7 , I feel that he should be held in

8 custody for any length of time

9 and

10 at a later date, should he qualify for this type of

11 education."

12 So the probation officer was expressing a view very

13 strongly that they wanted you to avail of any

14 opportunity you got to improve your education

15 , which wasn't in your thinking at

16 the time when this incident occurred or when you ended

17 up in St. Patrick's?

18 A. No. At that time I wouldn't have been considering

19 in any shape or form. It was a bit

20 like school, something you go through and then move on,

21 and I was looking to move on as quickly as possible.

22 Q. And the -- ultimately, SPT125, you spend two years in

23 St. Patrick's until 16th July 1973, when you are 18 --

24 **A. Yes.**

25 Q. -- by which time . In fact,

1 A. I --

2 Q. If you can't remember, you can't remember.

3 A. I can't remember, to be honest. I think -- my
4 recollection of the building was it was one big long
5 building, two sides to it, two different , and
6 the centre bit I think was the sort of entrance to it,
7 and then you turned one way for one and one way
8 for the other, and I think there was a Brother on the
9 other side as well, the Brother on each side --

10 Q. Yes.

11 A. -- as far as I recall, but to be honest I was even
12 trying to recall where my room was in relation to the
13 you know. If I was being -- you know, having to
14 do best guess, I would have thought my room was at the
15 sort of start of the bedroom area, and I can't even
16 remember the bedrooms themselves, whether they were all
17 single rooms or whether there were shared rooms, double
18 rooms or whatever. I can't remember that detail, and
19 I don't really remember where the Brother's room --
20 I would again suspect that it would -- might have been
21 close to my end, because it wasn't -- to me it doesn't
22 strike me as being a terribly big building --

23 Q. Yes.

24 A. -- you know, in that sense of needing to be sitting in
25 the middle.

1 have talked about the assembly meeting would have been
2 on a Sunday morning and the rewards and privileges
3 system of recording marks and how you'd got on, and
4 stewing, of being kept back so you weren't getting
5 you weren't
6 getting out for the weekend leave, and then some have
7 gone further to talk about how if they had been
8 absconding, for instance, they might have been strapped
9 with their trousers down, just in their boxer shorts, in
10 the gym or the assembly room in front of other boys as
11 a lesson to the others not to behave as they had just
12 done.

13 Can you -- can you remember the reward system and
14 the assembly hall, and the stewing exercise, and the
15 going further then to the public strapping type
16 exercise?

17 **A. You know, as you started to talk about the reward**
18 **system, yes, I've a vague recollection of this**
19 **happening, but, you know, I don't -- certainly, yes, and**
20 **I do remember the idea is I suppose a bit like**
21 **I described. If you misbehave, you lose privileges. So**
22 **I would recall that as being the thing, but the public**
23 **strapping of boys, I have no recollection of that**
24 **whatsoever.**

25 **Q. The -- ultimately you are there after your 17th**

1 that in addition to the encouraging you and
2 giving you advice that helped you get through being in
3 St. Patrick's he was someone that you continued to have
4 a friendship with, would have exchanged Christmas cards
5 and visited, but he was also .

6 **A. He was a big part of my life at that time. Just give me**
7 **a moment.**

8 Q. You're all right. Let me --

9 **A. No. It's just that he would have been a big influence**
10 **on me, and I thought it was only fair when I was taking**
11 **an important step in my life, , that**
12 **I should have people there who played a big role, and**
13 **that would have been BR26 and it would have been**
14 **, and so, you know, I had no hesitation.**
15 **I counted them as friends, and, as I say, to me they**
16 **were --**

17
18
19 **So, you know, that's to me why they were there. They**
20 **were important to me.**

21 Q. And you, I am sure, were not delighted about potentially
22 coming to talk to the Inquiry and share your experience,
23 because there was not a necessity for you to come
24 forward, because you weren't claiming to have been
25 abused, but what you found particularly difficult was

Brother's House

- £39,949

and the working drawings for the Training School have recently been approved. This work is now out to tender and it is estimated that the building costs will be in the region of £220,000.

The Ministry's grant is 50% of the approved expenditure, payable by instalments of 90% of half of the value of work executed as the work proceeds. The remaining 50% of the approved expenditure is being raised as the work proceeds by loans from the Ministry of Finance out of the Government Loans Fund. The loan charges are met eventually by the Local Authorities - the annual cost thereof being taken into account in determining the contribution rate payable by Local Authorities each year in respect of children and young persons detained in Training Schools.

The grant paid by the Ministry to the Managers of the School up to the present in respect of the acquisition of the site and preliminary works amounts to £25,736, and it is expected that a further £5,000 will be granted in respect of these works in the current financial year. If the work on the actual Training School commences soon, it is possible that grant of about £2,500 may be paid in respect of that work before the 31st March next and it is possible that the grant payable in the year 1954/55 will be around £35,000.

The plans for the new Training School provide for accommodation of 200 boys (junior and senior) and a resident staff of 30. There will be an Assembly Hall, Chapel, Play Halls, Dining Halls, Kitchen, Stores, Libraries, Hobby Rooms, Dormitories, Class-rooms, Sick-bay, rooms for Woodwork, French polishing, Metalwork, Shoe-making, Tailoring, Band, etc., with administrative offices, staff quarters and various ancillary offices and stores. There will be playing fields and adequate facilities for farming and gardening instruction.

1 **A. Yes.**

2 Q. -- but there were more trades in the senior section.

3 There was joinery, bricklaying, painting. They could
4 train to be a groundsman, and there was also a farm --

5 **A. Yes.**

6 Q. -- at the training school --

7 **A. Yes.**

8 Q. -- where they could look after livestock and so forth.

9 **A. Yes.**

10 Q. Can I just -- I didn't ask you this, but did they have
11 the option? If they said, "Look, I would like to move
12 up. I am 16 now. I am not getting out any time soon.
13 Can I move up to the senior school and go, say, and do
14 farm work?" Was that ever an option that the boys had?

15 **A. It was never an option.**

16 Q. Were there completely separate staff teams --

17 **A. Yes.**

18 Q. -- for the junior school and senior school? I think you
19 said maybe the gym teacher covered both.

20 **A. The gym teacher was the only one that covered both**
21 **sides.**

22 Q. What about the other teachers, you know, the sort of
23 classroom teachers? They didn't interact either --

24 **A. No.**

25 Q. -- or swap over, or anything like that?

HIA 314

, Belfast.

301
School Case.

Birth: [REDACTED]

Committal: 10. 6. 1959.

Discharge: 9. 6. 1962.

1-3 Nov 59

Home for Halloween

Xmas 59

Home 25 - 28.

1-1-60

Home

9-4-60

Home

Easter 60

Home 17 April - 20th.

26/6/60.

Admitted Mother took in his school trousers.

1 Q. -- St. Patrick's in various different sports?

2 A. Oh, absolutely. Teams were invited in and our teams
3 went out and the home boys were the team to beat. That
4 was generally accepted in the area.

5 Q. So you had a good squad of --

6 A. Not easily done, let it be said.

7 Q. -- a good squad of players able to hold their own in
8 various sports that involved then --

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. -- the community beyond St. Patrick's. You, when you
11 moved to the Glen Road, continued with what was known as
12 that [REDACTED] role --

13 A. Correct.

14 Q. -- and on the senior side of the training school. I am
15 going to come back to that separation, but just let me
16 move through the chronology then, because you continue
17 in that role, but on -- around about [REDACTED] then,
18 when you are [REDACTED], so [REDACTED] after you have lived
19 in the Brothers' house and worked in St. Patrick's on
20 the senior side of the -- in the [REDACTED] role, you
21 are given the task of being the [REDACTED]
22 [REDACTED] who were based in the
23 St. Patrick's site.

24 A. Correct.

25 Q. And doing the best we can -- this CV may not be quite

1 Q. You were saying --

2 **A. And there was a man that used to help them to learn to**
3 **swim.**

4 Q. I think you said that was BR43.

5 **A. BR43, yes.**

6 Q. They were such good swimmers that they cleaned up at
7 swimming competitions by all accounts.

8 **A. Yes. We were barred, because we were winning too much.**

9 Q. Another person then -- sorry. You deal with what HIA58
10 has said in your statement there at paragraphs 9 -- if
11 we can just scroll back up, please, there -- through to
12 paragraph 11. I am not going to read it, but you can be
13 assured that the Panel have read it, and you describe
14 the allegations that he makes about sexual abuse as
15 an outrageous lie, which didn't happen. If we can
16 scroll on down, please, you also make the point that you
17 weren't actually named and therefore the two accounts
18 are inconsistent, and I have indicated to you that
19 I dealt with that when he was giving his evidence.

20 The next person who complained about you was HIA17.
21 Now I am not going to go through this in any detail,
22 because this man has not as yet spoken to the Inquiry.
23 He has given us a statement, but essentially there were
24 a couple of things that I wanted to ask you, because he
25 complained about being hit on bare legs, clipped on the

early in 1946 the numerous friends of the school contributed generously towards the cost of the instruments. The band's first major performance was at the school's official welcome to the famous founder of Boy's Town, Nebraska, U.S.A. In an interview Father Flanagan said that it was a pity St Patrick's was so poorly equipped. The brothers and boys deserved better accommodation to continue God's work. He paid tribute to the De La Salle Brothers who were doing such fine work for the education, comfort and rehabilitation of the boys. The country which produced such self-sacrificing men was rich, he said.¹⁰⁴ The conditions were indeed unsatisfactory and they were aggravated when delinquent boys between the ages of 16 and 18 who previously went to Borstals were sent to Milltown after the passing of the Children and Young Persons Act of 1950 but, as mentioned earlier, a site for a new school had already been bought from a Mr Joseph McGowan. In the meantime there were important developments in Milltown.

Just after the war the school was certified as a public elementary school with an average requiring five teachers while, for senior pupils, the Minister for Home Affairs sanctioned the employment of a woodwork teacher and horticulture instructor. The staff was further enriched by the arrival, in Autumn 1945, of the Bon Secour Sisters.¹⁰⁵ In 1949 the school became a technical school under the provisions of the Hall-Thompson Education Act where, in addition to tuition in literary and commercial subjects, the senior pupils received a training in bricklaying, cabinet-making, metalwork and painting.

Another of his objectives was realised when, beginning in the Summer of 1948, the boys, in groups of about 40, were given a month's holidays each year at a seaside mansion leased from Senator Joseph Maguire, at Glenariff, in the glens of County Antrim. The Minister for Home Affairs, Mr E.K. Warnock, spent a day with the boys in 1949, when he told them that "of all the schools of this type in Northern Ireland the one he took most interest in and of which he felt proudest was St Patrick's."¹⁰⁶ Whether ministers of state, church or civic leaders, university, training college of foreign students, all were received with becoming courtesy. A letter from Major S. Stephens, private secretary at Government House, Hillsborough, clearly indicates the impression made on Lord Wakehurst when entertained by Brother Stephen Kelly at a function in the Boy's Club — a club which had met with praise and approval from the education authorities.¹⁰⁷

n in
ners'
ered
the
was
B.A.
n in
ught
lege,
1970
He
the
for a
outh
the
s, for
ional
burg,
lege,

smaller group of boys and in conditions that are closer to the normal living situation. The unit caters for eleven boys and is staffed by two brothers and a sister. The Bon Secour Sisters commenced work in the training school in Autumn 1945, and for thirty years provided excellent service, until shortage of sisters caused their withdrawal.¹¹⁴ They were replaced by the Franciscan Missionaries of Mary in January 1975. In the Autumn of 1977 these sisters purchased a house locally and since then they come to the school to do their daily work, more in accord with their Chapter Orientations. Since September 1976 a member of the Franciscan Sisters of Mill Hill has been teaching in the junior school; a second sister came in the Spring of 1977 and works as a housemother in the senior pre-licence chalet. There is no estimating the religious and cultural influence of these women on these problem children.

Finally, in the concluding section of this chapter reference will be made to two school reports and to a few of Brother Stephen Kelly's statements on juvenile delinquency. In 1954 after the annual inspection the Ministry of Home Affairs inspectors made the following comments on the 'Disciplinary Mark System' in operation at St Patrick's:¹¹⁷

We were interested to hear in more detail the system of discipline by marks and Miss Forrests subsequently attended the mark-reading ceremony which takes place on Sunday morning. Each week up to 50 marks may be awarded for general conduct by the house masters; and up to 50 for work and behaviour in class or shops by teachers and instructors. A senior boy on all-day work who gets 65 marks or over receives 2 shillings pocket money and a junior boy 1 shilling pocket money. . . Each boy's name and marks are read out and he comes to the front to receive his pocket money. Those who have very bad marks because of some serious indiscipline or who consistently get poor marks wait to the last. They then have an opportunity to tell their side of the story and receive a few words of advice or warning. The fact of having to come before Brother Stephen in this way is in itself a penalty. Boys who have been really troublesome may lose some of their privilege leave. This system is found to work well in maintaining a good atmosphere in the school and although many more "tough" boys are now being

Dean Bodder **BR 95**

HIA 219

HIA 219 was referred to me on the 9/10/78 because of his long-standing history of encopresis. On most days he would be wearing soil underpants and his room would invariably conceal either soiled clothes, bedding or personal items of clothing. Also, on occasions **HIA 219** would use the plastic bin in his room as the toilet during the night and he would then throw his soil pants to sleep in the excreta. Consequently, these behaviours were cause the staff a lot of distress and concern. After his short stay in the Royal Victoria Hospital last Summer, he did not maintain his improvement for long but reverted back to the well-known problem of encopresis.

Initially, I interviewed **HIA 219** several times with the view of forming a close enough relationship so that he can trust me as his therapist and hence, can give me his full co-operation in any future behaviour modification programme. He is a pleasant boy but can be very deceitful. He has a good repertoire of social skills and shows good articulation. I said he feels ashamed about his encopresis and knows that he has had this problem for as long as he can remember. This fact was later confirmed by his Grandmother **HIA 219** during a home visit. I, consequently, decided that a behaviour modification programme would be desirable and, indeed, essential. I also realised the great difficulties stemming mainly from the long history of the problem and **HIA 219** age, which contraindicated success on a short time basis.

The programme was devised and this is a routine and well established procedure in the treatment of encopresis. **HIA 219** has to be supervised while using the toilet after every meal of the day. He sits the toilet for 5-10 mins immediately after breakfast, lunch and supper. This means that a housemaster has to ensure that **HIA 219**

flushes the toilet and he then, sits on it. HIA 219 is then encouraged to carry out the physical effort of defaecation for the 5-10 min period. After a maximum of 10 mins, HIA 219 is then asked whether he has passed urine and the housemaster has to check this by looking in the toilet. Also, before HIA 219 pulls up his trousers, the housemaster has to check whether HIA 219 pants is clean or soiled. Everytime HIA 219 passes urine in the toilet, he is given lots of verbal praise plus a reward of 10p, having carried out the essential toilet hygiene. In terms of staff time, it means a supervision lasting up to 15 mins at each session.

My next step was to obtain the co-operation of the staff in the Junior school. I met with care staff on duty and explained the nature of the programme and how much involvement would be required from them. The general reaction was favourable and 2 housemasters from his dorm volunteered to see that there would be consistency in supervising HIA 219. It was decided that HIA 219 would go into classes and, then, be taken out by the housemaster. The reason for this was the shortage of housemasters and this did not allow one housemaster to be away from the rest of the boys to supervise HIA 219 before schooltime. Though this was very unsatisfactory as the treatment has to be implemented immediately after a meal, the agreed arrangement was the only possible one at the time.

The programme was started on the 16/10/78, this also included supervising HIA 219 after morning break, after sports activities and before bedtime as well as after mealtimes. HIA 219 was supervised at 6 different times during the day. It was also agreed that HIA 219 would stay in the school for 2 consecutive weekends so that the

(2)

37

programme could run concurrently for a period of 3 weeks. In an attempt to prevent HIA 219 having soiled pants, he was issued with 2 clean pairs on that Monday and he had to be able to account for these at anytime.

Week 1 (16.10.78 - 22.10.78).

HIA 219 cooperated well and he was supervised on the toilet on most required occasions. He did not use the toilet appropriately once and was found to be wearing soiled pants twice. Unfortunately, he was given weekend leave unexpectedly and this caused a break in the consistency of supervision.

Week 2 (23.10.78 - 29.10.78).

HIA 219 was supervised on the toilet on less occasions this week. This was due to ① shortage of staff and ② his cooperation deteriorate. He did not use the toilet appropriately and, again, was found with soiled pants on two occasions. Moreover, HIA 219 was given weekend leave and the treatment was consequently interrupted again.

Week 3 (30.10.78 - 5.11.78).

It was agreed that HIA 219 would stay in for 2 consecutive week and he was told so. From now on, HIA 219 would be allowed to leave the dining room as soon as he finished his meals to go up to the Surgery where the nurses would supervise him. This was agreed by all staff concerned as well as HIA 219. During the last 2 weeks, HIA 219 was using the toilet beside the night watchman's office. This should solve the problem of care staff shortage as well as giving HIA 219 the chance sitting on the toilet immediately after meals. Supervision was compulsory on 3 occasions per day.

During this week, HIA 219 showed very poor cooperation; he had refused to go up to the Surgery and on those occasions he ha

been supervised. HIA 219 did not pass motion. However, no soiled pants were found or observed.

Week 4 (6.11.78 - 12.11.78).

From Monday - Wednesday, HIA 219 was still showing very little cooperation in the program. However, on Thursday 8/11/78 I introduced a modified programme. This took account of his cooperation and each time he refused to go up to the Surgery HIA 219 lost some privilege (see attached sheet). At lunchtime of the 9/11/78, HIA 219 used the toilet appropriately for the first time and for the rest of this week, he was passing motion in the toilet 3 times a day. He was motivated and cooperated in throughout the weekend.

Week 5 (13.11.78 - 19.11.78).

The progress was maintained and HIA 219 cooperated well. There was no sign of soiling and the treatment has started to be effective. HIA 219's attitudes and behaviours have taken a drastic change for the better.

He went home at the weekend and on Friday the 17/11/78 I visited his grandparents at home. It was confirmed that [redacted] has had the encopretic problem since he was very young. He had never been toilet-trained and his grandmother had found it impossible to do so. His pattern of behaviour was similar to what was found in the training school. He would soil his pants and then proceed to find hiding places in his shared bedroom with his twin brother HIA 218 and also, the bathroom.

During the weekend, [redacted] (grandmother) implemented the programme as per the weekend chart. HIA 219 did.

(3)

39

manage to pass motion and had soiled pants on 2 occasions; he washed them after having changed into clean ones. However, there was no hidden soiled pants found, which in itself was a great improvement.

Week 6 (20.11.78 - 26.11.78)

HIA 219 decided not to go up to the Surgery after every meal but continued to use the toilet appropriately at least once a day. The programme continues to be effective.

He had weekend leave and I visited [redacted] and left the wheelchair with her. HIA 219 managed to use the toilet appropriately once and he was clean throughout the weekend. His Grandmother was extremely pleased and reported that this is the first time HIA 219 managed to keep clean since he has been going home on weekend leave.

Week 7 (27.11.78 - 3.12.78).

The effectiveness of the programme continued; HIA 219 was passing motion at least once a day, though he would not go up to the Surgery on the 3 required occasions.

Week 8 (4.12.78 - 10.12.78).

Progress was maintained and it seemed that HIA 219 has now learned to use the toilet properly. This was also seen in the weekend chart when he was home. He had used the toilet on 3 days and we found to be slightly soiled on only one day.

Week 9 (11.12.78 - 17.12.78)

HIA 219's cooperation was still unsatisfactory but he was using the toilet on occasions and also passing motion 4 times a week. It looks as though HIA 219 decided to go up to the Surgery only when he felt like passing motion and hopefully HIA 219 has now gained control of his bowels. No soiling was reported or observed.

H.O.

Week 10 (18.12.78 - 22.12.78)

The pattern of behaviour of last week was repeated. Though HIA 219 was not complying to the programme fully, he has now changed his behaviour completely and has acquired the motivation and skill to overcome his encopresis problem.

Weeks 11 and 12 (23.12.78 - 8.1.79)

Over this period HIA 219 was on Christmas leave at home. I saw Mrs Lynch on the 5/1/79 and she reported that HIA 219 had soiled himself on 3 occasions but had changed his pants and washed them by himself without any supervision. There was no hidden soil pants found and HIA 219 has continued his improvement.

I discussed the situation with [REDACTED] and HIA 219. HIA 219 agreed that we should now trust him and he would undergo the programme without supervision on return to school. He also refused to have further supervision and hence I opted for a verbal contract. It is part of the treatment to stop the programme for a week or two to see how the subject behaved.

Week 13 (9.1.79 - 14.1.79).

HIA 219 maintained his progress until the 12/1/79 when soiled materials were found in his bedroom. He had soiled his bedspread, curtains, one sheet, the towel in the night toilet and 1 pyjama bottom. He had also hidden soiled bits of papers into the hems of the curtains.

This reversion to former behaviour is quite common once treatment is stopped and this confirmed the effectiveness of the programme. The aim now is to get HIA 219's motivation up so that he would use the toilet appropriately without supervision.

From now on, HIA 219 would use the toilet without having to

(4)

71

report to a housemaster as to the outcome but everytime soiled mate is found in his room, he would lose weekend leave and other privileges as per modified programme of 9/11/78.

Week 14. (15.1.79 - 21.1.79).

HIA 219 soiled his pants once but no soiled materials were found in his bedroom this week. This is an improvement on last week and gradually soiling of pants should disappear completely as his motivation builds up.

I am seeing HIA 219 at least once a week and I am doing individual counselling to support him to achieve the level of motivation required to stop his enuresis completely. This, of course, will take some time yet but as far as the results have shown I am confident that this will be achieved within a few more weeks.

Week 15 (22.1.79 - 28.1.79).

HIA 219's behaviour has been a repeat of last week. A pair of soiled pants was found in his bedroom and he put off washing it for 24 hours. A second command from the housemaster was necessary and so he lost a weekend leave. No deterioration occurred. HIA 219 put the blame on diarrhoea.

The aim here is to get HIA 219 to change his pants and get them washed without external pressure. This goal was reiterated to HIA 219. He has to improve his internal motivation and support from staff will enable him to do so.

Week 16 (29.1.79 - 4.2.79).

HIA 219 soiled his pants on 3 occasions and had an argument with [redacted] (Assistant Housemaster) on Sunday. HIA 219 refused to wash his dirty pants because [redacted] (Chief) was present at the

H2

time he was asked to do so. Later on, both HIA 219 and [REDACTED] resolved the problem and HIA 219 apologised for the misunderstanding.

During that weekend, there were some damage done in the dorm and also some soiled materials were found in one of the boy's bedroom. HIA 219 was blamed for the latter incident which he completely denied.

It has been decided that from now on HIA 219 will no longer lose weekend leave or other privileges when soiled materials are found in his bedroom or any other room. HIA 219 will simply wash his own soiled pants or other soiled materials and he is taking complete responsibility regarding his encopresis. Both BR 4 has suggested this and it is also very desirable to do. Week 17. (5.2.79-11.2.79).

I have not been able to see HIA 219 this week due to the fact that his teacher Miss O'Rourke refused to allow disrupting her teaching programme. There was a similar incident last week. From now on, I will try to see HIA 219 when he is not attending Miss O'Rourke's class but this will not always be possible. For instance, this week the only time I could have seen

HIA 219 was Thursday morning as I was taking SPT 133 home to meet his Social Worker (E. Hagan) and his mother.

Reports from the care staff would suggest that there has been no deterioration in HIA 219's behaviour and I am going to visit the grandparents as HIA 219 is on weekend leave. I will also then have a chance to see HIA 219.

Mrs [REDACTED] was very pleased to have both twins home again. She agreed that we should give HIA 219 the full responsibility of toileting. HIA 219 welcomed this and is to be monitored as to progress.

Weeks 18, 19 and 20 (12.2.79 - 4.3.79).

HIA 219 appeared to be enjoying the new approach to his encopresis. He is left completely alone to use the toilets regularly after the 3 major meals of the day. If he is soiled, he reports this fact to no one but proceeds with taking his pants off, washing them and leaving them to dry and finally putting them back on. During this 3 week period, he was soiled on 3 occasions: 2 times at home and once at school after sports activities. HIA 219 carried out his part of the verbal contract and his room has been clean throughout. HIA 219 is maintaining his progress and seems to be well motivated to get rid of his problem. He has been going steady with his girlfriend ~~and this is a great incentive in the programme~~ for a few months and this might prove to be a powerful incentive for HIA 219 to modify his encopresis.

Week 21 (5.3.79 - 11.3.79).

HIA 219's behaviour has been a disaster this week. He soiled his 2 blankets and his general appearance seems to be deteriorating. It was also found that HIA 219 had slashed his mattress and had been hiding soiled materials in to the mattress. The mattress had to be burnt and HIA 219 now he been provided with a new one.

This matter was discussed with SPT 123. His master and he suggested that we should try the ploy of keeping HIA 219 clean. From Monday, HIA 219 will have a shower daily after sports activities (5pm) and on Wednesdays and Fridays HIA 219 will be sent up to the Surgery for a bath. The idea is to improve HIA 219's level of personal hygiene as well as to modify his encopresis indirectly.

HH

I spoke to HIA 219 about SPT 123's ideas. He totally rejected it. He knows the consequences but he will simply not comply.

45

Section 3b:

Unit Records

Contacts
Record of Visits

46

No information available

47

Section 4a:

Interventions

Key Working / Records



Telephone:
Belfast 610123/8

St. Patrick's Training School

Linda 962-511

48

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST,
BT11 8BX

HIA 219

9/10/78

Encopresis - kids soiled pants under bedclothes, bins + wrote

- Interview. neat + tidy looking boy - rather nervous but quite articulate
- he talked freely about his encopretic habits but not spontaneously.
 - he said he felt ashamed at having to talk about it to people.
 - said it was a habit with him. he'd done it for as long as he could remember (age 5-7). even while living with his mum.

Contract

If he soils, he is to tell the staff immediately.

- R. ① told that a beh. program to be started.
- ② staff will cooperate

2nd Overcorrection

- 1st { use of toilet - 5 mins. practice pushing.
don't reward clean pants.
after meals. breakfasts. before bedtime.
10p or token
no. of pants.

weekend leave?
Mon. 10 a.m.
Teacher?

10/10/78

49

- wet bed last night. told Br.
- soiled pants while in Gym. had a shower and put on a clean pair. washed dirty one and left it in bathroom. In the morning told HIA 219.
- at breakfast → passed motion.
- said he does not know when he wants to pass motion.
- said he had a similar beh. prog. in R/VH.
- been told that program will start in Mon.

20/11/78. HIA 219 & HIA 218 to Court. Bail of \$20 each
 HIA 219 is complying well to program

23/11/78. HIA 219 used toilet after breakfast and was clean.

Program going well; defecating once/day. seems to have settled in his bowel action.

30/11/78. Use of toilet changed to dorm's. Housemasters to supervise; HIA 219 would go to Surgery but scared to see Sr. because too many boys hanging around.

1/12/78 prefers to use Surgery re program.

(3)



St. Patrick's Training School

50

Telephone:
Belfast 610123/8

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST,
BT11 8BX

Week 9. (11-12-78 - 17-12-78)

HIA 219's cooperation was still not as required but he was using the toilet on a few occasions. It looked as though HIA 219 decided to go up to the Surgery only when he felt like passing motion and perhaps HIA 219 has now gained control of his bowels. No soiling was reported.

Week 10 (18-12-78 - 22-12-78)

The above pattern of behaviour was repeated. It could be said that HIA 219 has now learnt to have control of his bowels.

Weeks 11 and 12 (23-12-78 - 8-1-79)

Over this period, HIA 219 was on Christmas leave at home. I saw Mrs [redacted] on the 5/1/79, and she reported that HIA 219 had soiled himself on 3 occasions but had changed his pants and washed them by himself. There was no hidden soiled pants found and HIA 219 has definitely improved in his use of toilet.

I discussed the situation with Mrs [redacted] and HIA 219; HIA 219 agreed that we should now trust him and he would undergo the program without supervision on return to school. He also refused to have further supervision and hence I opted for a verbal contract.

Week 13. (9-14-1-79)

HIA 219 was doing quite well until 12/1/79 when soiled materials were found in his bedroom. He had soiled his bedspread, curtains, ^{one} sheet, and pyjama bottom and he had also hidden soiled bits of papers in the hem of his curtains. Consequently, he was made to steep all the washable materials and washed them later on by the care staff and he also lost a weekend leave.

This above reversion to former behaviour is quite common once the treatment is stopped but now the aim is to get HIA 219's internal motivated up so that he would stop doing so on his own accord with no supervision.

Week 14 (15 - 21.1.79).

51

HIA 219 ^{once} soiled his pants ~~again~~ but no soiled materials were found in his bedroom this week. This is an improvement from last week and one hopes that gradually this will disappear completely.

I am seeing HIA 219 on the days I am at St. Patrick T.S. and I am doing individual counselling to support him to achieve the internal motivation required to stop his enuresis behaviour.



Telephone:
Belfast 610123/8

St. Patrick's Training School

HIA 219

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST,
BT11 8BX

14/12/78

after having been to R.V.H. for encopresis.
August fell off skateboard. went to R.V.H. arm & raised & in shape
 2 days later, Mr. **SPT 67** was told that he had soiled
 pants and said he could not wash them. Mr. **SPT 67** then
 insisted but **HIA 219** refused because of one hand and he kicked **HIA 219**
 with his R foot. **HIA 219** was kneeling down at the time and he
 fell on the floor. **HIA 219** got up and walked out and Mr. **SPT 67**
 kicked him on the back and **HIA 219** fell down on the landing
HIA 219 called him names and cleaners shouted at Mr. **SPT 67**
 to leave **HIA 219** alone. Mr. **SPT 67** came down to landing and
 started punching **HIA 219** on face (R eye) and right side of chest
HIA 219 then looked it and came back at night.

July? on skateboard by pool and **SPT 5** wanted board
 fight with **HIA 218** and **HIA 219** went into dining room and hid a
 fork and ran down corridor and stabbed him **HIA 219** ran
 out of door and **HIA 219** got him gave him a slap.
 ? - tried to cut his abdomen with knife.

- very sensitive about his encopresis.
- gets very depressed whenever he has soiled himself.
- suicidal at times. several attempts.
- will comply to program. must be allowed to leave table
before Ahr boys to go upstairs to Surgery.



Telephone:
Belfast 610123/8

St. Patrick's Training School

HIA 219

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST,
BT11 8BX

14/12/78

- No pain in lower abdominal area.
- said he used toilet this am after breakfast. passed a lot.
- said he has had pain since started to use the toilet.

Mon. evening

Som after bedtime. started to have pain and felt like passing m/hin. hard m/hin - a little passed while in bed - pyjama was taken down beforehand but did not go to the toilet. would have had time to the toilet if wanted to - got out of bed and while standing up, faeces came out then used bedspread to wipe himself. didn't go to the toilet afterwards as he felt he had done it all.

Wed evening

Som after getting into bed. felt like passing m/h and got out of bed. excited before had time to go to the toilet. wiped himself and straight back to bed.

Mon. went up to Surgery at 9 am to give in sheet.
11 am used toilet on ground floor - a lot.
went up after lunch but not after supper.

Tues. a.m. + lunch ✓ not used. supper X.

Wed. did not go up at all.

dinner and tea had used toilet - ground floor toilet.

Thurs

had breakfast. went to laundry with bed covers.

then went to toilet + used it a bit.

- said other boys (SPT 112) had been putting dirty pants in room and toilet and HIA 219 getting blamed.
- incident of towel on 28/11/78 → that was planted in room. said somebody took his towel.

Tues 7 pm

Cut right thigh twice (2 1/2" x 1" long) this' blue trousers with razor blade.

Tues bedtime 10 pm

Cut left hand 5 times + left forearm axal cuts 5"

Wed 10 pm.

Cut left forearm 16 times (1-2") and left hand 5 times 1" long
feels depressed after having soiled

"Why can't I be like everybody else".

not moody but feels in bad temper if people tell him off in front of the people.

Before program 3 months +

as coming into classroom, Miss O'Rourke said "you should wash your pants before you come into class" was late because he was washing pants.



Telephone:
Belfast 610123/8

St. Patrick's Training School

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST.
BT11 8BX

HIA 219

(10.10.78)

- ① He must have only 2 pairs of underpants at anytime.
- ② Only actual evidence of faeces in toilet to be rewarded.
He must sit on the toilet for 5 mins after every meal, breaks and before bedtime and practice defaecating.
He must be supervised during these periods.
- ③ A positive reinforcement is given after each success + verbal praise. (10p).
- ④ Clean pants are not rewarded but ignored.

16/10/78

Program started. HIA 219 very cooperative. no success yet.
5.20 pm - HIA 219 had 2 dirty pairs of pants + 1 pyjama bottom.
He washed them.
2 clean prs of pants given - 1 red + 1 blue.

17/10/78

Pants dirty in the morning - still no result on toilet

18/10/78

saw HIA 219. he said it was an accident at night

20/10/78

still no motion passed during program. dirty pants a.m.
said he was sweating a lot during the night and that was the cause of the stains on pants. had used corners to wipe himself; same found in w robe
" stools - diarrhoea after exercise, otherwise well formed. " said HIA 219
12.20 taken to toilet (late due to lack of staff) - smear of faecal matter produced (soft stool)
10 p given as reward - felt embarrassed

HIA 219 gone home for weekend unexpectedly due to Joe not having enough marks. Program to be continued next week. After a week, **HIA 219** is to stay in for at least 2 weekends consecutively so that program can be carried out consistently. This might be extended if necessary.

2/11/78 saw **HIA 219** at 10.30 am and new program explained. He is to go up to the surgery after every meal and the Sisters will put him on the Toilet + supervise him. **HIA 219** went home Tues and left 2 pps of dirty underwear in his room - one soaked in urine in the bin and the stench was awful, the other in his wardrobe. He was made to wash them and take them to the laundry. His bedspread was dirty - ? I used it to wipe his bottom.

3/11/78 **HIA 219** was in sick bay last night, apparently had a temp. This morning refused breakfast; saw Sister [redacted] and was told to go + get his breakfast and program to go on. He is to spend the day in TV room. Miss O'Rourke said he has been playing up in classroom - mainly due to him having to stay in for 2 weekends. He can be cheeky and disobedient refusing to do his work.

9/11/78 **HIA 219** has not been complying to program. Modified program started taking privileges + pocket money into account. This has been explained to **HIA 219**. Stewed this w/e (both house + school mks 2). After lunch, produced faeces in toilet.

10/11/78 Defaecated in toilet after breakfast + lunch.

14/11/78 Program going on well. **HIA 219** complying ✓

16/11/78 Tues. 14/11/78, toothpaste tube found covered with faeces + dirty points. (-20p). Today, dirty comics + paper found hidden in old pair of shoes (-20p). He is still complying with program and using toilet appropriately, producing small amounts of faeces on each occasion.

17/11/78 Going home for W/E. W/E Record chart b/w given to Graning and I will be going to see Mrs [redacted] and explain what is to be done. Went to see Mrs [redacted] and W/E record explained.

19/11/78 4pm Visited Mrs [redacted] to see how **HIA 219** was doing and whether she was filling W/E record properly. She did and **HIA 219** has not left anything dirty lying around; usually he does.



Telephone:
Belfast 610123/8

St. Patrick's Training School

HIA 219

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST,
BT11 8BX

- 18/1/79. ① Miss O'Rourke stewed him last W/E for no reason.
② He is being given milk that he has already done before.
③ wants to see Dr. Lunny for constipation & medicine.

26/1/79.

- Last Tues. [redacted] found soiled pants in bedroom.
- said he soiled it on Mon. after sports activities.
 - said he's been sitting on toilet at least 3 times/day.
 - " " " passing motion at least once/day.
 - " " " having diarrhoea since Xmas leave at home and for one wk since returning to school.
 - 2nd week -> started to have constipation.
 - Sr. [redacted] gave him some "orange" medicine. This didn't help. He has had it before and knows it doesn't work.
 - At present: having constipation (to see Sr. in Surgery).
 - Eating well. sleeping well. pain only on toilet.
 - Headaches every other day. sometimes very bad that can't play football. These started since had a fall from bus - arm hit bus and head hit step and fight in dice when he got 3 blows on head.
 - says he is undergoing the program O.K.
 - worries a lot about home. Combs and dirtying pants.
 - girlfriend [redacted] might be coming up to see [redacted] this W/E.
 - last weekend she was on holidays.

HIA 219

1/2/79.

Wed. woke up and found pants were dirty. told [redacted] and he washed pants & got them dried. Thurs put pants back out today. room clean, WIFE bulbs broken on floor. beds trampled over. something broke & [redacted] be in bed down top floor. HIA 219 got blamed for all that.

Sun had a row with [redacted] because he was wearing dirty pants. [redacted] was standing beside door and HIA 219 refused to go up to wash pants.

2/2/79. woke up, found pants dirty. Washed them & got them dry and now wearing them after short. room clean.

1/3/79

24/2/79. 2 dirty pants at home.

26/2/79. 1 dirty pant after Gym.

Room OK ✓.

Says "feeling better. getting over the problem quickly".
been seeing [redacted] at the WFE. usually goes into her house.

16/7/79. Saw HIA 219 first time since returned to TS.

- didn't like Cunn. wasn't in the maze.
- talked about Fa. He said he knew his address - Rathcoole? living with another woman. would put a petrol bomb in house and if gave a chance would kill Fa. Fa. Blamed for everything.
- Hilda Mo. could take [redacted] back to Plymouth Sunday
- would like to get mean. and then get licensed to Mo.
- encephalitis: not a problem anymore. quite happy about it.

59

Section 4b:

Interventions

Session Records / Group Work /
Education

GO.

No information available

Section 5:

Record of Incidents

Physical Restraints

Single Separations

Accident Forms

Complaints Forms

Sanctions Forms

HIA 219

447132
HAC

D.O.B. [REDACTED]

76

D. J. Renard: 07/1/18

Committed
14.2.78

Belfast

Reason: - Place of Safety Order

2/1/78 - Out for the Day

Recommitted 25.12.78

Recommitted 15.1.79

Mon 30.1.79.

Absconded with twin & 6 other boys

Tues 31.1.78

Returned from home by Br. [REDACTED]

Tues 7-2.78

In court - adjourned for 1 week

Tues 14.2.78. Court - committed

Fri. 24.2.78 Parole home till Mon 27th. OK

3-3.78 Parole to Mon 6th OK

Mon 5.3.78. Questioned by R.U.C. re B.E. over week-end.

Sun 26.3.78 Parole to 14.04.78. Gone to hospital

Thurs 13.4.78 Discharged from hospital to grandparents
Parole to 17.04.78. OK.Sat. 29.4.78. Attacked **SPT 5** with forks

Sun 30.4.78. Absconded with brother 7.45h

Mon 1.5.78. Returned to school 11.30 a.m.

Tues 9.5.78 Absconded 9.10am

Brought back by R.U.C. at 5pm

Sun 3.6.78 Visited to grandparents for Sunday lunch

Fri. 9.6.78 Parole to Mon 12th. OK

Fri 16.6.78 Parole to Mon 19/6.

Thurs 22.6.78 Parole to Mon 26th OK.

Fri. 30.6.78. Parole to 3/7. OK

Thurs. 6.7.78. Parole to Mon. 10/7 OK.

Thurs. 13.7.78. Parole to Thurs. 18/7.

Tues 18.7.78. Camp.

Fri 28.7.78 Summer holidays till August 21st

Mon. August 21st Returned at 4.50 pm
 Sun August 25th Out till Tues 29th OK.
 Sat. 1/9/78 Parole to Mon. 4/9.
 Sat. 2/9/78 Returned from Fairhill RUC charged with
 burglary and damage to garaged cars.
 Tues 12.9.78 Absconded at 8.50 pm
 Returned by army patrol at 11.45 pm
 Sun. 6.10.78 Parole to Mon 9/10 O.K.
 Fri 20.10.78 23rd O.K.
 Sun 27.10.78 Parole to Mon 30th ✓
 Fri 17.11.78 20th ✓ big.
 Fri 24.11.78 Parole to Mon 27th OK.
 Fri 15.12.78 Re committed at Belfast Juvenile
 Sun. 22.12.78 Christmas parole to Jan 9th O.K.
 Mon 15.1.79. Juv. court.
 Thurs 8.2.79. Parole to Tues 13/2 O.K.
 Fri 16.2.79 19th
 Thurs 15.3.79. Parole to Tues 20/3. OK.
 Fri 30.3.79. Parole to Mon 2nd.
 Sun 6.4.79 Parole to Mon 9th (late) O.K.
 Thurs 12.4.79 Easter parole to 24th O.K.
 Fri. 27.4.79. Licensed to school.
 Tues 19.6.79. Belfast custody court (about 50 burglar
 Remanded to prison till 26.6.79
 Tues. 3.7.79 Court - Remanded St Pat's 2 weeks.
 Sun. 8.7.79 Absconded 11.30 am with mother
 Returned by staff from town later.
 Wed. 11.7.79. Absconded 8.45 pm with twin
 and [REDACTED] spent the night
 at home.
 Thurs 12.7.79 In police custody charges pending
 returned to [REDACTED] 5.00 pm

HIA 219

64

Jun 18. 779 Remanded to prison
Fri 19.7.79 Clothing and available forwarded to Hyderabad
this afternoon
Wed 25.7.79 Remanded in custody again until Aug 15
Wed 8.8.79
Recommitted to R. School.
Remanded to Hyderabad under Schedule 5 Sec 10.
Wed 22.8.79 Committed to Baramat

65



Telephone:
Belfast 610123/8

St. Patrick's Training School

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST,
BT11 8BX

HIA 218 - HISTORY IN TRAINING SCHOOL

30.1.78 Absconded with [REDACTED] and six others. Returned by staff next day.

30.4.78 Absconded with [REDACTED]. Returned from Grandmother's home next day.

9.5.78 Absconded but returned by the Police same day.

2.9.78 Week-end parole but returned by Police later same day after being questioned re burglary and malicious damage to garaged cars.

12.9.78 Absconded but returned by the army later in the evening.

15.12.78 Recommitted to Training School at Belfast Juv. Court.

15.1.79 Recommitted to Training School at Belfast Juv. Court

15.6.79 Reported missing from his home

18.6.79 In R.U.C. custody at Fortwilliam

8.7.79 Absconded at 11.30 a.m. with seven other boys but was returned to school by staff later in the evening.

11.7.79 Absconded with [REDACTED] at 6.45 p.m. Informed by R.U.C. following day that they had him in custody and that B. & E. charges were pending.



Telephone:
Belfast 610123/8

St. Patrick's Training School

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST,
BT11 8BX

66

HIA 219 - HISTORY IN TRAINING SCHOOL

30.1.78 Absconded with [REDACTED]. Returned by staff on 31.1.78
29.4.78 Attacked another boy in yard with fork.
30.4.78 Absconded with [REDACTED]. Returned the following day
9.5.78 Absconded but returned later same day by Police.
2.9.78 Week-end parole but returned by Police later same day. Questioned
re burglary and malicious damage to garaged cars.
12.9.78 Absconded but returned by army same day.
15.12.78 Recommitted to Training School
15.1.79 Recommitted to Training School
27.4.79 Licensed to attend St. Patrick's Secondary School
19.6.79 At Belfast Custody Court. Believed to be involved in some 50
burglaries.
Remanded to Prison to June 26th.
3.7.79 At Court. Remanded back to St. Patrick's Training School for
2 weeks.
8.7.79 Absconded with [REDACTED]. Informed by R.U.C. the following day
that they had him in custody and that B. & E. charges were
pending.

67

Section 6:

Correspondence

ROYAL ULSTER CONSTABULARY

68.

.....DivisionSub-Division

..... Station/Branch Date

SUBJECT

TO

On behalf of the manager of St Patrick's Training School, I am requesting the Court, under the Provisions of Schedule 5, Section 10, that **HIA 219** and **HIA 218** be removed from St Patrick's Training School, pending the completion of an application under Section 14 of the Children and Young Persons Act.

Brother Xavier Kyrer

69.



HM PRISON

Crumlin Road Belfast BT14 6AE

Telephone Belfast 747226 (4 lines)

The Principal
St Patrick's Training School
Glen Road
BELFAST
BT4 2NJ

Your reference

Our reference

Date 16 July 1979

Dear Rev Sir,

Please find enclosed a cheque for £1.00, being the
private cash of [HIA 219] (Date of Birth [] []),
who was committed to your establishment on 4 July 1979.


GOVERNOR.

MMCN/LT



**Northern
Bank
Limited**

152 CRUMLIN ROAD
BELFAST BT14 7AB

10th July 1979

70.

Pay St Patrick's Training School or order

One pound only

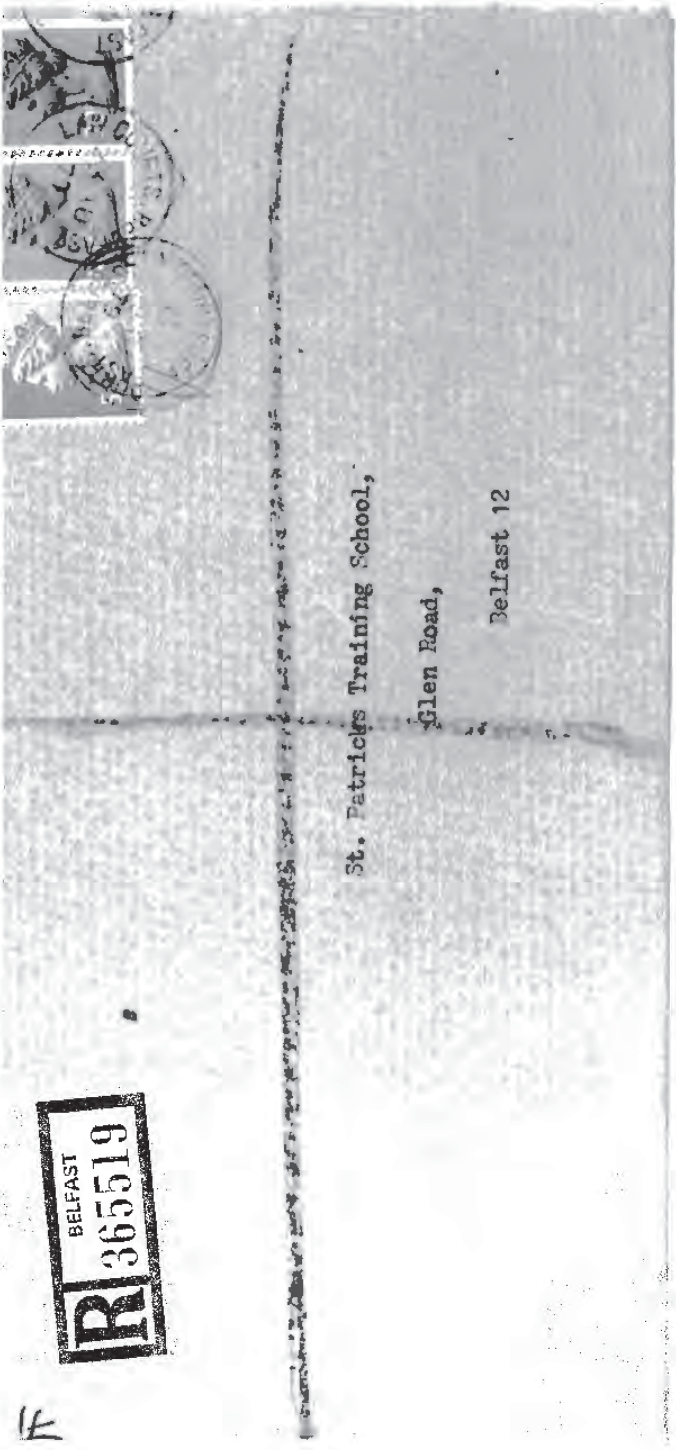
£1-00

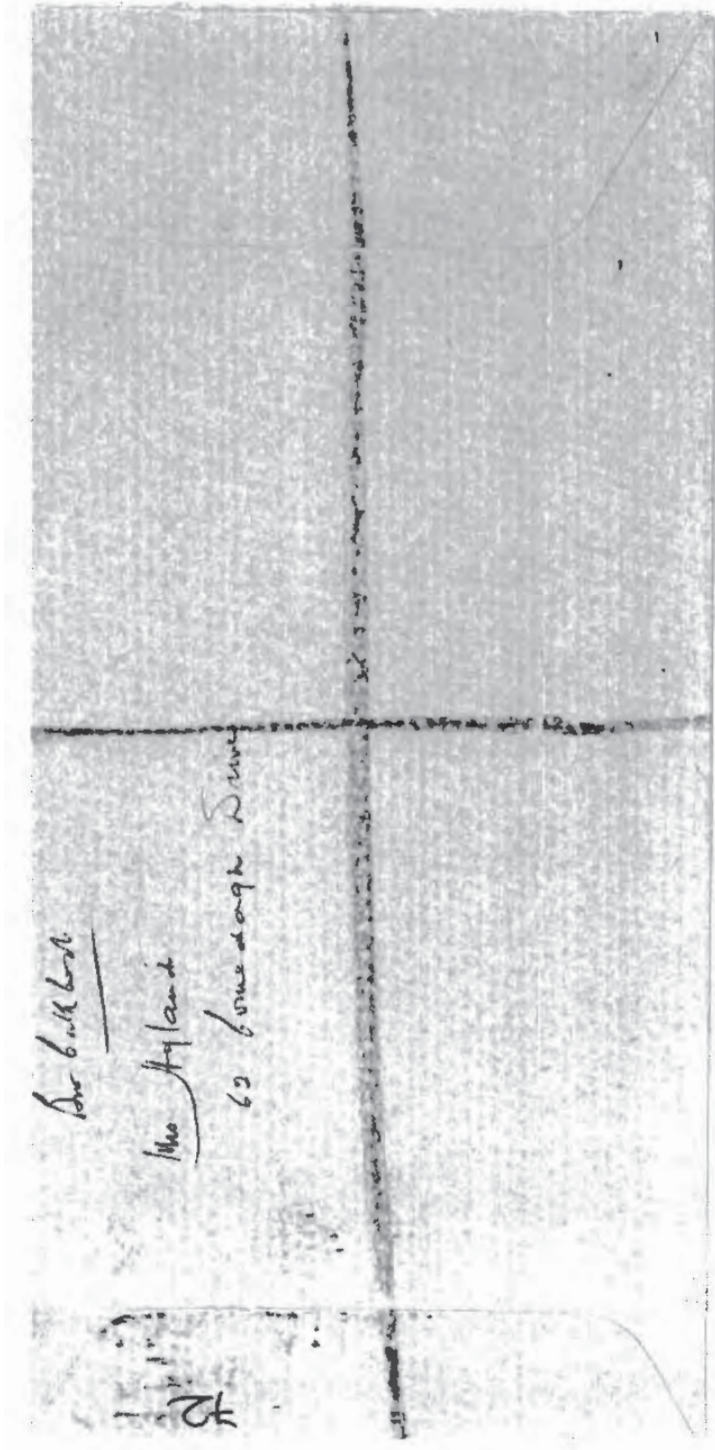
GOVERNOR OF HER MAJESTY'S PRISON BELFAST

[Signature]

[Signature]

⑈064784⑈ 95⑈0116⑈ 21015133⑈





73

TREVOR SMYTH & CO.SOLICITORS

Trevor Smyth, LL.B.
Peter Ford, LL.B.

Your Ref.

Our Ref. TS/AG

16 CHICHESTER STREET,
BELFAST,
BT1 4LB

Telephone: 20360
23455
46294

23rd August, 1979

St. Patricks Training School,
Glen Road,
Belfast 12.

Dear Sir,

Police -v- [REDACTED] HIA 218, HIA 219

Appeal.

I enclose 2 photocopy Notices of

Yours faithfully,

/ncls.

274

MAGISTRATES' COURTS ACT (NORTHERN IRELAND) 1964
(Section 144; Rule 119 — Form 126)

NOTICE OF APPEAL TO THE COUNTY COURT

SKITH
S4-1-NT
ST/ATACIES
TRAINING
SCHOOL

Complainant
(or Plaintiff)
(or Applicant)
(or Appellant)

Petty Sessions District of
BELFAST.

HIA 219

Defendant
(or Respondent)

County Borough of
BELFAST.

TAKE NOTICE that it is the intention of the above-named (~~Complainant~~)
(~~Plaintiff~~) (~~Applicant~~) (~~Appellant~~) (~~Defendant~~) (~~Respondent~~) to Appeal to the
Belfast Recorder's Court for Belfast sitting on the 3rd day of
SEPTEMBER 1979, against the (~~Conviction~~) and (~~Sentence~~)
(Order) made (~~passed~~) by a Magistrates' Court for the above-named Petty Sessions
District sitting at BELFAST on the 22nd day of AUGUST
1979.

Dated this

22nd

day of

AUGUST 1979

Signed

[Signature]

Party Appealing

Name of Solicitor or Agent for
Party Appealing.

To: The Clerk of Petty Sessions for the
above-named Petty Sessions District.

Respondent.

No. 13/1B.

D472078.5m.10/68.D.gp.158

75

MAGISTRATES' COURTS ACT (NORTHERN IRELAND) 1964
(Section 144; Rule 119 — Form 126)

NOTICE OF APPEAL TO THE COUNTY COURT

BATHIN SA-1-1-1	Complainant (or Plaintiff)	} Petty Sessions District of BELFAST.
ST PATRICKS TRAINING	(or Applicant)	
SE-H-1-1	(or Appellant)	
HIA 218	Defendant (or Respondent)	} County Borough of BELFAST.

TAKE NOTICE that it is the intention of the above-named (Complainant) (Plaintiff) (Applicant) (Appellant) (Defendant) (Respondent) to Appeal to the Belfast Recorder's Court for Belfast sitting on the 3rd day of SEPTEMBER 1979, against the (Conviction) and (Sentence) (Order) made (passed) by a Magistrates' Court for the above-named Petty Sessions District sitting at BELFAST on the 22 day of August 1978.

Dated this 22 day of August 1979.

Signed

Les Sykes

Party Appealing

Name of Solicitor or Agent for
Party Appealing.

To: The Clerk of Petty Sessions for the
above-named Petty Sessions District.

Respondent.

No. 13/1B.

D472078.5m.10/68.D.gp.158

76.

Section 7a:

Medical / Healthcare / Psychology

Self-Harm Forms

Psychology Notes

77.

MEDICAL INFORMATION

①

PROGRAM : **HIA 219**

RE. ENCOPRESIS

① TIME : USUALLY AFTER MEALS

② SUPERVISION ON TOILET : 5 MINS

③ PRODUCTION OF EXCRETA IN TOILET = 10P

	BREAKFAST	BREAKTIME	LUNCH	AFTER SPORTS (PM)	SUPPER	BEDTIME	COMMENTS
MONDAY 16.10.78	8.40	11.00	2.10pm	5.10		9.10	Pants dirty
	5	5	5	7		10	
		X	X	X		X	5.20pm: 2 prod of pants
	9.00	11.00	1.30pm	4.50pm		9.10	1 pair of pants dirty
TUESDAY 17.10.78	5	5	5	9		10	
	X	X	X	X		X	
WEDNESDAY 18.10.78	9.00	11.15	1.50	7.00	7.00	9.00	
	7	7	5	10.11ms	3	7	
	X	X	X	X	X	X	
THURSDAY 19.10.78	9.20	11.30	2.00pm	5.00pm	8.45		
	10	8	8	7	5		
	X	X	X	X			Pants dirty.
FRIDAY 20.10.78	9.20	12.20	2.25				Smear, some faeces
	5	10	10				himself in cubicle
	X	✓ 10P	X				
SATURDAY		Home for weekend					
		said he soiled himself					
		only once.					
SUNDAY		WIFE leave unexpected. no W/E chand.					
							17

St. Patrick's School, Milltown, Belfast.

This school was inspected on the 29th November, 1950, on which day there were in residence 134 boys (81 including 6 voluntary pupils in the junior school, 47 in the senior school). The figures for 1949 were 117 boys resident (75 junior and five voluntary, 37 senior).

Details of admissions and discharges during the year are as follows:-

1. Number admitted:

Junior 24 - Total 53
Senior 29

2. Number discharged:

Junior 22 - Total 34
Senior 12

3. Number on licence:

Junior 1 - Total 9
Senior 8

4. Number admitted to hospital and subsequently discharged during the year:

Junior 2 - Total 3
Senior 1

5. Number absconded and recovered:

Junior Nil - Total 1
Senior 1

The general health of the boys was good during the year, and there were no epidemics. A regular quarterly medical inspection of the pupils is made by the School Medical Officer, Dr. Harrington. He also visits the school daily and is on call for any emergency. He ensures that every boy has been vaccinated and immunized. Brother Stephen informed us that recently arrangements had been made to have all boys medically examined immediately prior to discharge from the school.

As recorded in last year's report, all the boys at the school have received a Mantoux test and negative reactors have been given B.C.G. inoculation. An excellent card index system of medical records is kept in a filing cabinet in a well equipped medical and dental surgery. The Matron is responsible for attending to all minor ailments. The school dentist visits once a week. Brother Stephen, the School Manager, reported that the existing stock of printed medical cards had now been used up, and suggested that this would be an opportune time to introduce a uniform medical card for all training schools. He has delayed ordering a further stock of the existing cards in the hope that something might be achieved in this direction. At the same time, Brother Stephen also expressed a desire for the organisation of a closer association between officers of all training schools, pointing out that the exchange of ideas and the knowledge of methods used in other schools would inevitably lead to a general improvement.

The problem of enuresis was discussed with Brother Stephen. He says that there are always a certain number of pupils who suffer from this complaint and at Dr. Elder's suggestion I provided him with details of an electrical apparatus designed for the treatment of this complaint. I understand that the Ministry's sanction has already been

/given

given to the purchase of one such apparatus for trial purposes. Should this prove successful, Brother Stephen says he can arrange to have the apparatus made in the School workshop.

Accommodation:

Linoleum has been laid to cover the old wooden floors in the dormitories. A new stainless steel double sink has been installed in the scullery annexe to the kitchen. Apart from this there has been little change since last year. As a new site has been obtained on the Glen Road and approval obtained for the provision of new premises on this site, it is not proposed to recommend any further changes in the existing school. The entire premises were adequately equipped and were clean and tidy at the time of the inspection. The bathroom and lavatory accommodation is adequate and well kept.

Training Facilities:

A public elementary school education is provided for the boys of school age in classrooms which are adequate and suitable. Classification of boys is necessarily on the basis of attainment, and there is inevitably a nondesirable mixture of older and younger boys in one class. Educational ascertainment was discussed with Brother Stephen, and he seems to be of the opinion that at present at any rate there would not be much object in having any of the present pupils ascertained by the approved school medical officers of the Health Committee. In our opinion boys should be ascertained before they are admitted to school and indeed as far as possible before the children are referred to the courts. We think that all children of school age who are to be brought before the court for an offence sufficiently serious to render it probable that they may be committed to a training school, and whose educational report suggests some degree of mental defect or who have a record of psychological or mental disturbance should be ascertained by a medical officer approved by the Local Health Authority for the ascertainment of handicapped children if this has not already been done. A copy of this medical officer's report should be sent to the Local Welfare Officer and be submitted by him to the magistrate as part of the educational and medical reports to be provided by him under Section 37(ii) of the Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland). Provided the ascertainment is effected in this way at the request of the Local Welfare Officer following his study of the educational report we do not think this procedure will conflict in any way with the provisions of Section 36 of the Mental Health Act, but suggest that this aspect should be carefully studied before any directive is sent to Local Welfare Officers.

For children or young persons already committed, Sections 50 and 53 of the Education Act (Northern Ireland) 1947 and Section 37 of the Mental Health Act (Northern Ireland) 1948 would appear to be applicable and the necessary examinations carried out in the cases of children of school age by the school Medical Officer approved by the Local Health Committee and in the case of young persons by a medical officer of the Northern Ireland Hospitals Authority. We do not think that this procedure would conflict in any way with the provisions of Section 37 of the Mental Health Act (Northern Ireland) 1948, but suggest that discussions with the Ministry of Health on this aspect would be advisable.

We saw boys being trained in tailoring, shoemaking, shoe-repairing, carpentering and leather work. We saw products of the workshop and were much impressed by the high standard of workmanship. The training in joinery is particularly good, each boy's drawings being carefully filed so that he may take them with him as a proof of his competence when he proceeds to his apprenticeship. A sewing-machine for the shoemaker shop has also been obtained on hiring terms since our last visit.

/An

Dealt with in separate file
25/3/50
25/4/50

1 **A. Could have been, yes.**

2 Q. Would those visitors have had access to the boys to talk
3 to the boys when you --

4 **A. Oh, yes.**

5 Q. Yes, and can I ask: did you have any contact with the
6 families of the boys?

7 **A. Yes.**

8 Q. What would that be like? Would that be organised or
9 casual or ...?

10 **A. It would be at visiting times or sometimes it was home
11 visits.**

12 Q. You'd actually go out and meet ...?

13 **A. Yes.**

14 Q. And would you try sometimes, if you were trying to
15 change a boy's behaviour, engage the family in that as
16 well?

17 **A. Yes. Before the boy was sent home you had to gauge what
18 the set-up was at home.**

19 Q. Right, and was that just for Slemish that that was done
20 or would it be across --

21 **A. That would have been done throughout the school.**

22 Q. All the time that you worked there, SPT2, or just more
23 towards the end of the time you worked there, or from
24 the very start?

25 **A. What was that? The visits?**

1 Q. Visits home.

2 **A. Well, I used to spend a in Derry in the**

3 Q. And that would be about being (inaudible)?

4 **A. On home visits.**

5 Q. Very good. The last thing is just to say we have heard
6 from some of the witnesses that the fighting between
7 boys, which you would maybe expect, that at times that
8 was allowed to go on for a bit before staff would
9 intervene, that there was a sense of letting the boys
10 sort things out themselves.

11 **A. No, no. I actually challenged that one time. I says,**
12 **"How did that go so far?"**

13 Q. Right. So some staff might have ...?

14 **A. Well, it was just a case of not minding your job. Those**
15 **kids are in here to be protected and not -- you know.**

16 Q. So in that instance when you said, "How did it go so
17 far?", were the children hurt?

18 **A. Well, bleeding noses and things like that. They had to**
19 **be brought up to the nurse.**

20 Q. Right, and your sense was that some staff member hadn't
21 intervened quickly enough?

22 **A. Well, you had to be very alert when you were working in**
23 **a job like that, and to turn a blind eye on something**
24 **like that to me is criminal.**

25 Q. And it could get out of control?

St. Patrick's

Glen Road, Belfast.

11th May, 61.

S.278

HIA 314

Licensed

11. 5. 1961.

Licensed to his father,
[REDACTED], Belfast,
to work as App. Joiner
with [REDACTED]
Bros., Ltd., Belfast.
Wages: 50/- per week.



St. Patrick's Training School

Telephone:
(0232) 301123/7
Fax. No:
(0232) 626879

GLEN ROAD,
BELFAST
BT11 8BX.

RE: INQUIRY REPORT SUBMITTED 20.9.94

ADDENDUM

We believe that weekend leave is a vitally important part of a child's care programme. In situations where contacts with the home have broken down priority is given to the restoration of these. Experience has taught us that where home leave is not possible children become highly institutionalized and inadequate.

Weekend leave is given after thorough consideration of all areas which impinge on a child's welfare eg.

- (a) his safety while on leave
- (b) the effect of his presence on the safety and property of others.
- (c) his clear understanding of the rules which apply to his leave situation (often these are written into a contract).

Of central importance to all of this is an agreement with parents, relatives or guardians and a full understanding on their part of all of the above. This agreement is usually obtained after a period of close liaison, vetting and an undertaking on the part of St. Patrick's staff to provide close support. This close support can necessitate home visits by staff during the period of leave in order to monitor the situation.

In cases where a boy's behaviour deteriorates while at home parents will usually contact the staff who will visit and attempt to repair the situation. If this fails a boy will be returned to his unit.

A return to the unit in a situation like this will not necessarily merit sanctions, indeed very often these breakdowns are not the fault of the boy.

Bearing in mind that a return in these circumstances can be something of a stigma in the eyes of the peer group, efforts are made to attract as little attention as possible. After a talk with an appropriate member of staff (which can take place on the journey back) a boy will be fully integrated into unit activities. In exceptional circumstances if medical treatment is needed it will be arranged immediately.

In a situation where a boy is not in an amenable frame of mind e.g.

- (a) disruptive or abusive
- (b) under the influence of alcohol, solvents etc.
- (c) threatening to abscond

It is very likely that after discussion with the member of Senior Staff on duty he will be placed in Close Supervision for a short period.

1 Q. Paragraph 6 here you say your family would have come to
2 visit you regularly. You believe they came every
3 Wednesday night. You remember one of your older
4 brothers came up once during the day about 3 o'clock and
5 he had to get a pass to see you, but the staff allowed
6 you to see him. So you felt it was a fairly relaxed
7 regime with regard to family visits?

8 **A. Yes.**

9 Q. You say your family really could have come at any stage
10 and visited you, and they were allowed to bring in food
11 parcels for you, although people didn't have a lot of
12 money in those days and because you were a large family,
13 they couldn't afford much in the way of luxuries, but
14 what I think you are telling us there is that when your
15 family did come, they brought you something with them?

16 **A. Yes.**

17 Q. Paragraph 7 you complain here that you can recall from
18 the very start of your time there that assaults took
19 place in the Training School:

20 "I remember coming down sometimes after we had been
21 playing football and we were going into the shower room.
22 There was a couple of housemasters who were always
23 involved",

24 and the names -- I am going to use the names, but
25 I see that we have given them a reference number as

1 **A. 7.45 and then to maybe 3 o'clock and the late shift**
2 **would be from 2 o'clock to 9.30.**

3 Q. And so there was that hour of overlap?

4 **A. That was to transfer any information on the boys,**
5 **anything that happened, unforeseen had happened. "Keep**
6 **an eye on this." "Do this", you know.**

7 Q. You would have had a meeting with the person --

8 **A. Yes.**

9 Q. -- who was coming on to shift after you were finishing
10 --

11 **A. Yes.**

12 Q. -- and give him that information? You were saying that
13 that happened deliberately at around 2 o'clock, because
14 the boys were in school and you were able to have --

15 **A. Yes.**

16 Q. -- that meeting at that time.

17 **A. Yes.**

18 Q. Now just a couple of things, sort of some general things
19 that the Inquiry have heard about. One of the things
20 you were saying that one of them would have been at this
21 meeting you would have talked about -- every Thursday
22 there was a meeting about marks in the school.

23 **A. Yes.**

24 Q. And decided whether children would get certain points or
25 whatever. Who would have attended that meeting on

1 a Thursday?

2 **A. All -- all the staff, the residential staff who were**
3 **working with the boys.**

4 Q. And would that have been the case no matter what shift
5 you were on or would that have taken place in this
6 crossover time?

7 **A. It took place in the crossover.**

8 Q. I was asking what kind of things might have caused boys
9 to lose points and you were saying things like fighting
10 or causing disruption in class. That was the sort of
11 thing that might have lost them points.

12 **A. Yes. Well, the disruption in the class was covered by**
13 **their mark system, which was the same.**

14 Q. And we were talking about this and I have this vision of
15 three columns. I can't remember the headings of them,
16 but there was points came -- were fed through the system
17 from the classroom. Then there were points from the
18 housemaster and there was a third column that I haven't
19 had time --

20 **A. I can't remember, but when you mention it to me,**
21 **I reckon there was another one, and I can't for the life**
22 **of me remember what that was.**

23 CHAIRMAN: Was that not the total --

24 MS SMITH: I think there were three columns.

25 CHAIRMAN: -- out of 25 or something?

1 MS SMITH: I thought it was out of 30, but ...

2 CHAIRMAN: It seems to have varied from time to time.

3 MS SMITH: From time to time maybe, but we can look at those
4 documents again. Unfortunately I don't have the
5 page reference number just to hand at the moment.

6 But I was asking you -- the position certainly was
7 that boys started off with ten points and that reduced
8 down according to behaviour rather than starting with no
9 points and working up.

10 **A. Well, I think you said that to me. I don't --**

11 Q. You can't remember?

12 **A. -- I don't remember what way it went.**

13 Q. What -- if there was -- what did the point system affect
14 that you recall?

15 **A. Pardon?**

16 Q. What did it affect? I mean, what was the consequence of
17 losing points or ...?

18 **A. Their pocket money or their weekend leave.**

19 Q. You mentioned the point to me that you felt that the
20 pocket money should never have been affected by this
21 point system.

22 **A. No.**

23 Q. And why was that, SPT2? Why did you ...?

24 **A. When I went on the course, I found out that the children**
25 **in children's homes were getting far more pocket money**

PRIVATE

22. **BR 47** was quiet but evil and he would flip at times as he was short tempered. He had brown/auburn coloured hair. **BR 42** would have been baldish with black hair brushed back. **BR 6** was really tall.
23. There was a junior and a senior side for the boys at the home. I think you moved to the senior side when you were about sixteen.
24. You would get up in the morning, make your bed, go for breakfast, go to school, play in the yard, back to school until late afternoon and then you got your dinner. In the morning you cleaned the dormitory and polished it using buffers, one would have polished and the other would have to shine the wooden floors. There was a lot of cleaning and mopping and you took your turn doing the toilets, shower and wash basin.
25. You weren't allowed to speak at the table during meals. You had recreation, a television room and a training room for boxing or football.
26. You used to get three shillings and three pence in earnings. I don't ever remember getting the full amount. I don't think anyone ever did. After a period of time you would have been allowed out to stay for the weekend. A typical wage was two shillings but if one of the brothers was in bad form then they took points off you – it might be a penny, two pence, five pence or whatever. It went down and down and down and sometimes you got nothing and you didn't get out at all. The brothers would make you queue up in the gym before the boys would go out for the weekend and they would be given money then and allowed out or told they were being "stewed" which meant you were grounded and not allowed to go home. This happened to me occasionally but I got home most weekends.
27. My mother would come up and visit and my father would come at times. A lot of the boys got decent parcels but I was getting very basic stuff. It was embarrassing. In my mind I was asking "why are they letting me stay in here and embarrassing me". I have a lot of serious resentment about everything

PRIVATE

36. Arrangements shall be made for the giving of pocket money each week subject to such conditions as may be approved by the Ministry.

37. The Manager may suspend any of the facilities mentioned in Rules 35 and 36 of these Rules if he is satisfied that they interfere with the discipline of the school ; and any such suspension shall be recorded in the Log Book.

Discipline and Punishment

38. The person in charge of the school shall ensure that generally order is maintained by his personal influence and understanding and that of his staff, aided by a system of rewards and privileges which shall be subject to the Ministry's approval, and resort to corporal punishment shall be avoided as far as possible.

39. Where correction is needed for minor acts of misbehaviour one of the following methods shall be adopted :—

- (a) Forfeiture of rewards or privileges (including pocket money).
- (b) Temporary loss of recreation in which case the offender shall be required to perform a useful task.
- (c) Alteration of meals for a period not exceeding three days : provided that any such alteration shall be within the limits of a special dietary scale drawn up by the Board of Management after consultation with the manager and the school medical officer, and approved by the Ministry.
- (d) Separation from other pupils : provided that this punishment shall only be used in exceptional cases and subject to the following conditions :—
 - (i) No boy or girl under the age of twelve shall be kept in separation.
 - (ii) The room used for the purpose shall be light and airy and kept lighted after dark.
 - (iii) Some form of occupation shall be given.
 - (iv) Means of communication with a member of the staff shall be provided.
 - (v) If the separation is to be continued for more than 24 hours, the written consent of a member of the Board of Management shall be obtained and the circumstances shall be reported immediately to the Ministry.

40.—(1) Where corporal punishment is found necessary its application shall be in accordance with the following conditions :—

- (a) It shall be inflicted only on the hands or posterior with a light cane and shall not exceed six strokes in the case of a boy or girl over 10 years of age, and 2 strokes in the case of a boy or girl over 8 and under 10 years of age.

36. Arrangements shall be made for the giving of pocket money each week subject to such conditions as may be approved by the Ministry.

37. The Manager may suspend any of the facilities mentioned in Rules 35 and 36 of these Rules if he is satisfied that they interfere with the discipline of the school ; and any such suspension shall be recorded in the Log Book.

Discipline and Punishment

38. The person in charge of the school shall ensure that generally order is maintained by his personal influence and understanding and that of his staff, aided by a system of rewards and privileges which shall be subject to the Ministry's approval, and resort to corporal punishment shall be avoided as far as possible.

39. Where correction is needed for minor acts of misbehaviour one of the following methods shall be adopted :—

- (a) Forfeiture of rewards or privileges (including pocket money).
- (b) Temporary loss of recreation in which case the offender shall be required to perform a useful task.
- (c) Alteration of meals for a period not exceeding three days : provided that any such alteration shall be within the limits of a special dietary scale drawn up by the Board of Management after consultation with the manager and the school medical officer, and approved by the Ministry.
- (d) Separation from other pupils : provided that this punishment shall only be used in exceptional cases and subject to the following conditions :—
 - (i) No boy or girl under the age of twelve shall be kept in separation.
 - (ii) The room used for the purpose shall be light and airy and kept lighted after dark.
 - (iii) Some form of occupation shall be given.
 - (iv) Means of communication with a member of the staff shall be provided.
 - (v) If the separation is to be continued for more than 24 hours, the written consent of a member of the Board of Management shall be obtained and the circumstances shall be reported immediately to the Ministry.

40.—(1) Where corporal punishment is found necessary its application shall be in accordance with the following conditions :—

- (a) It shall be inflicted only on the hands or posterior with a light cane and shall not exceed six strokes in the case of a boy or girl over 10 years of age, and 2 strokes in the case of a boy or girl over 8 and under 10 years of age.

PRIVATE

13. It was so boring in St Patrick's because there was so little to do. I remember that there was an old pool table but it did not have any felt on it. It was just slate and six pockets. There was also a table tennis table that boys could use. Some of the older boys were given power by the Brothers and were able to leave the grounds and look for people who absconded. If they found a boy who had absconded they were allowed to beat him and they were never reprimanded by the Brothers.
14. I went to school for a few hours every day but it was very poor. There was one English composition to be done in each week and there was a prize for the best one. There were no books, no Maths or English lessons and there was never any homework. I remember **BR 87** just sat at the top of the classroom and read the paper. The teachers did not really teach anything and if I complained about the poor standards I was beaten.
15. There were never any birthday cards or presents in St Patrick's. On your birthday the routine was that the boys sang Happy Birthday to you and then you were beaten up. At Christmas and other holiday times I was allowed home.
16. My parents came to see me whenever they could but they lived in [REDACTED] and it was not easy for them to visit all the time. I did not tell my parents what was going on at St Patrick's but I do remember that I made a complaint to one of the Welfare staff. I think she was called **SPT 48** I remember that within an hour of making the complaint I was beaten and taken to the punishment cell. The cells at St Patrick's were the worst cells that I ever experienced. The cell was inside a cupboard and had no windows, just bricks made of glass and a hard bed. There was only a half mattress on the bed and there was no food. I was kept there for three or four days. It was solitary confinement and it did not matter how loud I shouted because no one came to help me.
17. Approximately six months after I made the complaint I was sent to the Borstal in Millisle. I remember that shortly before I went to Millisle I was visited by two Brothers in Crumlin Road Gaol which was a holding centre for boys going to Borstal. I think that it was **BR 20** and **BR 87** The visit took place

1 abuse. It was a boy called HIA41 had a bit in the
2 Reporter and I write into him and I phoned him up and
3 that's how -- I just kept quiet about it and I told
4 HIA41 about some of the abuses that I suffered at that
5 school and that's why I'm here today. Other than that
6 I wouldn't be here.

7 Q. If I'm right, you had a conversation with HIA41 and he
8 showed you a photograph -- is that right -- that you
9 were able to recognise?

10 A. He showed me not the photograph that you showed me
11 earlier. He showed me a photograph of three people.
12 There was a lanky person, BR5 and another Brother, which
13 I recognised as Mitrain(?). They were the three main
14 abusers when I was in St. Patrick's Training School.

15 Q. Well, you say these Brothers who you name in the Inquiry
16 statement, BR1, BR5, BR26 and another Brother, who we
17 now know was BR 94 put you in a room for a long time
18 because of what you had done to SPT36, the boy SPT36.
19 I will just use the first name from now on.

20 You say that room was on the landing above the
21 dormitories and it was known as the sick bay. You
22 referred to it as your cell, as it had no natural light
23 coming into the room.

24 A. There was a glass up very high up which was frosted
25 glass and light they used to come in from -- it was like

1 involving the boy SPT36 and you --

2 A. I didn't seem to get out of that room. That room --
3 that room was part of my life for two years. The only
4 time I got out was when they put me in the kitchen to --
5 to wash pots and pans and I did -- I suffered there too,
6 you know.

7 Q. Yes. You say when you were about 14 and a year before
8 you left they put you in the kitchen to wash pots and
9 pans. You were in the kitchen for about six months
10 before you got out. You washed the pots for the junior
11 and senior side and the skin started to come off your
12 fingers. The constant washing resulted in you suffering
13 from dermatitis.

14 Now when we were talking earlier, you were saying
15 there were some nuns who put cream on your hands. Isn't
16 that right?

17 A. There were two nuns -- there were two nuns in that
18 school, but they were never seen. They weren't everyday
19 -- you would just never see them, but you were two nuns
20 upstairs, and the only time I ever received treatment
21 was -- was when -- as I found out later, it was
22 dermatitis, but the other times when I was beaten there
23 was nobody -- there was nobody come. They would just
24 leave you for long periods of time, and the long periods
25 of time, the only time I knew what time it was when

1 building, but they were deemed after a short while to be
2 totally unsuitable and they were never used. I can only
3 remember them being used once in my time there. At
4 a later stage we constructed two properly designed cells
5 on the first floor.

6 Q. Just to be clear, the original ones were down behind the
7 kitchen. Is that correct?

8 A. They were off the kitchen, yes.

9 Q. Why were they deemed to be unsuitable?

10 A. They were too far away. They were -- you know, they
11 weren't properly -- there was no means of communication
12 for the boys to staff, and they were down near the
13 boiler house, which was -- quite a lot of fumes and that
14 were there, you know.

15 Q. So there were two then purpose-built --

16 A. Two purpose-built ones, yes.

17 Q. -- cells on the first floor of the senior school I think
18 you said?

19 A. First floor of the senior school.

20 Q. When would they have been used? For what purpose?

21 A. If we had a case where maybe a boy had absconded and he
22 was picked up, maybe due in court the next day, he would
23 have been held in the cell overnight to make sure he was
24 available for the court, and maybe for serious breach of
25 discipline, like serious fighting or something like

1 Q. And I was asking did you yourself -- were you given
2 authority to use the strap?

3 A. When I became a senior, I was in -- I would have been --
4 at the weekends I might have been in charge of the
5 junior school, you know. I would have been, and I think
6 I've used it maybe once, at the most twice --

7 Q. And I was asking --

8 A. -- and it would have been recorded in the book too.

9 Q. I was asking if you could remember what the
10 circumstances were --

11 A. I can't.

12 Q. -- that led you to have to use it.

13 A. I can't. I can't.

14 Q. The other thing that we learned about was the -- or have
15 heard complained about, I should say, is the use of
16 isolation cells within St. Patrick's. What's your
17 recollection of those?

18 A. There was an isolation cell or time out cell in the
19 school. It was for both senior and junior and it only
20 lasted I think a matter of a month or two after
21 I started, so it would have, and it was very, very
22 rarely used. I can't remember ever using it.

23 Q. You made the point to me that this cell was up four
24 flights of stairs, along a corridor.

25 A. Aye. That's one of the major reasons, like. It was --

1 the geography of the building, getting to it, and when
2 you are trying to bring a boy up four or five flights of
3 stairs and he didn't want to go, like, you would have to
4 have two people doing it. You are taking them away from
5 the rest of the boys, and if he was put in there, he had
6 to be -- it has to be supervised and he'd need to be
7 watched and recorded for his behaviour and his reaction.
8 So you were removing a member of staff away from the --
9 so it was -- I think staff were reluctant to use it even
10 when it was there.

11 Q. I was asking how long a boy might have been placed into
12 the isolation cell, because we have heard some people
13 say they might have been there for two or three days.

14 A. Not in my time, no. I can't remember any boy being
15 there overnight.

16 Q. And you thought it was more a matter of hours?

17 A. More a matter of a few hours or until the boy settled
18 down, became less disruptive.

19 Q. Certainly -- so when you started, the isolation cells
20 were in operation, but really weren't worth the trouble
21 really is the position you think?

22 A. The manager officially stopped using them not long after
23 I started.

24 Q. And the strap, while it was in use when you started, it
25 also came to an end. The use of corporal punishment

1 Q. And it wasn't the case -- or maybe you don't remember --
2 but was it the case that the Brothers had their own
3 strap?

4 **A. Never.**

5 Q. Now I was asking -- another thing we have heard about is
6 the use of isolation cells. You have described the time
7 out cell in Slemish, and I presume if somebody did
8 misbehave in Slemish, they went into that time out cell
9 then or time out room.

10 **A. (Nods.)**

11 Q. What about other isolation cells in the home? Can you
12 remember anything about those?

13 **A. Yes. There was one on the very top floor over on the**
14 **senior side of the school.**

15 Q. And would junior boys maybe have been brought to there?

16 **A. It was used to put junior boys in, yes, but, as I say,**
17 **in my time I'd say if it was used half a dozen times,**
18 **that would be about the height.**

19 Q. How long was a boy put into the isolation cell?

20 **A. Well, he was -- you had to -- it was kind of a useless**
21 **sort of exercise, because if you put a boy into the**
22 **isolation room, you had to put a member of staff there.**
23 **So you were -- we were down on staff already. So it**
24 **wasn't a very good idea.**

25 Q. Some boys have said they were there for maybe two or

1 up, and that was a big -- in front of all the boys in
2 the school that was getting money they wanted to see
3 this hand come up, but I never ever held up this hand,
4 because my hand was -- I just couldn't hold out that
5 hand, you know.

6 Q. And you said in paragraph 7 there you weren't --

7 "When holiday time came, they let all the city and
8 country boys out home. I was from Newry and considered
9 a country boy, but I was never let out",

10 because there always seemed -- you always seemed to
11 be in the bad books with the Brothers and you were
12 treated like the black sheep.

13 You go on to talk about the -- can I just pause
14 there to say you talked and you were saying to us about
15 being in this cell.

16 De La Salle have said to the Inquiry that the
17 punishment cell would only have been used to put boys in
18 there for one night and that records would have been
19 kept of it being used and what records they still have
20 don't show you as being put into the cell. I know that
21 you just don't accept those records. Isn't that
22 correct, HIA58?

23 A. I was there for very long periods of time and one night
24 would have been a dream, but I know that between
25 absconding and doing different things -- I absconded

1 **twice, ran away, as I would call it. I was there for**
2 **very long times, because I got bollock beaten.**

3 Q. I am going to come on --

4 **A. There was never a doctor called to my side once. When**
5 **I was sick many -- on many occasions I never seen any.**
6 **The cell was the place they put you in for long time,**
7 **see. So I just feel that there about ...**

8 Q. The other thing that the Order have said is there must
9 have been a reason for you being put in a cell. You put
10 that reason down as to this -- going right back to this
11 incident on the first day you were there involving this
12 boy SPT36, and they never cared for your after that.
13 Isn't that right?

14 **A. Every Sunday my marks were 0, 0 and that set you up --**
15 **that set you up for the --**

16 Q. Punishment?

17 **A. -- for the week. 0, 0 set you up for punishment and**
18 **I always had 0, 0.**

19 Q. One other thing you mentioned to me was when you were in
20 the home, you received two letters during that time from
21 your mother, and you say in those letters she enclosed
22 10 shillings, but that you never ever received that
23 money. Is that right, HIA58?

24 **A. I couldn't -- my mother sent -- I got two letters in the**
25 **time I was there and my mother did tell me she had**

1 Q. But you yourself don't remember all the incidents --

2 A. No.

3 Q. -- that I was describing to you?

4 A. No.

5 Q. So you were particularly amazed at the reference in
6 a diary to putting pins in your shoes --

7 A. That's right.

8 Q. -- and using those pins to prick other boys in what was
9 described as a cruel torture. You don't remember that
10 at all?

11 A. No.

12 Q. And that, Members of the Panel, is May '73. That can be
13 found at 46129.

14 Through the following months I was pointing out to
15 you one record, confessing that it made me smile, which
16 perhaps it shouldn't, but if we look at 46133, this was
17 in May 1973, HIA94, where there had been an altercation
18 between you and a particular boy. If we scroll down to
19 the bottom, please, where he regarded himself as
20 bullied, and it caused him to attempt to abscond, and he
21 asked to go to the cell for his own protection. You
22 yourself don't remember that --

23 A. No.

24 Q. -- incident occurring. There is a reference in June '73
25 to the tool shed of . You don't remember

1 's tool shed and it being wrecked?

2 **A. No.**

3 Q. Or there are various incidents where the night logs are
4 recording trouble and abusive language and causing
5 difficulty. You don't have a recollection yourself
6 about those particular types of --

7 **A. No.**

8 Q. -- events. I was asking you about Glenariff --

9 **A. Yes.**

10 Q. -- because you and a colleague, , got expelled
11 from the camp, and I was asking could you remember what
12 you had done. You can remember Glenariff.

13 **A. I remember that, because we went to it every year.**

14 Q. Yes, but you don't remember --

15 **A. No.**

16 Q. -- what actually occurred?

17 **A. No.**

18 Q. That was in July '73, and it seems whatever you did, you
19 and , if we look at 46141, you and he were
20 punished in that the principal -- the then principal,
21 BR52, BR52, stood over the two of you and supervised you
22 and cleaning in the yard for two hours, and
23 then we can see further down the entry you were put in
24 the cell then the next day. It is recorded:

25 "Refused point blank to work with ."

1 cell, nor would it be part of my duty to supervise boys
2 who were placed within that unit. I would have been
3 notified if a boy had been placed in the unit so I might
4 include that within my next assessment",

5 because he was explaining earlier in his statement
6 that part of his duties was preparing reports for court,
7 and he has no knowledge of any child ever being beaten
8 by staff in the manner that's described.

9 SPT2 said, as you know, when I was speaking to you
10 about it, effectively the same thing. If we look at
11 2207, please, and paragraph 2 of his statement, he says,
12 if we scroll down, please, the allegations that you
13 make, HIA94, he says didn't happen:

14 "I didn't beat any boy at St. Patrick's. In
15 relation to the involvement of SPT1 I didn't work the
16 same shift as him at any point after I became
17 a full-time member of staff in 1970."

18 Obviously this incident we are talking about is
19 1973:

20 "We couldn't therefore have been together as is
21 alleged."

22 If we scroll down, I think he moves on to
23 a different -- yes, he moves on to a different
24 allegation.

25 So the third person that you referred as being aware

1 of this was a man called SPT3.

2 **A. That's right.**

3 Q. If we look at his -- he has written a letter so far to
4 the Inquiry at 2219. He has said to the Inquiry or
5 a solicitor has written on his behalf saying that:

6 "He has no recollection whatsoever of the
7 allegations made that he witnessed two individuals
8 assaulting HIA94 or that he failed to intervene."

9 He said:

10 "It is his strongly held view that, although this
11 allegation relates to an incident some forty or more
12 years ago, it's unlikely to have happened, as he would
13 have remembered it occurring."

14 So he doesn't accept that that is what took place,
15 but that's the main memory you have about St. Patrick's
16 --

17 **A. I do.**

18 Q. -- HIA94, about these two guys and beating you when you
19 were in the cell?

20 **A. Oh, they did. Okay?**

21 Q. Is there anything else you want to touch on about
22 St. Patrick's or have I covered the main issues?

23 **A. It seems all right.**

24 Q. In respect of Lisnevin the -- I should perhaps just have
25 acknowledged, and Miss Donnelly reminds me, that in

1 the geography of the building, getting to it, and when
2 you are trying to bring a boy up four or five flights of
3 stairs and he didn't want to go, like, you would have to
4 have two people doing it. You are taking them away from
5 the rest of the boys, and if he was put in there, he had
6 to be -- it has to be supervised and he'd need to be
7 watched and recorded for his behaviour and his reaction.
8 So you were removing a member of staff away from the --
9 so it was -- I think staff were reluctant to use it even
10 when it was there.

11 Q. I was asking how long a boy might have been placed into
12 the isolation cell, because we have heard some people
13 say they might have been there for two or three days.

14 A. Not in my time, no. I can't remember any boy being
15 there overnight.

16 Q. And you thought it was more a matter of hours?

17 A. More a matter of a few hours or until the boy settled
18 down, became less disruptive.

19 Q. Certainly -- so when you started, the isolation cells
20 were in operation, but really weren't worth the trouble
21 really is the position you think?

22 A. The manager officially stopped using them not long after
23 I started.

24 Q. And the strap, while it was in use when you started, it
25 also came to an end. The use of corporal punishment

1 stopped at some point too.

2 **A. It did. It did. I can't remember now. It was years**
3 **rather than months, like, when it stopped, yes.**

4 Q. When you were speaking to me, you thought that certainly
5 -- you thought it might have gone right through to the
6 late '70s that it was being used?

7 **A. Easy, yes. I think so.**

8 Q. The other matter that we have heard complained about is
9 the sexual abuse of boys by Brothers in the home, and
10 I wondered whether you ever had any evidence of that or
11 any suspicions that anything like that might have been
12 happening in St. Patrick's.

13 **A. Absolutely no evidence. None at all. It's not**
14 **something that would have been tolerated.**

15 Q. And there was never any talk that you heard either among
16 boys or among staff about such a thing?

17 **A. No.**

18 Q. One person who has been convicted about -- for abusing
19 children in St. Patrick's was someone who worked there
20 as a chef, DL137, and his abuse we have learned was
21 known about in 1978. Were you ever aware of anything
22 untoward involving him?

23 **A. I didn't know until he was actually charged. I knew**
24 **nothing about it.**

25 Q. So you didn't -- you were working in the junior school

RECOMMENDATIONS

1. It is recommended that the Western Board should commission a review of its fostering services with a view to achieving an improved level of availability. (Paragraph 3.2)
2. It is recommended that St.Patrick's Training School should prepare an information leaflet for referring agencies outlining the services that they can offer. (Paragraph 3.4)
3. It is recommended that the Western Board should prepare guidance for its staff on the admission of young children to training schools. (Paragraph 3.7)
4. It is recommended that Place of Safety Orders should not be used to transfer children to training schools other than in emergencies when the school is in a position and willing to admit them immediately. (Paragraph 3.9)
5. It is recommended that when children are transferred from Board accommodation to training schools the time prior to admission should be used to provide the school with information about the child's history and behaviour and to make firm plans about how the placement will be used to achieve identified objectives. (Paragraph 4.5)
6. If it is found that boys are absconding from Aisling House through doors that are difficult for staff to supervise consideration should be given to fitting them with alarms. (Paragraph 5.2)
7. It is recommended that consideration should be given to providing a more structured approach to the assessment process. (Paragraph 5.12)
8. The use of secure accommodation as a response to misbehaviour should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.16)
9. It is recommended that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools on the use of secure accommodation and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff. (Paragraph 5.19)
10. It is recommended that care should be taken to consider the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour by their placement in group containing persistent absconders. (Paragraph 5.23)
11. It is recommended that the conclusions and recommendations made in the study of absconding in another training school should be made available to St.Patrick's and that a similar exercise should be conducted there. Paragraph 5.27)

1 **A. -- the head office. The head office.**

2 Q. The head office?

3 **A. Yes.**

4 Q. I asked had you ever yourself been sent to the
5 headmaster to be strapped and you recall --

6 **A. Once.**

7 Q. -- that there was one occasion --

8 **A. Yes.**

9 Q. -- where you were messing about --

10 **A. Yes.**

11 Q. -- and you were sent --

12 **A. Yes.**

13 Q. -- and I asked how that was administered.

14

15 **A. Yes, yes.**

16 Q. What exactly did he do?

17 **A. He strapped me on the hand a few times, so he did.**

18 Q. And can you -- I think you thought it might have been
19 three times that you were --

20 **A. Aye. Two or three times he strapped me.**

21 Q. And it was one on each hand --

22 **A. Yes.**

23 Q. -- and maybe an extra one?

24 **A. Yes, yes.**

25 Q. And you say that there was also bullying from older

An excellent after care system has been organised by [REDACTED] the After Care Officer. Details of past pupils, at present serving their apprenticeship and who are placed in employment, are given as an appendix to this report. Brother Stephen is making fresh efforts to have the school trade training recognized for apprenticeship purposes. He again referred to the scheme for immigration to Australia, mentioned in our last report, saying that it was excellently organised, and that he had heard from two boys now in Australia, both of whom were doing well and earning good wages.

Since the last inspection, the hobbies room has been developed considerably. Several pupils were working there at the time of our visit, and were being supervised by one of the staff, an obvious enthusiast at this type of work. Several additional items of equipment have been obtained including an electrically driven lathe.

Recreation Facilities:

These are as described last year and there is little change. The provision of a new school on another site should enable better playing fields to be provided. The school band was rehearsing at the time of our visit and we were informed that the band had recently taken part in a broadcast performance.

Statutory Books:

The Statutory Books were inspected and were found to be written up-to-date, with the exception of the Medical Register, which, Brother Stephen informed us, Dr. Harrington considers to be unnecessary, in view of the detailed records maintained in the card index system. While the Register is undoubtedly convenient from the point of view of inspectors, it seems to us that provided detailed medical records are kept in the card index system, the maintenance of duplicate records in the Medical Register is not essential.

In general, this remains an excellent institution with a cheerful homely atmosphere. The training received is obviously of the highest order, and all the boys looked healthy and were happily engaged in some form of activity.

/IE.

Norman V. Simpson 21-12-50
Kathleen A. Fawcett 22-12-50

1 was used in the school.

2 **A. Yes.**

3 Q. And your recollection is you thought it was a Sunday
4 morning that punishments were handed out. Is that
5 right?

6 **A. Yes. There was one occasion when I was invited to go**
7 **down with the principal and corporal punishment was**
8 **administered on that occasion, yes.**

9 Q. Can you remember why it was being administered or what
10 the circumstances were?

11 **A. I can't remember offhand, no.**

12 Q. And I think you said to me it was six strokes --

13 **A. That's correct, yes.**

14 Q. -- that the boy was given on the hand.

15 **A. No. On the buttocks.**

16 Q. And that was in -- where did that take place?

17 **A. That took place down in the principal's office**
18 **I believe.**

19 Q. And you described to me that you found the experience
20 very distressing?

21 **A. I did, yes.**

22 Q. You only -- you said that you only ever saw the strap
23 used on one other occasion.

24 **A. That's correct, yes.**

25 Q. That was in the dining room.

1 administer the strap, and if you did, you were to write
2 it down.

3 **A. That's right.**

4 Q. And the strap was used for a period of time, but the
5 corporal punishment stopped?

6 **A. When I -- it was used very little, because by the time
7 I had started they were phasing out the strap
8 even in ordinary schools.**

9 Q. And you certainly think that by about 1973/'74 it wasn't
10 used after that?

11 **A. I don't think it was ever used after that.**

12 Q. You yourself -- you said to me that you did use it on
13 a couple of occasions?

14 **A. On a coup... -- on two occasions I think. On other
15 occasions when boys were sent to me by teachers I closed
16 the door and hit the desk and warned the boys not to say
17 anything about it.**

18 Q. And you say that you then got the reputation of being
19 lenient when -- someone to be sent to.

20 **A. Well, the boys must have told the story that they didn't
21 get strapped. "He only hit the table."**

22 Q. You described a punishment book --

23 **A. Yes.**

24 Q. -- where the use of the strap --

25 **A. If you used the strap at all, you had to put it into**

1 Q. And I was asking did you yourself -- were you given
2 authority to use the strap?

3 A. When I became a senior, I was in -- I would have been --
4 at the weekends I might have been in charge of the
5 junior school, you know. I would have been, and I think
6 I've used it maybe once, at the most twice --

7 Q. And I was asking --

8 A. -- and it would have been recorded in the book too.

9 Q. I was asking if you could remember what the
10 circumstances were --

11 A. I can't.

12 Q. -- that led you to have to use it.

13 A. I can't. I can't.

14 Q. The other thing that we learned about was the -- or have
15 heard complained about, I should say, is the use of
16 isolation cells within St. Patrick's. What's your
17 recollection of those?

18 A. There was an isolation cell or time out cell in the
19 school. It was for both senior and junior and it only
20 lasted I think a matter of a month or two after
21 I started, so it would have, and it was very, very
22 rarely used. I can't remember ever using it.

23 Q. You made the point to me that this cell was up four
24 flights of stairs, along a corridor.

25 A. Aye. That's one of the major reasons, like. It was --

111. [SPT 30] complained in 1946 that he had been struck by Br [BR 70] [BR 70]. It appears that on receipt of a solicitor's letter Br Stephen Kelly suspended Br [BR 70]. Br [BR 70] accepted the allegation. A medical report survives detailing the injury sustained by [SPT 30]. The home office, aware of the admission and medical evidence, recommended Br [BR 70]'s reinstatement. Br Stephen had Br [BR 70] transferred in any event.
112. Thereafter the Order's position is that it did not receive any complaints of physical abuse until after the RUC commenced their investigations in 1993.
113. The Order is very conscious from the evidence in the Rubane Module that there is a risk of confusing acceptable corporal punishment and actual 'physical abuse'.
114. Surviving Brothers are adamant that the primary driver for the enforcement of good discipline was the rewards and privileges scheme. The fact that St Patrick's operated such a scheme is detailed in contemporaneous records. Rule 39 of the Training School Rules 1952 facilitated the 'forfeiture or rewards or privileges' as a method of correction.
115. It is however accepted that formal corporal punishment was also administered. The Punishment Books, at least up until 1974, have survived in DoJ custody and they detail the identity of the recipient, the offences and the extent of the punishment administered. Surviving Brothers recall that serious offences were always dealt with by the manager/principal. Those same Brothers do however accept that less serious offences may have been dealt with by teachers and in such cases a strap may have been used without a record being maintained within the punishment book. It appears that in addition to a strap being retained in the principal's office, there was also one in the tuck shop.
116. It is denied that St Patrick's was an overly physical regime or that the Brothers resorted readily or unreasonably to corporal punishment. Corporal punishment was a facet of daily life in day schools throughout Northern Ireland until the 1980s. While surviving Brothers accept that boys were strapped they do not recognise the accounts of systematic or unprovoked violence by Brothers as alleged by some.
117. The 149 accounts captured by the RUC in 1993 may assist in determining the extent of corporal punishment. The account of [REDACTED] at SPT 20595 may be of assistance. The RUC record him recounting that he 'got the strap for wrongdoing' but that 'no one in the school got strapped unless they deserved it and that no member of staff ever went overboard' and that 'they [the staff] were always good to everyone'.
118. SPT 10007 is a document entitled Rules for the Management and Discipline of [St Patricks] and is dated 1948. It details at 27 (a) that corporal punishment will be 'inflicted' only with a 'cane or tawse of a type approved by the Minsitry'. That document also set out that depending on age up to 12 strokes could be permitted. The 1952 Rules at Rule 40 differ from SPT 10007 in that the punishment should be inflicted with a 'light cane' only and the maximum punishment was 6 strokes. The wording of SPT 10007 and the similarity with the overall wording of the 1952 Rules suggests that SPT 10007 was adopted from earlier statutory rules, perhaps from the 1933 Act.

119. The extracts from the punishment book, disclosed by the DoJ, do not, as far as I am aware, reveal a numeracy of strokes in excess of the 1952 Rules and on many occasions less than 6 strokes were applied.
120. Surviving Brothers do not recall a 'cane'. Their memory, and they have been pressed on this point, is that a strap was used. That accounts with [REDACTED]'s account at SPT 20595 and the entry diary entry referenced at SPT 20591 that [REDACTED] SPT 134 [REDACTED] was given '4 strokes of the strap' when he threw the fork at Mr SPT 66. Both these boys were in the school in the early 1980s. Certainly, from what I can ascertain punishment was administered with a strap contrary to the requirements of the 1952 Rules. I note at SPT-12382 to SPT-12391 and SPT-12428 to SPT-12455 that the Ministry drew attention to the continued use of the strap as opposed to a light cane. A light cane may well have been purchased in response to this request and some applicants do make reference to a cane but surviving Brothers are definite that the 'strap' remained in use (albeit with diminishing regularity) until into the 1980s. It is therefore accepted that Brothers within the school continued to use a strap long after the implementation, and in contravention, of the 1952 Rules. The Order does not however consider that the regime was overly physical or that children were punished violently or indiscriminately. The on-going contravention was, as far as the Order is concerned, a breach of the actual rule as opposed to the spirit of the Rules.
121. Notwithstanding the preceding paragraphs, the use of corporal punishment, did subside in the 1980s. It is of note at SPT 10415 that it is recorded that *'corporal punishment has not been carried out for many years'*.
122. A number of applicants have referred to being isolated as a form of punishment. The 1952 Rules, 39 (d), permitted 'separation' of pupils in 'exceptional circumstances'. St Patrick's did, when necessary operate a 'separation' policy with the use of detention rooms. At one stage two rooms were specifically converted for this purpose and the provision of this facility would have been well known to both the Ministry and the NIO. That said the detention/isolation rooms were used infrequently. It is interesting to note that the RUC in 1993 looked at this aspect. They recorded at SPT 20595/96 that [REDACTED] *'had no knowledge of cells being used during his detention at the school which lasted 4 years'*. At SPT 20588 the RUC recorded 'some of the people interviewed did confirm the existence of cells in the school which were situated in the vicinity of the boiler rooms but none of them had any knowledge of any inmate having been detained in them'. It is submitted that a detention in the 'cell' would have been something discussed among the boys and it is of note that none of the 149 boys interviewed could recall them having been used.
123. Surviving Brothers recount that the isolation rooms were only used in exceptional circumstances, such as aggressive behaviour towards staff or other people, to facilitate a cooling off period for those likely to be a risk to themselves or others and for persistent absconding. It is conceded that at times they were also used when it was feared a boy may abscond prior to a court appearance.
124. The accommodation of boys within the isolation units was recorded by way of log book. It does not appear that any such log book has survived and as far as can be ascertained no such book has been disclosed by the DoJ or located in PRONI.

1 well. It was a very violent regime and there was
2 punishment even if you had not done anything wrong."

3 Now you know from when we were speaking that the
4 De La Salle Order have given the Inquiry a response
5 statement. They said, first of all, that the strap --
6 I wonder could you describe the strap?

7 **A. It would have been -- well, some of them were anything**
8 **from this to that (gesturing). Some of them were fairly**
9 **rigid. It was like sewn leather together, and some of**
10 **them were more flexible, the longer ones, and they would**
11 **whip them out like a sword out of their -- their dress,**
12 **whatever they wore, and it was not a wee slap. It was**
13 **very, very sore, very sore.**

14 **Q. Well, the Order have said that the strap would have been**
15 **kept in the tuck shop and a Brother would have had to go**
16 **and get it if he wanted to use the strap.**

17 **A. That's absolute rubbish. Even when I was at school --**
18 **before I went to St. Patrick's I was taught by Christian**
19 **Brothers, and they used the strap too, and they always**
20 **had it in their pocket, and I wouldn't think that with**
21 **hundreds of boys there, and a lot of them misbehaved and**
22 **all, that they would say, "Stand there and wait till**
23 **I go and get the strap to chastise you". No, no, no.**
24 **That's wrong. I am not saying every Brother carried it,**
25 **but quite a lot of them did.**

1 **A. It was used at that time, yes. It was -- I suppose it**
2 **was used in all schools around that time, you know.**

3 Q. Maybe if we just go to what you say in paragraph 3 of
4 your second statement, please, at 2175. You say at
5 paragraph 3 here:

6 "The discipline at the school was maintained with
7 a system of rewards and privileges. There was a marks
8 system, and at the end of the week, depending on what
9 marks they got, the boys would be told what pocket money
10 they were to receive. Use of the swimming pool and
11 various other activities were also used as part of the
12 reward system. For more serious misbehaviour corporal
13 punishment was administered, particularly in the early
14 years when it was permitted. A strap was used for this
15 purpose and it entailed usually two or three straps --
16 slaps with the open hand. I didn't hit the boys
17 anywhere else. If it was more serious, the boys would
18 be referred to the principal of the school, the manager,
19 to decide what punishment they should get."

20 **A. Yes.**

21 Q. So you yourself were authorised to use the strap on the
22 boys?

23 **A. Yes, for minor -- for minor breaches of discipline.**

24 Q. I was asking you to describe what a minor breach of
25 discipline amounted to. What kind of things were -- was

1 the strap used for?

2 **A. It might be -- it might be use of bad language. It**
3 **might be a bit of a squabble between two boys. Maybe**
4 **an argument over a game of snooker or anything like**
5 **that, or maybe a little bit of cheek to a member of**
6 **staff or something like that, you know.**

7 **Q. You were saying that -- I was asking did you carry your**
8 **own strap or what was the position with regard to the**
9 **strap?**

10 **A. It was normally kept in a wee tuck shop that we had, and**
11 **occasionally if you might have used it maybe before you**
12 **went into the dining room or something, rather than go**
13 **back to the tuck shop to lock it up again, you may have**
14 **put it in your pocket for a while, but I didn't carry it**
15 **as a kind of constant thing.**

16 **Q. I just wonder. We didn't -- I didn't ask you this**
17 **before, but if you had taken the strap and used it and**
18 **had it in your pocket, because you hadn't returned it,**
19 **how would another Brother know that or how would he get**
20 **hold of a strap if he needed one?**

21 **A. Well, rarely would there be two of us on duty at the**
22 **same time.**

23 **Q. Yes, but I'm just wondering if you had the strap, if you**
24 **had taken it out of the tuck shop, it wouldn't have been**
25 **available to another Brother to use if he needed it.**

1 2015, and, Members of the Panel, that can be found at
2 40526 to 40543 and the particular matter relating to
3 BR50 was dealt with at 40532, bottom of the page, and on
4 to 40533.

5 You have said about this, BR50 -- if we just look at
6 your statement at 2201, you say just in the last two
7 sentences:

8 "It is true that I would have carried a small number
9 of keys in my day-to-day duties, but I deny striking him
10 or indeed any young person over the head as he alleged."

11 **A. Yes. That would be correct.**

12 Q. The point you were making to me, so you can explain it
13 to the Panel, that you never hit any child during your
14 time in St. Patrick's.

15 **A. That is right. I never hit anybody with keys or with my**
16 **hand or anything.**

17 Q. And I was then asking you could you remember an occasion
18 whenever you did see a boy being hit and you explained
19 to me that you have one memory of what was corporal
20 punishment being administered.

21 **A. Yes, that's right.**

22 Q. And that was administered by the headmaster of the
23 junior school --

24 **A. Yes.**

25 Q. -- which was -- you gave me his name -- SPT151

1 --

2 **A. Yes.**

3 Q. -- who I think has since passed away, if I'm getting the
4 right connection, and can you just explain to the Panel
5 -- you were explaining to me that you were asked along
6 with another person to come in and witness --

7 **A. Yes.**

8 Q. -- the boy being strapped.

9 **A. Yes. He was strapping a young boy and he asked myself**
10 **and another member of staff to witness it.**

11 Q. And that was in the headmaster's office --

12 **A. Yes, in the office.**

13 Q. -- of the junior school. Was that the only time you saw
14 a strap being used on a boy?

15 **A. Yes.**

16 Q. That's the second allegation I am going to deal with,
17 BR50.

18 The third allegation is that of SPT134. That
19 relates to the period he was in St. Patrick's between
20 1981 and 1983. Are you okay, BR50?

21 **A. Yes.**

22 Q. Yes. He was born -- he is complaint number 5 on your
23 witness statement. He was born on
24 and was in St. Patrick's again over three periods. He
25 was there between 14th November 1981 to January 1982,

1 wasn't that there was one in a community of fifty
2 teenagers who were less difficult. This was where
3 a collection of difficult teenagers were placed or older
4 teenagers and you were dealing with them. Can you
5 explain to the Panel the approach that you took to
6 dealing with them?

7 **A. Looking at discipline in general terms, I would really**
8 **say that in St. Pat's the approach to it would have been**
9 **more of a kindly discipline, often approached with**
10 **a twinkle in the eye, but firm, yes, firm nevertheless,**
11 **and it brought to a very, very minimum, the extreme**
12 **minimum -- in fact, it virtually cut out corporal**
13 **punishment. Corporal punishment was not going to be the**
14 **answer to stopping fellas of 16, 17, 18 and some of them**
15 **coming up to 19 years of age. Goodness me! There was**
16 **enough of violence in their lives already. There had to**
17 **be a different approach.**

18 **Q.** Your personal view was it wasn't an effective way of
19 managing these boys. That was your personal view, but
20 your manner of dealing with them then -- you talked
21 about the twinkle in the eye -- was the quieter word as
22 opposed to having physical confrontations with them.

23 **A. Absolutely.**

24 **Q.** Why did you feel that physical confrontations with a 16,
25 17, 18, 19-year-old were not going to be effective to

1 Q. One other matter that we have heard about is the use of
2 the strap in the home, and you joined in 1975 and you
3 have said that corporal punishment was coming to an end
4 --

5 A. Yes.

6 Q. -- at that stage. You never saw the strap used,
7 although you think that it still was being used at that
8 time?

9 A. Yes. Uh-huh.

10 Q. You thought the points system that we have seen evidence
11 of came into effect about 1977?

12 A. Yes. Uh-huh.

13 Q. You said that didn't really work terribly well?

14 A. It didn't actually, because most of the children in
15 St. Patrick's at that particular time were sent there
16 for, say, the lack of care, truancy, some for criminal
17 offence, but again most family-based -- again most of
18 them were having problems in their own individual
19 families, and again you weren't -- you weren't
20 discouraging the children by any chance, and again you
21 wanted to make contact with their natural families
22 instead of a false environment. So we tried to -- tried
23 to make contact the best we possibly could. Always keep
24 the parents well involved of everything what was
25 happening, good or bad.

COMPLAINT 1 – **HIA 100** – HIA REFERENCE 100

5. HIA 100 made a statement to the police on 25 September 2013 and he subsequently made a statement to this Inquiry on 3 February 2015. In his HIA statement he has claimed he was at St. Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast for two years, between 1964 and 1966 and I would have been a Housemaster [REDACTED] throughout that period. In his police statement he alleges that after a short period of time of arriving in St. Patrick's he was subject to threats, then violence and then sexual abuse. His specific allegation against me is described as follows:- **BR 94** would touch me up a lot, pulling me hard into him against his penis but I remember his violent behaviour more than the touching up". However in his HIA statement which he made approximately seventeen months later he stated, "**BR 94** never subjected me to sexual abuse but he was really violent". This is a clear contradiction. When the police put this allegation to me during my interview I denied sexually abusing him in this or any other way and I am certain this did not happen.
6. HIA 100 also alleged I was violent and would hit him a lot. He has not specifically stated how I was violent towards him but he said in his HIA statement in relation to a number of Brothers, including myself that they would hit you with their hands, the odd punch in the ribs or hit across the back of the head. I specifically deny each and every one of these allegations. I have already explained that I only used corporal punishment sparingly when it was permitted to do so. I used a strap and gave no more than two or three slaps on an outstretched hand. The system of rewards and privileges described above was more commonly used for less serious misdemeanours.
7. I do not have a clear recollection of **HIA 100**. The name is vaguely familiar to me but he does not stand out. He was one of many hundreds of boys who would have been in the [REDACTED] during the period of time I was a Housemaster.

COMPLAINT 2 – **HIA 282** – HIA REFERENCE 282

8. **HIA 282** made a statement to the Inquiry on 17 February 2015. I do not believe he has made a statement of complaint to the police. I do not recall this person and I note he has stated he was resident in St. Patrick's Training School for a four week period in 1964. He was unable to name me but identifies me as [REDACTED] I am assuming this is a reference to myself since I would have been [REDACTED] Brother at St. Patrick's at that particular time although I know of one other Brother – **BR 103** [REDACTED] While I accept a leather strap was used by the Brothers, including myself, it was used sparingly as far as I was concerned and I deny using the leather strap "basically for nothing". HIA 282 has also referred to one particular incident when he was struck repeatedly on his head and back with a leather strap because of crumbs which had fallen from some food he was eating. While he does not identify the Brother who allegedly beat him, he states it was "the particular Christian Brother who terrified me" and I believe he could therefore be referring to me. I deny this happened. I also have no recollection of the confrontation which he states happened after this when his father and a friend went up to St. Patrick's to complain about the beating. If this had occurred then I believe I would have heard about it. The impression that I or the other Brothers were violent in this sporadic unreasonable fashion, is totally at odds with my perception of life in the school at that time.

COMPLAINT 3 – **HIA 58** – HIA REFERENCE 58

9. **HIA 58** made a statement to the Inquiry on 6 February 2015. He has stated he was in St. Patrick's between 1964 and 1968. While he has named other Brothers against whom he

1 about the first night that he was there and thinking the
2 Brothers were okay at first, because they got him
3 something to eat and because he had missed dinner
4 earlier by the time he had arrived.

5 "However, after a few days I started to get smacked
6 on the back of the head or kicks on the backside when
7 the Brothers were walking past me. These were for no
8 reason whatsoever. The Brothers simply hit you
9 and walked on without saying a word. This happened to
10 me and to other boys frequently. I literally became
11 afraid of them and was terrified of one in particular.

12 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

15 He said:

16 "The Brothers carried leather straps and I would
17 have got a thump with the leather strap basically for
18 nothing. The Brothers were really vicious. I cannot
19 remember any of their names, as it was so long ago."

20 Now the Order in their response have indicated that
21 they accept that corporal punishment was administered
22 and they accept that boys did receive a clip around the
23 ear at times for bad behaviour or for cheek, but they
24 deny that boys were struck or kicked at random as
25 described, and they say the Brothers didn't routinely

PRIVATE

4. My parents visited me every Wednesday night and I was allowed to visit them on a Sunday. However if I misbehaved during the week the Brothers would not allow me to leave the site. I also received pocket money of half a crown every Sunday. I also remember that I was allowed home for four days or so at Christmas and Easter. I do not remember anyone from Welfare or Social Services ever inspecting St Patrick's in the time that I was there. I was just thrown into that environment and left on my own. I did not have anyone there to check on how I was. The only thing I learned in St Patrick's was more criminality. It was a bit like Oliver Twist.
5. The regime at St Patrick's was brutal because a number of the Brothers were very violent. I was terrified of them. On many occasions, I received a beating with a leather strap and was punched and kicked. It went far beyond any chastisement for misbehaving. BR 4 slapped me frequently and he used a strap most of the time. I remember one occasion that I was standing in the corridor and he was carrying a bunch of keys in his hand. For no reason at all, he hit me on the side of the head with the keys. I could not hear properly for about a week but I did not receive any medical attention. I was too afraid to ask for help. BR 42 was violent towards me and the other boys as well. It was a very violent regime and there was punishment even if you had not done anything wrong.
6. Once my mother asked the Brothers if I could return late from home one Sunday evening because my brother was playing in a concert in a local church hall. It was agreed that I could return after the concert which I did. BR 91 removed my mattress and my bedding and I was forced to sleep on the springs. I was told that that it was because I has abused my home leave privilege even though my mother had agreed it in advance. This was the type of punishment for no reason which some Brothers really enjoyed.
7. There was also sexual abuse at St Patrick's and I was abused by a number of the Brothers during my time there. The main Brother who abused me was BR 1 He was a sharp featured man who mostly worked in the office during the day. Eventually he left to be in charge of Rubane House in Kircubbin.

PRIVATE

4. I grew up in a bad area and some of the people I knew weren't as bad as those in the institution I was in. They were violent and sick and I look back on it now and I know that they shaped my whole future and my behaviour.
5. At seventeen years of age when I took a drink I started to think about it and my volcano erupted. I picked fights on occasion with gay people in Belfast and I hurt them because I couldn't get the people that hurt me. I am bitterly ashamed of that and deeply regret my behaviour. I would not behave like that today and no longer have a problem with the gay community.

St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast (1964 -1966)

6. When I was put in care I was very naive, very shy and now I know how frightened and petrified I was. Some of the brothers had their own gang of handpicked people in charge of dormitories. I recall BR 94 and Brother BR 42 were there during the period of my stay. I also recall one other Brother called BR 47. I do not recall the names of any of the boys in their various groups.
7. You would just ignore the violence. Some of the boys in charge would punch and slap you depending on their mood. The dormitory had a window with a venetian blind and the brothers could look in to the dormitory and they could see you. If you spoke to someone next to you while you were in bed you could get caught. If you did it again you were punished. There was a religious statue of St Patrick in the middle of the dorm and you had to kneel down and pray before it with your back bolt upright. You were not allowed to slouch or to sit back on your hunkers. If you slouched as I did, you were sent out onto the landing by the older boys which was tiled. They would leave you kneeling there all night.
8. There were two civilian housemasters employed at the home who were brothers, SPT 1 and SPT 37. SPT 1 took sports. One Saturday we had returned from the cinema to the home and we weren't allowed to speak at the tables at mealtimes. He took eight of us away from

PRIVATE

PRIVATE

away or it was just because I was homesick. I don't honestly remember the reason why I ran away. I always went back to my parent's home and I did tell them that I was not happy. At the beginning they sent me back by as time went by my mother sometimes hid me if the Brothers called to bring me back. When I returned to the home I had to wear shorts for six weeks as this made it easier to identify me if I tried to abscond again.

8. I realised that what he was doing to me was wrong because I was getting older and I tried to stop him sometimes. I tried to stand up but he kept holding me tight and continued what he was doing. He threatened me that he would put me in another home for older boys and that I could be raped and that there were men who were worse than him and could do worse than him. I can remember one specific threat about that but cannot recall if it happened more than once. I believe that the abuse may have stopped after the threat but I cannot be totally sure.
9. I would say that St Pat's was alright in general but at night time if any of the boys spoke they used to have you out kneeling on the floors for two hours. Sometimes it was the Brothers who punished us but there was also a housemaster called **SPT 40** who was involved. He was from [REDACTED] and had black hair and swarthy skin. He was evil and wicked. In other cases if anyone misbehaved they waited until about three or four in the morning and they brought everyone down and put us through the cold showers. I don't know what pleasure they got out of it but that's what they were doing. It did not happen every week but it could have happened maybe three or four times in six months. I just accepted that punishment was normal.
10. It was a regular occurrence to get slapped by **BR 5**. This happened to me and other boys such as **DL 356**, **SPT 41** and **SPT 42**. **SPT 42** took his own life a few years ago. **BR 5** was the main person who strapped me and it seemed that he got pleasure from it. He brought me into the Head Office most of the time and he punished me with a strap. It was about eighteen inches long, made of leather and there was a split in it. It used to nip and left a mark on my legs or my bum which is where he hit me. He used to

- (b) It shall not be administered by any person other than the person in charge of the school or in his absence his duly authorised deputy.
- (c) A second member of staff shall invariably be present to witness the proceedings.
- (d) No caning shall be administered in the presence of another boy or girl.
- (e) Any boy or girl known to have a physical or mental disability shall not be subjected to corporal punishment without the sanction of the medical officer.

(2) The mental state of boys or girls who render themselves liable to repeated corporal punishment shall be carefully investigated by the medical officer.

41. Notwithstanding the provisions of the preceding Rules 39 and 40 (b), (c) and (d), for minor offences committed in the school-room by boys or girls, the principal teacher may be authorised by the Board of Management to administer with the cane not more than two strokes on each hand.

42. Where the principal teacher is authorised as in Rule 41 to administer corporal punishment, he shall keep a book to be known as the School-room Punishment Book and he shall at once enter therein any corporal punishment inflicted by him under Rule 41.

43.—(1) The manager shall be responsible for the immediate recording of all corporal and other serious punishment in the Punishment Book which he is required to keep under Rule 19, except corporal punishment inflicted by the principal teacher under Rule 41.

(2) The manager shall examine the School-room Punishment Book, if any, at least once a week and shall sign it.

(3) The Punishment Book (and the School-room Punishment Book, if any) shall be examined at each meeting of the Board of Management and shall be signed by the chairman. They shall also be shown to the school medical officer at least once a quarter.

(4) At the commencement of each quarter, the manager shall furnish to the Ministry a return giving particulars of corporal punishment imposed during the preceding three months.

44. Except as provided by these Rules, no member of the staff shall inflict any kind of corporal punishment. The term "corporal punishment" includes striking, cuffing, shaking or any other form of physical violence. Any person who commits a breach of this Rule shall render himself or herself liable to dismissal.

45. No pupil shall be allowed to administer any form of punishment to any other pupil.

46. on li
progr
review
of the
first y
at lea

date a
and fo
mag

placed
case sl
with a

ter sho
reason

47. obtain
on licen
necessar
ations o
shall pla

48. T
with a s
travellin
or guarc
man

49. It
adequate
released
expires a
for each

50. Th
duties sh
(a)

(b)
(c)

PRIVATE

4. My parents visited me every Wednesday night and I was allowed to visit them on a Sunday. However if I misbehaved during the week the Brothers would not allow me to leave the site. I also received pocket money of half a crown every Sunday. I also remember that I was allowed home for four days or so at Christmas and Easter. I do not remember anyone from Welfare or Social Services ever inspecting St Patrick's in the time that I was there. I was just thrown into that environment and left on my own. I did not have anyone there to check on how I was. The only thing I learned in St Patrick's was more criminality. It was a bit like Oliver Twist.
5. The regime at St Patrick's was brutal because a number of the Brothers were very violent. I was terrified of them. On many occasions, I received a beating with a leather strap and was punched and kicked. It went far beyond any chastisement for misbehaving. BR 4 slapped me frequently and he used a strap most of the time. I remember one occasion that I was standing in the corridor and he was carrying a bunch of keys in his hand. For no reason at all, he hit me on the side of the head with the keys. I could not hear properly for about a week but I did not receive any medical attention. I was too afraid to ask for help. BR 42 was violent towards me and the other boys as well. It was a very violent regime and there was punishment even if you had not done anything wrong.
6. Once my mother asked the Brothers if I could return late from home one Sunday evening because my brother was playing in a concert in a local church hall. It was agreed that I could return after the concert which I did. BR 91 removed my mattress and my bedding and I was forced to sleep on the springs. I was told that that it was because I has abused my home leave privilege even though my mother had agreed it in advance. This was the type of punishment for no reason which some Brothers really enjoyed.
7. There was also sexual abuse at St Patrick's and I was abused by a number of the Brothers during my time there. The main Brother who abused me was BR 1 He was a sharp featured man who mostly worked in the office during the day. Eventually he left to be in charge of Rubane House in Kircubbin.

PRIVATE

believed that it was the best place for me but they did not know what was going on there at the time. They thought that they were doing the right thing for me. I was getting into further trouble when I was away from St Patrick's and eventually I was given a Training School Order.

4. During my time at St Patrick's I had problems with the staff but only the lay staff. I never had any problems with the Brothers in the place. I am aware that there have been allegations made by others about the Brothers but absolutely nothing like that ever happened to me. I would not say things happened if they did not.
5. I want to state that only some members of staff were abusive to me. There were certain members of staff who just did not like me because they were from the same area. Two of these staff members live in [REDACTED] now and I meet them every day. I just do not speak to them but I walk by them every day although it is difficult considering what they did to me. One of them is called SPT 64 and he was a [REDACTED]. He is approximately [REDACTED]. He was in his [REDACTED] at the time I was in St Patrick's. The other person is called SPT 65 and is [REDACTED].
6. SPT 64 physically assaulted me almost every time I returned to St Patrick's after absconding. He threw me into a cold shower and beat me with a big blackthorn stick he used to have. He hit me up to fifteen times with the stick and often I was bruised. SPT 65 was cruel and hit me regularly with wet towels or a bunch of keys. I do not speak to them when I walk past them and I have nothing to do with them. I do not know if they are still working with children.
7. I was hit by some staff on the back of the head with a bunch of keys and was slapped regularly. I was stripped naked and forced to stand in the corner of the common room for hours on end. I was told that it was to stop me running away so much. The staff would be there whilst I was standing in the corner but they did not touch me at any time. I hated being there so that's why I ran away so often. This type of punishment happened on at least seven or eight occasions.

1 with the road, but the school was on a hill. There was
2 quite a steep rise to the school and even further beyond
3 the school to the Upper Springfield Road, so that there
4 were occasions when the crossfire was from the lower
5 ground to the higher ground.

6 I can recall one incident in which the school was
7 actually hit by fire. Damage was done to the brickwork.
8 It -- there were occasions when it was seriously
9 dangerous for staff and pupils when this happened, you
10 know, when there was I suppose you would call it a form
11 of gun battle --

12 Q. Yes.

13 A. -- that went across the property.

14 Q. You gave me another example of how the situation outside
15 began to present itself inside. It is not an example
16 you talk about in your statement, but you drew it to my
17 attention, and I am going to ask you to share it with
18 the Panel, that BR26 came to you to make you aware that
19 he had learnt that on the senior side an attempt was
20 being made by a group of boys to form an IRA unit.

21 A. Yes.

22 Q. And what he had been made aware of was their intention
23 to abduct a member of staff.

24 A. That's correct, yes.

25 Q. And you are not able to help the Panel with dating when

PRIVATE

straw to the cows. The Brother came in and his zip was undone and he had no underpants on and you could see everything. He was exposing himself to HIA 218 and I. He said to us 'what are you looking at?'. But we didn't answer him back – you wouldn't answer him back. He walked straight over with this paddle and started hitting the both of us saying 'you're looking down there, don't be looking down there'. He made people petrified of him because of the beatings he inflicted. I saw him beat people round the head with the paddle. He continued to beat us and expose himself for a couple of days. One day I was cleaning out the cows and he came over and his penis was hanging out of his trousers. He said 'grab hold of that'. I said no and he hit me with the paddle. He was trying to make me masturbate him. He did the same with HIA 218. HIA 218 and I were always together. He would then say to HIA 218 'you do it now' and HIA 218 wouldn't so he hit HIA 218 with the paddle. Whilst he did not bugger me I did witness him do it to other boys on the farm in the pig or sheep pen.

7. One day HIA 218 and I witnessed older boys in broad daylight abusing a little boy in the games room. About four older boys grabbed this little lad who was about ten years old and took him into the games room. Each of them held an arm and a leg and pulled his trousers down and raped him on the floor right in front of HIA 218 and I as if it was a perfectly normal thing to do. The boy was distressed and screaming and HIA 218 and I just turned and walked straight out of the room because we couldn't believe what we had just seen. You could even hear kids screaming from other dorms every single night.
8. As I was a bed wetter in Rubane I was made to go down to the showers at 6 o'clock in the morning and have a freezing cold shower by the Brothers. I was made to stand there for half an hour. Sometimes they even put me in a freezing cold bath if you wet the bed during the night.
9. There wasn't one Brother in Rubane who was not abusing children or if they weren't abusing them they knew what was going on and they weren't doing anything about it. Boys were being abused on the farm, in the dormitories, in the toilets and in the woods. Older boys took younger boys into the woods and abused them.

HIA 219

PRIVATE

3

1 the consequences, if you like, or the trade-offs for
2 trying to deal with young people in the criminal justice
3 system through open institutions was that you would have
4 the type of difficulties that you are describing. It
5 wasn't a prison. It wasn't the Maze or Magilligan with
6 large walls that nobody could enter, where everyone was
7 locked down, that, in fact, these were the types of
8 difficulties that manifested themselves based on where
9 you were found to be in West Belfast. I think you
10 described to me on a previous occasion there would have
11 been occasions whenever there were exchanges between
12 paramilitaries and the army that might have crossed the
13 St. Patrick's grounds and those are -- that was part of
14 life that you were dealing with.

15 **A. Absolutely.**

16 Q. I don't want to -- obviously the effect of dealing with
17 running a training school in the Troubles, I don't want
18 to minimise that in any way, but if we park that issue
19 for the moment, BR26, are there other issues that you
20 can recall particular problems about the running of
21 a training school? I appreciate that's a massive one,
22 but aside from that one, are there other things that
23 stick in your mind that made life very difficult for you
24 trying to run a training school?

25 **A. One would always be very conscious of the particular**

1 problems that young fellas had of their own domestically
2 and particularly when they would get word that dad was
3 arrested or an older brother was arrested or perhaps
4 interned or whatever, you know, taken into custody, and
5 how upsetting and traumatised the young fella would be
6 about that. He might want to go home. We may give him
7 permission to go home for a few hours to see his mother
8 or whoever, you know, and --

9 Q. One of the contexts for you, BR26, was that quite
10 a number of the boys who were in St. Patrick's actually
11 came from the area in which St. Patrick's was based. So
12 the going home didn't involve going halfway across the
13 country necessarily.

14 A. Oh, absolutely, yes. Quite a lot lived down the road,
15 across the main -- across the street from the main
16 entrance into a couple of the estates there or right
17 beside us in the Turf Lodge and further on, Ballymurphy
18 and the Whiterock.

19 Q. What I want to ask you about, BR26, is the set-up of the
20 training school was into a junior side and a senior
21 side. Can you -- you touched on this during your
22 dealing with the allegations -- but can you explain to
23 the Panel how that separation manifested itself between
24 the junior school and the senior school and what the age
25 limit was for the two different parts?

PRIVATE

7. The major problem I had during that time was with the IRA. I know that on one occasion the night watchman allowed masked men into the dormitory where I slept in order to give me a punishment beating. There were a number of other boys around when these masked men arrived and there was a mass fight. The masked men then made off because of the commotion. There were never any Brothers around when this was happening. The night-watchmen later told me they would say I was found wandering outside the dormitory. I absconded that night and walked to the house of a boy called [REDACTED]. He was also in St Patrick's but was on a period of home leave. His mother allowed me to stay that night but when I went to bed she phoned the Training School to let them know where I was. I understand that she was only doing what she thought was best for me but I left the next morning as soon as I could.
8. The Training School had a number of boys who had been remanded there due to suspected involvement with paramilitaries. There was a lot of Republican involvement in the school at the time and the Brothers seemed to let them do what they wanted and seemed to support them. I had the impression that they were treated a lot better than people such as myself who were not involved in that type of activity. I am aware that explosives were found in the grounds and I remember that I was arrested with a number of other boys and taken to Fort Mona for interrogation. I had absolutely nothing to do with that sort of thing. The Brothers became very anti-IRA after a while.
9. Two older boys beat me regularly and once they took me to Black Mountain and tortured me for five or six hours. The boys were called SPT 45 and SPT 46 who were both from [REDACTED]. They made me stand with my hands out holding rocks and hit me. They said that they were from the IRA and that I had been an informer and because of me the uncle of another boy had been interned. It was all nonsense and I do not believe that the boys were actually part of the IRA and were just pretending that they were. I was taken back to St Patrick's that night and was bleeding and bruised. I never received any medical treatment for the injuries I received that day. I remember that later that night the Irish National

1 that and not intervened?

2 **A. Yes. The Brother would have been standing facing. You**
3 **couldn't not have seen us.**

4 Q. They do say they were unaware that there was an issue of
5 peer sexual abuse, sexual abuse by other boys, in the
6 home, but they now accept that that might have been
7 a problem in St. Pat's that they were unaware of that.
8 I will come back to talk about that a little more when
9 we go through that in your statement.

10 Paragraph 7 of your statement you relate an incident
11 where you say that the major problem you had during your
12 time was with the IRA. You know that:

13 "On one occasion the nightwatchman allowed masked
14 men into the dormitory where I slept in order to give me
15 a punishment beating. There were a number of other boys
16 around when these masked men arrived and there was
17 a mass fight. The masked men then made off because of
18 the commotion. There were never any Brothers around
19 when this was happening. The nightwatchmen later told
20 me that they would say I was found wandering outside the
21 dormitory."

22 You ran away.

23 "I absconded that night and walked to the house of
24 ...",

25 a boy whom you name in your statement.

1 **A. Oh, very much so. Indeed, I came face-to-face in one**
2 **particular incident where two paramilitaries came up and**
3 **asked to take two particular boys out for, as they said,**
4 **a particular assignment. I asked them, "Where do the**
5 **boys' parents come into this? You won't be taking them**
6 **out of here unless the parents come up and give their**
7 **consent" and they withdrew and I didn't hear from them**
8 **since.**

9 **Q. So that's one example of the if I call it brazen, fairly**
10 **difficult circumstances that presented themselves, where**
11 **you would be faced with having to manage dangerous**
12 **individuals who had come on to the premises wanting to**
13 **interact with boys you were responsible for.**

14 **A. Correct. I was lucky it just worked out for both of the**
15 **two boys and myself. We were very lucky I would say.**

16 **Q. Obviously, as you know, the Bernard Teggart incident did**
17 **not work in the same way, and I want to ask you for the**
18 **record so that you can explain your position.**

19 **Whenever -- if we look, please, at 18851, and this is --**
20 **if we look towards the bottom of the page, BR26, this is**
21 **the deposition from SPT151, and he is**
22 **explaining the activities of the three days as far as he**
23 **recalled it. What he is doing here on the day that both**
24 **boys have been taken, so the second day of the sequence,**
25 **he explains that they haven't come back. He is**

1 particular or the type of event that you are talking
2 about where you were confronted with desire to remove
3 people from the training school and how these things
4 were dealt with?

5 A. Well, it was -- the event itself was one of enormous
6 shock and horror and revulsion not alone felt within the
7 school but in the wider community and beyond. Staff, of
8 course -- there were limits to what staff could do, what
9 any of us could do, because we were a very, very open
10 institution and access was very easy for anybody that
11 wanted to come in. In the very first instance we were
12 not allowed by the army to close the gates even at
13 night-time because they wanted to come in. Now they
14 found other ways of coming in and they found other ways
15 of going out and not necessarily through the main gates,
16 but the main gates had to remain open. Then that led to
17 fellas coming in in stolen cars and what not. Problems
18 were developing all the time, and you do your best to
19 minimise them and the staff regimens and all that, but
20 there was only so much you could do because of the
21 environment in which we were working and the openness of
22 it.

23 Q. And that openness is something we will come back to in
24 the context of absconding, because there are documents
25 that are available to the Panel that show that one of

PRIVATE

7. The major problem I had during that time was with the IRA. I know that on one occasion the night watchman allowed masked men into the dormitory where I slept in order to give me a punishment beating. There were a number of other boys around when these masked men arrived and there was a mass fight. The masked men then made off because of the commotion. There were never any Brothers around when this was happening. The night-watchmen later told me they would say I was found wandering outside the dormitory. I absconded that night and walked to the house of a boy called [REDACTED]. He was also in St Patrick's but was on a period of home leave. His mother allowed me to stay that night but when I went to bed she phoned the Training School to let them know where I was. I understand that she was only doing what she thought was best for me but I left the next morning as soon as I could.
8. The Training School had a number of boys who had been remanded there due to suspected involvement with paramilitaries. There was a lot of Republican involvement in the school at the time and the Brothers seemed to let them do what they wanted and seemed to support them. I had the impression that they were treated a lot better than people such as myself who were not involved in that type of activity. I am aware that explosives were found in the grounds and I remember that I was arrested with a number of other boys and taken to Fort Mona for interrogation. I had absolutely nothing to do with that sort of thing. The Brothers became very anti-IRA after a while.
9. Two older boys beat me regularly and once they took me to Black Mountain and tortured me for five or six hours. The boys were called SPT 45 and SPT 46 who were both from [REDACTED]. They made me stand with my hands out holding rocks and hit me. They said that they were from the IRA and that I had been an informer and because of me the uncle of another boy had been interned. It was all nonsense and I do not believe that the boys were actually part of the IRA and were just pretending that they were. I was taken back to St Patrick's that night and was bleeding and bruised. I never received any medical treatment for the injuries I received that day. I remember that later that night the Irish National

PRIVATE

IRA who were in St Patrick's at some stage. There were many boys who were in St Patrick's who were there for paramilitary crime ranging from murder to possession of weapons and explosives to membership. I believe that it was thought that the other boys who were there for petty crime were ripe for recruitment. When I was in St Patrick's there was another boy called SPT 28 SPT 28 who was also there. He was one of the main players in Fianna Eireann. He approached me one evening and gave me a book called "My Fight for Irish Freedom" by Dan Breen to read. It was one of the books that was given to people to read when they were being recruited for Fianna Eireann. [REDACTED] was used by the Provisional IRA. I had been watched for potential from a young age and was expected to join at some stage. SPT 28 had been involved with trying to "initiate" me into Fianna Eireann. I gave him the book back with the letters FTP, meaning "F**k The Provisionals", written in the inside of the front cover. The Brothers seemed to be sympathetic to those boys who were in St Patrick's for paramilitary crimes. They seemed to get an easier time from the Brothers.

10. When we left SPT 27 and I were taken to Central train station by a houseparent called STP 76 and given two train tickets to get home to [REDACTED]

St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast (19/09/1979 – 25/09/1979 and 15/05/1980 – 25/07/1980)

11. I was re-admitted to St Patrick's the following year on 19th September 1979. I was sentenced for riotous behaviour and criminal damage. I was released on bail pending appeal on 25th September 1979. On 15th May 1980 my appeal was denied and I was re-admitted to St Patrick's. I was on the senior side this time.
12. I remember the Brothers would beat the boys with leather straps if you were being punished for something. I remember being hit over the head with a bunch of keys by BR 50 once because I had hit another boy, who was his pet.
13. I remember thinking the Brothers were going to rape me again, after SPT 29 put the idea in to my head. They kept coming into my room at night with comics and I told them I didn't read comics so they didn't need to come into my room.

HIA 54

PRIVATE

3

1 this was that you recall, but we can ask BR26 about that
2 as well --

3 **A. Uh-huh.**

4 Q. -- as to what he can remember, but you remember going to
5 see your contact in the Northern Ireland Office.

6 **A. Yes. I went to see -- I phoned and made an appointment**
7 **with -- to see Mr Ronnie Steele.**

8 Q. Yes.

9 **A. He was my contact with the Northern Ireland Office.**

10 Q. Yes, and that was -- he was in the Training School
11 Branch.

12 **A. At that time, yes.**

13 Q. Yes, and you went to see him about this development.

14 **A. Yes.**

15 Q. And can you just explain to the Panel what happened?

16 **A. Yes. I was brought to his room, to his office in**
17 **Stormont, and I explained to him what was happening in**
18 **St. Patrick's and the information that had come to me**
19 **through BR26, who had got it from the -- on the senior**
20 **side. As I recall, he left the -- his office and was**
21 **away for -- I don't -- can't remember --**
22 **several minutes. When he came back, he then gave me**
23 **a phone number and said, "These people are expecting**
24 **a call from you".**

25 So when I returned to St. Patrick's, I phoned the

1 number and it was -- I was -- found myself speaking to
2 in Andersonstown.

3 Q. And you went to then meet her?

4 A. Yes. She said -- I explained to her what the problem
5 was. She said, "Well, come up". I went to her house
6 and explained again to her this threat that was
7 developing in the school in the senior side and she
8 said, "Well, leave it with me. We'll deal with that"
9 and she said, "These boys get out on leave, don't they?"
10 and I said, "Yes, if their record is good enough, you
11 know, and they're not being denied the chance of going
12 home to see their parents or whatever because of their
13 conduct". So they said, "Right. Well, we'll -- we'll
14 meet with the boy" who was, as I remember, the -- as it
15 were, the spokesperson for this group in the senior side
16 who were planning the abduction of the member of staff.
17 I do recall saying to her, "Whatever you do, it must not
18 be on the property. It must not be on the grounds of
19 St. Patrick's". She said, "No, it will not", and what
20 I learned afterwards was that they had met with that boy
21 and had explained to him that, "You don't do things like
22 that in St. Patrick's. St. Patrick's has served this
23 community for many years and is still serving it and you
24 can forget any thought of abducting anybody.
25 St. Patrick's is there for your good", and that was the

1 **A. I had no preparation. I had never been in a position of**
2 **authority other than the authority of a teacher in front**
3 **of his class, but for anything else I had had no**
4 **experience whatsoever. I plenty of experience as**
5 **a teacher, because I had taught for six years in**
6 **school --**

7 **Q. Yes.**

8 **A. -- and then I had taught for**
9 **.**

10 **Q. What I mean, BR52, is you may have had the experience to**
11 **be the principal of a school, but what I'm more talking**
12 **about is what experience you had to equip you to deal**
13 **with discussions with boys who wanted to be -- terrorist**
14 **groups recognised, and you are having to have meetings**
15 **with individuals in the community to keep a lid on that**
16 **type of thing. What --**

17 **A. Totally outside any experience I ever had, you know.**
18 **None whatsoever I had.**

19 **Q. Then -- I was asking you about -- the Panel are aware**
20 **that in SPT151 police statement and in his**
21 **inquest deposition, which are effectively the same**
22 **document, similar to yours, your police statement at the**
23 **time and then your deposition, he made the point about**
24 **various groups who they had got used to in his language**
25 **coming on to St. Patrick's and, you know, being involved**

PRIVATE

St Patrick's Training School Belfast

4. I was taken to St Patrick's straight from court on 30th January 1973. One of my older friends had been there previously and told me about pillow fights and other games and it sounded like a good place. I had very strict parents and it seemed like a good place to go compared to my home. It was going to be something different from the life I was used to. He did not tell me about some of the other things which went on at St Patrick's.
5. I absconded from St Patrick's at every opportunity I could. I was there for two years and ten months in total but I believe that during my time there I probably absconded between ten and fifteen times. I used to try to go back to [REDACTED] and would have to hitch lifts. Sometimes even the police would have brought me home thinking I had no way home. There were gangs in St Patrick's and there was a lot of bullying. The Brothers knew what was going on and they watched from the sidelines. They only intervened if things got very serious. I never told my parents what was going on at St Patrick's but just told them that I did not want to go back. My parents held me until one of the Brothers came to collect me and drive me back. On other occasions when I ran away I would hang around in certain areas of Belfast because I knew that the Police were unlikely to come into those areas to look for me due to the political situation at the time. Then I would make my way home to [REDACTED] I knew that if I stayed away from the city centre I had a better chance of not being located.
6. I am aware from news reports that there are allegations of child abuse but in my time at St Patrick's I was molested by some of the older boys but not by the Christian Brothers. A couple of the Brothers did beat me but I was used to that because I was beaten at home and at school because of my hyperactivity. Things did happen that as a young boy I didn't understand at the time. Some of the Brothers would rub themselves up against the boys. At the time we didn't know what this meant. The woodwork teacher used to push up behind us as we bent over the lathe and then laugh it off. He did this to me and I saw him do it to other boys although we didn't speak about it.

1 issues that were difficult to handle?

2 A. Well, in the context of what we have just been speaking
3 about and the vast number of boys being admitted at that
4 time on different charges and all Troubles -- related to
5 the Troubles, there were factions within that particular
6 group that made life very, very difficult, because they
7 had different allegiances to different paramilitary
8 factions in their communities from which they came, and
9 it was really a very volatile situation for all the
10 staff.

11 Q. Well, just on that subject then, because I will be
12 coming to it, but I will deal with it now, the Panel are
13 aware of in November 1973 the abduction of Bernard
14 Teggart, one of your boys, who was then murdered by the
15 IRA. Whenever SPT151, who was one of the two
16 members of staff involved in the interaction with those
17 who came on to the premises to take the boys away -- he
18 remarked in his police statement and then again in his
19 inquest statement that -- in his deposition that there
20 were -- there was a problem, as he regarded it, of
21 various groups could come on to the site and that had to
22 become an accepted part of life for the training school
23 because of where it was located. Can you remember those
24 types of difficulties presenting themselves in
25 St. Patrick's?

1 views of what people who commit crimes are like and, you
2 know, I found it not to be an intimidating environment.
3 I did keep myself to myself, as advised, and I really
4 tried not to engage in the wider issues that were going
5 on. It was very, very difficult, and I have to say it
6 would have been very easy for me to have been sucked
7 into all that was going on in that, as you say, the
8 place was surrounded by all the Troubles that were going
9 on. As time went on, the people coming into
10 St. Patrick's were more connected to that side of -- the
11 military side of it than the civil disorder side of it,
12 and I have no doubts that if I had -- hadn't listened to
13 the advice and hadn't been given the support by BR26, my
14 life could have gone differently.

15 Q. And I know this is difficult, and we will get through
16 it, because it is important that you share what you have
17 to say, but you -- when you go in, you explain in
18 paragraph 6 and paragraph 2 -- and I will do it in that
19 order for the reason -- the subject that comes up --
20 when you go in initially, you go into the senior side --

21 A. Yes.

22 Q. -- and the Panel has heard some evidence about the
23 distinction between the junior side and the senior side,
24 and you describe going into the dormitory structure --

25 A. Yes.

1 On other occasions when I ran away, I would hang
2 around in certain areas of Belfast, because I knew the
3 police were unlikely to come into those areas to look
4 for me due to the political situation at the time. Then
5 I would make my way home. I knew that if I stayed away
6 from the city centre, I had a better chance of not being
7 located."

8 And just to be clear, there are records of you
9 absconding, a number of records, but if we just look at
10 47434, that would seem to indicate the number of times
11 between February 1973, not long after you went in --
12 that's three days -- four days after went in you ran
13 away that day -- if we could scroll on down then, please
14 -- right through to November 1975 when you were missing
15 there for a period of three days. So that seems to have
16 been the record that was kept of all the times that you
17 ran away and you would accept that you did do that,
18 HIA162. Isn't that right?

19 **A. Yes.**

20 **Q.** If we look at 47445, when you did run away, you seemed
21 to be causing some problem at home which caused the
22 training school to write to the Social Work Department
23 where you lived, and there is obviously some connection
24 between them, and the training school and the social
25 worker expressed the view that you were running wild in

1 feel maybe I haven't touched on that would be relevant
2 that would assist the Panel with its work into
3 St. Patrick's that you want to mention. Now is your
4 opportunity to do that if there's something I haven't
5 covered that you think should be brought out.

6 **A. Not really other than to say that I think you've been**
7 **very, very fair and most reasonable.**

8 Could I just simply make one comment in terms of our
9 working relationship with the local police, if I may?
10 Through difficult times and through good times we did
11 our best to maintain that working relationship,
12 especially with our own local station in Andersonstown,
13 and for a fairly lengthy period we were very lucky to
14 have a very understanding Inspector there, Chief
15 Inspector, who was of immense help to us during
16 difficult times. Now I couldn't from the top of my head
17 give any dates as to when he was in situ, but when he
18 was there, he was very, very helpful and approachable.
19 So we had a very good working relationship with him
20 really and truly.

21 Then it might have been -- it might have been
22 through his advice that there was an occasion when
23 I personally had to seek the advice of the DPP. First
24 of all, I wanted to know could I get an interview with
25 the DPP. Then I was very warmly welcomed. I presented

1 him with the problems that we were faced with at that
2 time, largely relating to the Diplock courts and that,
3 but again he was extremely helpful, even though he did
4 say to me, "As the legislation is my hands are tied
5 presently", but he was extremely helpful in his advice
6 and I will always treasure how graciously I was received
7 by him.

8 Q. Do you want to just explain to the Panel what was it --
9 what was the concern that you were drawing to his
10 attention that led to your discussion with him?

11 A. Mainly the problems presented by the Diplock courts.
12 I mean, the day-to-day problems presented by the Diplock
13 courts to the training school. Right?

14 Q. What were those problems? What was it that was
15 happening that you were finding on the ground was
16 difficult?

17 A. Boys were sent in on remand and that remand was being
18 prolonged from one court case to another to another
19 court appearance to another to another and there was no
20 home leave for those boys and they were very resentful
21 of that. One particular boy, when he finally got
22 sentenced -- and he was not from Belfast; he was from
23 Derry actually -- he was put on permanent remand until
24 his 19th birthday, and I wanted to discuss his situation
25 with the DPP and what we could do. He was more than

1 Q. -- things easier.

2 **A. Exactly.**

3 Q. You regarded that as a strong working relationship.

4 **A. Absolutely.**

5 Q. And you are saying you had the same with a particular
6 police officer. You gave me his name earlier and later
7 I am going to be able to work out what time period that
8 relates to.

9 I am not going to ask you anything else, BR26, at
10 this stage. If you stay where you are for a short
11 while, the Panel Members may want to ask you something
12 about your time. So bear with us.

13 Questions from THE PANEL

14 CHAIRMAN: If I could just follow up the very last thing you
15 were describing to us, BR26, about your conversation
16 with the then DPP. The late Sir Barry Shaw I think that
17 would have been in those days.

18 **A. Correct, Chairman.**

19 Q. If I have understood you correctly, the problem that
20 became an acute one for St. Patrick's was you presumably
21 had a larger number of boys who were not being dealt
22 with by you in the normal training school way because
23 they were there effectively as remand prisoners --

24 **A. Correct.**

25 Q. -- with no freedom. They couldn't be allowed home on

1 leave or even to go and see their parents, because they
2 were in a different legal category, and that was
3 something that created difficulties for you in dealing
4 with them as boys. Is that your basic problem?

5 **A. Correct, yes. Correct.**

6 Q. Yes, I see.

7 **A. Not alone that, Chairman, but when we would be playing**
8 **matches outside, they would actually -- I would have to**
9 **put my hands up and say that we broke the rules. We**
10 **brought them when they were playing.**

11 Q. Well, I think there's a precedent for the Nelson touch
12 in these sort of things I am sure.

13 You did touch on another aspect of the change that
14 the Troubles forced upon St. Patrick's, like so many
15 other institutions of different types, when you touched
16 on the nature of the boys who were coming in. You
17 referred to the time when you remember particularly that
18 you had eight boys I think you said who were on remand
19 for murder --

20 **A. Correct.**

21 Q. -- and then others for other very serious offences. You
22 refer to there being different factions. Now those of
23 us who don't have as long memories may have forgotten
24 just what the nature of that was, but there was a great
25 deal of internal friction between various parts of the

1 Q. Through the evidence the Panel has already heard the
2 suggestion you did the best you could in very difficult
3 circumstances. Is that how you recall it? Do you
4 recall a feeling of helplessness about it? How would
5 you describe that time period as you look back on it?

6 A. We were just hoping that tomorrow would not be as
7 difficult as yesterday and very often yesterday was
8 overshadowed by the events of tomorrow, and it was just
9 your faith and trust in the Good Lord that very often
10 saw you through.

11 Of the 26 fellas that we got in I should -- I think
12 I should remark, of the 26 fellas we got in on remand on
13 one Sunday, 24 of them stood their ground and faced
14 trial. Only two left the premises.

15 Q. Absconding is a particular issue I am going to come back
16 to --

17 A. Yes.

18 Q. -- as you know, towards the end. The Troubles was
19 a particularly dramatic problem that you had to deal
20 with.

21 In terms of the -- within the training school itself
22 and its operation, as you look back on it, are there
23 particular problems that you can pick out over your
24 [REDACTED] working in
25 St. Patrick's that you can identify as really major

1 **A. Yes.**

2 Q. -- on occasion.

3 "Surviving Brothers recall that on two occasions
4 soldiers left their weapons behind and they were handed
5 in by residents and returned to the military. Army foot
6 patrols from Fort Monagh regularly passed through the
7 school grounds and that generally took place during the
8 residents' 11 o'clock break time, which invariably led
9 to tension between the residents and the military, and
10 BR26

11

12

13 So would these incidents of throwing stones at the
14 foot patrols or kicking the glass out at them, would
15 that have been at the break time from school? Do you
16 recall?

17 **A. It could have been any time.**

18 Q. At paragraph 9 here of your statement you talk about:

19 "Two boys beat me regularly and once they took me to
20 Black Mountain and tortured me for five or six hours."

21 You give the names of the boys and where they were
22 come.

23 "They made me stand with my hands out holding rocks
24 and hit me. They said they were from the IRA and I had
25 been an informer, and because of me, the uncle of

murder of Bernard Teggart wholly and unequivocally at the feet of those who kidnapped and murdered him. It is our view that there should be no dilution of that responsibility nor any attempt to deflect the responsibility on to anyone else. The Diocese is acutely aware of the outstanding efforts that were made by the staff and managing board of St. Patrick's during those uniquely turbulent and dangerous years to maintain a professional and stable environment for the residents there in the midst of the most challenging circumstances, including a prevailing culture of armed intimidation and threat by paramilitary organisations.

5.

6.

Circumstances of the murder of Bernard Brendan Teggart

This part of the report explains the circumstances of the murder of Bernard Brendan Teggart, who was shot in Bellevue Park, Belfast, at 10.00pm on Monday, November 12, 1973.

Bernard, a catholic, was 15 at the time of his murder. He was born on Friday, April 4, 1958 and was a schoolboy. Bernard was one of 13 children; five girls and eight boys.

The family lived at 86, New Barnsley Crescent, Belfast. Bernard's mother, Isobel, known as Bella, was widowed when her husband, Daniel was killed by the army on Monday, August 9, 1971, on Springfield Road, Belfast. Bella died in 2005.

Bernard's siblings were Alice, Margaret, Bernadette, Kathleen, James, Daniel, Isobel, Gerard, John, Anthony, Peter and David. Gerard was Bernard's twin.

Alice Harper, Bernard's sister, and her brothers Peter and Anthony, supported by solicitor, Pdraig O'Muirigh, have engaged with the HET on behalf of the family.

Bernard experienced a troubled life at times. He was a member of a large family that lived in a socially deprived area and although his parents did what they could for their children, it was very difficult for them. The death of their father, who was shot by the army in disputed circumstances at the age of 44, was devastating for the family.

Bernard and his twin brother Gerard had learning difficulties and both were reported as having a mental age of eight or nine when they were 15. He had been in trouble with the police for petty offences and had been sent to St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast as a result of a Training School Order, imposed by Belfast Juvenile Court on April 17, 1968. He was recommitted to the school on April 22, 1970.

For a time he was living at the De la Salle Boy's Home, Kircubbin with Gerard. Gerard was also committed to St Patrick's Training School on April 22, 1970.

He told them that Gerard was a boy with a mental age of nine, who had little education and would probably answer yes or no if he believed that was the answer the men wanted to hear. The man who followed them out told him they were aware of that as they knew Gerard well.

He asked them what it was they wanted and they told him they were going to take Gerard away from the school for an hour. He told them that he could not permit that as he was responsible for the boy. He offered to make a room available so they could speak to him at the school, but they rejected the offer, claiming that the questioning would be conducted by others. He then offered to make the room available to the person who wanted to carry out the questioning. He was told that the person could not come to the school. They then told him that they would take Gerard away.

They were not abusive or threatening but they were very firm about what they had come to do. He gave his objections and expressed his disapproval for about half an hour. They assured him that Gerard would be returned within an hour and as Gerard appeared to be less anxious he let the three men take him about 3.40pm.

SPT 151 told Brother BR 52 what had happened and he agreed it was very worrying, but after 10 minutes of talking Brother BR 52 left him. At 4.40pm Gerard, accompanied by the three men, returned, smiling.

The men spoke to him about their willingness to assist the school with absconders, offering to return them to the school as and when they came across them. They were very friendly and appeared to be genuine in their offer of help. When they left he telephoned Brother BR 52 and told him of Gerard's return.

At 12.20pm the following day, two men who he thought were workmen, entered his office and he signalled them to wait while he finished a telephone call. When he finished the call they then said they wanted to speak to SPT 151 and he told them SPT 151 was on night duty. They said the SPT 158 who he was speaking to on the telephone would do instead.

HET Comment: It is likely that the two men wished to speak with SPT 151 SPT 151 having been supplied with this name by the Provisional IRA members who took Gerard the day before, but mistakenly they asked for [REDACTED]. It would appear to be co-incidence that a person called [REDACTED] was on night duty.

I went in and was told the housemasters were looking for Barney Taggart and that they had gone to the cell (he was just back after absconding and had been confined to make sure he stayed). I was asked could he go out for an hour and I answered "See Brother BR 52". I was told Brother BR 52 had gone out so I said "Since he gave permission to Gerry to go I supposed it was OK for Barney to go". I went up to my office and resumed. When 3 o'clock came I rang the housemasters' office to see were the Taggart twins back. I was told they were not. I left word that they were to ring when the boys returned. When school ended at 3.30pm and the classes came out I made further enquiries and got the same answer. At this stage I was worried. I began to think of tarring and feathering and suchlike. I decided I must do something and I tried to find out where Brother BR 52 was. The first brother I asked didn't know so I went to the main offices and discussed the situation with the brothers there. I suggested ringing Brother BR 52 but was not told where he was. I suggested that the Police should be informed because 2 hours had now elapsed. I was told neither Br BR 52 nor the Police should be told at that time so I went back up to my own room to wait. At about 5pm Bro BR 52 arrived up with me. Like myself he was now very worried. I told him I thought we must now do something. Police were mentioned and some people of authority in the neighbourhood. At 6 o'clock I went down for tea and was back up at 6.50. Still no sign of the boys. Then Brother BR 52 came over and he and I went looking for them. He called at Father Wilson's house but he was not there. Then Br BR 52 went to the Taggart home but they were not there. We went then to Clonard Hall because we were told they played Bingo there. But again our search was in vain. He returned to the school and there was further talk. Eventually I went home at about 10.30pm. I heard the dreadful news in the morning.

(Sgd)

SPT 151

Checked and certified to be a true copy of original statement.

Bernard and Gerard were taken to another house in Oldpark about 7.00pm, where they were held for an hour. They were then driven in a car for 10-15 minutes, until they came across an army road block in Antrim Road.

Tape which had been placed across their eyes was ripped off and they were ordered out of the car and told to walk along the pavement past the army checkpoint. One of the men got out with them and they walked through the check point unchallenged. Further along the road they got back into the car.

They were driven to a house in Glengormley, where they were locked in a bathroom. Minutes later, a man entered and asked which one of them was Bernard. Gerard lifted his head to look at the man but was hit and ordered not to look up.

Two girls then took Gerard out of the house and as he was leaving he heard Bernard crying and screaming. The girls drove to a main road and gave him three shillings (15p) and an anorak. He made his way home and told his mother what had happened.

HET Comment: Gerard did not describe the girls or give an age for them in his statement, but as the girls drove him away from the house, it would appear that they were at the least in their late teens.

At 10.02pm an army patrol discovered Bernard lying at the side of the approach road to the Floral Hall in Bellevue Park, Belfast. There was a piece of cardboard beside him with the word 'tout' written on it. Bernard had been shot in his head and was seriously injured but still alive. The police and an ambulance were called and arrived promptly.

Bernard was taken to the Royal Victoria Hospital (RVH), where he was treated for a gunshot wound to his head. The hospital staff tried to save his life but at 2.45am on Tuesday, November 13, 1973, Doctor Trevor Bell, pronounced him dead.

It was only in 2004 that the Provisional IRA admitted they murdered Bernard, saying that the killing '*should never have happened.*'

No one has been convicted for Bernard's murder.

He told [REDACTED] to bring the men to his office and he arrived shortly after with them.

The men told him they wanted to question Teggart further. He asked them what they were going to question him about and they said that they had only been sent to collect him. He suggested they question him at the school in his presence. They said that they would not be doing the questioning and that they were there just to collect him. He asked what would happen if he did not allow them to take him. They said that they had been sent to get him and that they wanted him.

*at school
Bernard was
spoke to them
off only was
planning*

At this stage he believed that the men were possibly armed, although he did not see any guns.

He again tried to persuade them not to take the boy and pointed out that the school had been looking after boys for 60 years without any trouble from anyone else and that he had a duty to stand by them. He felt that they were determined to take him and were paying no heed to his arguments.

He took into account that they had kept their promise the day before by returning the boy, and considering the danger to other boys and staff members, he decided to allow the men to take the boy away. He then asked [REDACTED] to see to the matter. They left his office and he went to a pre-arranged appointment at Newtownards.

*boy is believed
they were
armed*

He returned at 5.00pm and discovered that some men had arrived at the school in a car shortly before 2.00pm and taken Gerard away. It was only then he knew which of the Teggart brothers the men were seeking. He was told the men had returned and had taken Bernard away and that neither boy had returned to the school.

[REDACTED]

He waited until 7.00pm before trying to discover their whereabouts. He went to the family home and was told by an older brother they were not there. The brother suggested that they may have gone to Bingo in Clonard Hall, but they were not there.

*brother says no one
can*

He returned to the school and called the casualty department at the RVH to enquire if either of the boys had been admitted.

Later he was contacted by the police at Newtownabbey enquiring about laundry marks on clothing they had recovered.

He made enquiries and identified that they were unique St Patrick's laundry numbers sewn in all items of clothing. The laundry numbers were allocated to Bernard.

He returned to Bernard's home and was told that Gerard had returned and was in bed. He then went to the RVH where he saw Bernard lying unconscious in bed. The doctor then informed police at Springfield Road Police Station of his identification of Bernard.

He did not know the men who took the boys away. He described them as follows,

1. 5'8", in his early 20's, very strong of stocky build, with fair to reddish collar length hair. He was wearing a denim jacket and trousers and a hat made of camouflage material.
2. 5'5", in his early 20's, very slim, with short darkish hair and wearing a dark cloth overcoat.
3. 5'5", in his early 20's of slight build.

again - lying down
about 11pm
Reported to
Police

HET Comment: [REDACTED] **BR 52** made no reference in his statement of when or whether he informed the police of Gerard and Brendan's abduction. A police report seems to indicate that the first time the police knew of Bernard's abduction from the school was when Alice identified Bernard to the police at the mortuary, just prior to the post-mortem examination, at 11.00am on November 13. This will be discussed further in 'Outcome of HET Review' section later in this report.

A 19 year old man was in the Antrim Road with his girlfriend close to Bellevue Park at 9.55pm on Monday, November 12, 1973, when he heard a gun shot. A few minutes later he saw an army patrol turn into the park. A man with a dog, who he had seen crossing into Bellevue Park came running out saying the UDR had just found a man who had been shot. Two minutes later two UDR soldiers approached him and he told them he had heard a shot and provided his details. He saw no one else and no vehicles leaving Bellevue Park onto the Antrim Road.

A 16 year old schoolgirl had been dropped off by her mother on the Antrim Road, at the junction with Haylewood Park, opposite the entrance to Bellevue Park at 10.00pm. She was going to continue her short journey home on foot while her mother went off to collect someone else.

Bernard and Gerard were taken to another house in Oldpark about 7.00pm, where they were held for an hour. They were then driven in a car for 10-15 minutes, until they came across an army road block in Antrim Road.

Tape which had been placed across their eyes was ripped off and they were ordered out of the car and told to walk along the pavement past the army checkpoint. One of the men got out with them and they walked through the check point unchallenged. Further along the road they got back into the car.

They were driven to a house in Glengormley, where they were locked in a bathroom. Minutes later, a man entered and asked which one of them was Bernard. Gerard lifted his head to look at the man but was hit and ordered not to look up.

Two girls then took Gerard out of the house and as he was leaving he heard Bernard crying and screaming. The girls drove to a main road and gave him three shillings (15p) and an anorak. He made his way home and told his mother what had happened.

HET Comment: Gerard did not describe the girls or give an age for them in his statement, but as the girls drove him away from the house, it would appear that they were at the least in their late teens.

At 10.02pm an army patrol discovered Bernard lying at the side of the approach road to the Floral Hall in Bellevue Park, Belfast. There was a piece of cardboard beside him with the word 'tout' written on it. Bernard had been shot in his head and was seriously injured but still alive. The police and an ambulance were called and arrived promptly.

Bernard was taken to the Royal Victoria Hospital (RVH), where he was treated for a gunshot wound to his head. The hospital staff tried to save his life but at 2.45am on Tuesday, November 13, 1973, Doctor Trevor Bell, pronounced him dead.

It was only in 2004 that the Provisional IRA admitted they murdered Bernard, saying that the killing '*should never have happened.*'

No one has been convicted for Bernard's murder.

He made enquiries and identified that they were unique St Patrick's laundry numbers sewn in all items of clothing. The laundry numbers were allocated to Bernard.

He returned to Bernard's home and was told that Gerard had returned and was in bed. He then went to the RVH where he saw Bernard lying unconscious in bed. The doctor then informed police at Springfield Road Police Station of his identification of Bernard.

He did not know the men who took the boys away. He described them as follows,

1. 5'8", in his early 20's, very strong of stocky build, with fair to reddish collar length hair. He was wearing a denim jacket and trousers and a hat made of camouflage material.
2. 5'5", in his early 20's, very slim, with short darkish hair and wearing a dark cloth overcoat.
3. 5'5", in his early 20's of slight build.

again - lying down
BR 52
HET Comment: *made no reference in his statement of when or whether he informed the police of Gerard and Brendan's abduction. A police report seems to indicate that the first time the police knew of Bernard's abduction from the school was when Alice identified Bernard to the police at the mortuary, just prior to the post-mortem examination, at 11.00am on November 13. This will be discussed further in 'Outcome of HET Review' section later in this report.*

A 19 year old man was in the Antrim Road with his girlfriend close to Bellevue Park at 9.55pm on Monday, November 12, 1973, when he heard a gun shot. A few minutes later he saw an army patrol turn into the park. A man with a dog, who he had seen crossing into Bellevue Park came running out saying the UDR had just found a man who had been shot. Two minutes later two UDR soldiers approached him and he told them he had heard a shot and provided his details. He saw no one else and no vehicles leaving Bellevue Park onto the Antrim Road.

A 16 year old schoolgirl had been dropped off by her mother on the Antrim Road, at the junction with Haylewood Park, opposite the entrance to Bellevue Park at 10.00pm. She was going to continue her short journey home on foot while her mother went off to collect someone else.

She then saw a white, old type Ford Cortina car, travelling very fast down the driveway from Bellevue Park. It stopped at the main Antrim Road where it remained stationary for a few moments as there was a lot of traffic. The car was very dirty and there were three men in it.

The driver was in his early 20's, well built with long dark hair. He had a large moustache which turned down around his mouth. There was another man in the front and another in the back. She did not see these men clearly. She turned around then and heard the car drive off, but didn't see if it went towards Glengormly or towards Belfast.

[REDACTED], a soldier of the Ulster Defence Regiment (UDR), was on mobile patrol on Monday, November 12, 1973, in Bellevue Park when at 10.02pm he saw Bernard lying at the side of the road with a cardboard sign beside him with the word 'tout' written on it.

He could see that Bernard had been shot in the head but that he was still alive, making noises. He remained with Bernard comforting him until the ambulance arrived with the police.

HET Comment: *Other statements were taken from members of the UDR patrol but they do not add to [REDACTED]'s account.*

Alice Harper, Bernard's sister, said that Bernard was one of 13 children in the family. He had been sent to St Patrick's Training School five or six years before but returned home at weekends.

She last saw Bernard at the home she shared with her husband, at 7.00pm on Sunday, November 11, 1973.

At 1.00am on November 14, the army called at the family home at 86, New Barnsley Crescent and informed them that Bernard had been shot and had been taken to the RVH.

At 4.00am her mother informed her that Bernard had died in hospital. She was also told that Bernard had been taken from St Patrick's Training School by someone the previous afternoon.

At 11.00am Alice went to the mortuary at the RVH where she identified Bernard to the police.

was going back to school.
wrong * mum in hospital
left home to go to hospital
petts crossed on arrival
to hospital added Bernard
Back to house + UDR soldier +

date

wrong

Bernard's identity was not known to police who initially only had a description of him. Detective Inspector Neill, at 10.56pm, arranged for a police officer to go to the Royal Victoria Hospital to recover Bernard's clothing to see if it could aid identification.

Local enquiries were conducted by police to trace witnesses and at 12.05am a 16 year old girl was found who possibly saw suspects leaving Bellevue Park, about 10.00pm, in a white Ford Cortina. She did not see a registration number and could only describe one occupant.

The HET could find no record of the description of the car being circulated by police, although this may have been done.

At 12.30am Bernard's description was circulated to the police and army to assist with his identification.

Bernard's clothing was examined at Newtownabbey Police Station and a laundry mark, '106', was found on each item of clothing. Detective Inspector Neill arranged for one of his officers to telephone all known male residential institutions in Belfast, including training schools, to identify the marks.

The police called St Patrick's School and informed them of the unknown youth being shot and being treated in the RVH. Brother **BR 52** confirmed that the mark was a unique St Patrick's laundry mark allocated to Bernard.

Brother **BR 52** then went to Bernard's home and established Gerard had returned safely and was in bed. He went to ward 21 in the RVH and verified that the youth who had been shot was Bernard. He confirmed the identification to the doctor who informed the police at Springfield Road. The time of his attendance at the hospital is not recorded.

Detective Inspector Neill recorded in his investigation log book that Bernard died at 2.45am. In the same log entry he also recorded Bernard's date of birth, his home address and that he and his twin brother were 'escapees' from St Patrick's Training School. There is no record of where this information originated, but it must have been supplied by Brother **BR 52**.

Due to weather conditions, the scene at Belleview Park was secured and preserved by police until daylight for a more detailed search and examination. It was then revisited by Detective Inspector Neill, photographed and searched but no bullet or bullet case was found.

Post-Mortem Examination

On Tuesday, November 13, 1973, at the mortuary of the Royal Victoria Hospital, Doctor Derek J. L. Carson, the deputy state pathologist for Northern Ireland, conducted a post-mortem examination of Bernard.

He recorded that the injury caused by a single bullet would have resulted in immediate unconsciousness and that it led to his death in hospital a few hours later. He also said that the bullet was fired at close range to Brendan's head. There were no significant signs of other violence.

Doctor Carson recorded the cause of Bernard's death as *'a gunshot wound to head'*.

Inquest Proceedings

On Thursday, October 3, 1974, an inquest into Bernard's death was held at The County Courthouse, Crumlin Road, Belfast, before the coroner, Mr J. H. S. Elliot sitting with a jury. An open verdict was returned.

The terminology open verdict was that used by coroners' courts in Northern Ireland at the time; it was given when a death had not been through the criminal courts process.

The coroner, after hearing the evidence, would not apportion blame in the matter of the death, but would be required to establish the time, day, date and the cause of death. As a result, an open verdict would often have been declared.

Bernard's identity was not known to police who initially only had a description of him. Detective Inspector Neill, at 10.56pm, arranged for a police officer to go to the Royal Victoria Hospital to recover Bernard's clothing to see if it could aid identification.

Local enquiries were conducted by police to trace witnesses and at 12.05am a 16 year old girl was found who possibly saw suspects leaving Bellevue Park, about 10.00pm, in a white Ford Cortina. She did not see a registration number and could only describe one occupant.

The HET could find no record of the description of the car being circulated by police, although this may have been done.

At 12.30am Bernard's description was circulated to the police and army to assist with his identification.

Bernard's clothing was examined at Newtownabbey Police Station and a laundry mark, '106', was found on each item of clothing. Detective Inspector Neill arranged for one of his officers to telephone all known male residential institutions in Belfast, including training schools, to identify the marks.

The police called St Patrick's School and informed them of the unknown youth being shot and being treated in the RVH. Brother **BR 52** confirmed that the mark was a unique St Patrick's laundry mark allocated to Bernard.

Brother **BR 52** then went to Bernard's home and established Gerard had returned safely and was in bed. He went to ward 21 in the RVH and verified that the youth who had been shot was Bernard. He confirmed the identification to the doctor who informed the police at Springfield Road. The time of his attendance at the hospital is not recorded.

Detective Inspector Neill recorded in his investigation log book that Bernard died at 2.45am. In the same log entry he also recorded Bernard's date of birth, his home address and that he and his twin brother were 'escapees' from St Patrick's Training School. There is no record of where this information originated, but it must have been supplied by Brother **BR 52**.

Due to weather conditions, the scene at Belleview Park was secured and preserved by police until daylight for a more detailed search and examination. It was then revisited by Detective Inspector Neill, photographed and searched but no bullet or bullet case was found.

It could not be established if Bernard had been shot where he was found. This was considered likely, however, given that a shot was heard in the vicinity of Bellevue Park and that Bernard was still alive when discovered by the army patrol.

HET Comment: There is no reference in the material recovered to show whether there was blood staining on the grass verge. There is a record that the scene examination had to be delayed until the following morning due to 'inclement weather' but did not expand on what this was. An examination of scene photographs taken the following day indicates that the ground was still wet and it is likely it had been raining.

An RUC mapping officer attended the scene and prepared detailed plans.

Bernard's family were informed of his murder and at 11.00am, his sister Alice, went to the mortuary at the RVH and identified Bernard to the police. After the identification Alice provided police with a statement. She complained that Bernard and Gerard had been taken in a taxi from the school the day before.

The general circumstances of the brothers being removed from the school were passed from Inspector Jackson to Detective Inspector Neill at 2.20pm. This was the first time the investigation team knew of the brothers being taken from the school, having been wrongly informed by the school they had escaped from there.

HET Comment: It is not known how Inspector Jackson, who is not mentioned elsewhere in the case papers, obtained this information. This issue will be discussed in the 'Outcome of HET Review' section later in this report.

It cannot now be established who gave Inspector Jackson this information but it is likely that Alice provided this information, which was only passed on after the completion of the statement.

After Bernard's formal identification a post-mortem examination was conducted, which identified that the bullet to his head had passed through him. There were minor scrape injuries consistent with a fall after he had been shot. Photographs were taken by police during the post-mortem examination.

It had been said in the press that the Ministry of Home Affairs was to conduct an investigation.

Detective Inspector Neill explained that he had only learned about the Teggart twins abductions from their sister after the post-mortem examination; the school had never divulged this information to him. He explained the reluctance of Canon Murphy and Mr Farrell, who was acting on his instructions, to allow Gerard Taggart to be interviewed.

He stated that Brother BR 52 had dictated a prepared statement to police but SPT 151 was too agitated to provide a statement. He reported however that an added difficulty was that SPT 151 and his wife lived in the (a nationalist area).

The HET has been unable to find any further correspondence replying to Detective Inspector Neill's request and can find no record of a Ministry of Home Affairs review into the school.

The investigation team made enquiries with the army at Carnmoney for details of military vehicle check points on Antrim Road on November 12. Gerard had said that he and Bernard, accompanied by one of their abductors, had walked through an army checkpoint. The result of this enquiry is not recorded.

Anonymous information

On Tuesday, November 13, 1973 the station duty officer at Glengormley Police Station was contacted by the Irish News. They had received a call at 11.45pm from a man who said, '*This is Captain Black of the UFF; a young man was picked up on the Antrim Road and executed as an IRA suspect*'.

This information was passed to the investigation team. There is no record of what credence, if any, the investigation team placed on this information.

HET Comment: The UDA was the largest paramilitary group in Northern Ireland and was formed in September 1971, from the amalgamation of a number of loyalist vigilante groups, commonly referred to as defence associations and was a legal association until 1992, when it was proscribed as a paramilitary organisation.

The UFF emerged from within the UDA in 1973 and is recognised as being the military wing of that organisation.

Motive

The motive for Bernard's murder appeared to be clear from the outset; Bernard was suspected of being an informant.

No admission was made by the Provisional IRA, but the ease with which the terrorists entered the school in west Belfast, and the location of the houses in nationalist areas where the brothers were detained, supported the police belief that the Provisional IRA was responsible for the murder.

Gerard said he was asked about Bernard being questioned by 'the Brits', which would appear to refer to the army and his arrest in August by the police. This line of questioning reinforced the police belief that the Provisional IRA suspected Bernard of being an informant.

Bernard was arrested by the army on August 30, 1973.

Bernard had committed a burglary in New Barnsley on August 16 and three days later was confronted by the owner of the house who made him give back some of the items he had stolen. He was however unable to give back the money he stole as he had spent it.

On August 30 1973, he was walking in New Barnsley when he saw a car with four young men in it, approaching him. He recognised two of the men in the car. Bernard realised they were after him because of the burglary and ran. He was caught and one of the men, who had a gun, tried to force him into the car, but he was rescued by a local person.

He ran into a nearby bar to seek refuge but was arrested shortly after by the army and was taken to Springfield Road Police Station. The HET is unable to say why the army was called to the bar but it could be that they had been alerted to the attempted abduction outside the bar.

He was interviewed and made a statement under caution. This statement was in the murder investigation papers recovered by the HET and would have been considered by Detective Inspector Neill, but the HET can find no other reference to it.

In the statement Bernard admitted the burglary and provided the surnames of two youths he recognised in the car prior to his arrest.

The Belfast Telegraph

Tuesday, November 13, 1973, carried a headline '*Shot boy and his twin were abducted.*' The report described how an inquiry had been ordered by The Ministry of Home Affairs into why Bernard and his brother had been abducted from their training school. The report added that their disappearance had not been reported to the security forces. It described their abduction and that Bernard was later found shot dead with a placard placed beside him with the words '*tout*' written on it. The report included a photograph of Bernard.

Thursday, November 15, 1973, carried a headline '*Abducted boy's killing vile and brutal, says CCDC.*' It reported that the Central Citizens Defence Committee had described Bernard's abduction and killing as '*vile and brutal*' and that it marked a new low.

The Irish News

Sunday, November 11, 1973, carried three separate death notices from Bernard's family and friends.

Friday, November 17, 1973, carried a headline, '*Murder of Bernard Teggart: Priests pose four questions.*' The story related to Father Denis Faul of Dungannon and Fathers Aodh Bennett and Alexander Reid of Clonard Monastery. The questions they posed were:

1. What kind of an organisation would feel threatened by a boy with the mental age of eight?
2. What kind of '*justice*' did this boy receive who was ill-treated and murdered without trial?
3. What kind of moral standards operate in people who are responsible for this child murder?
4. What kind of Irishman would condone, support or be associated with the people who did this deed?

The school had a duty of care to the boys. This was belatedly demonstrated by Canon Murphy, who correctly identified the vulnerability of Gerard to the police, not allowing him to be interviewed and obtaining legal representation for him.

That duty of care was not exercised when the school allowed the abductions, although SPT 151 gave context to the difficulties the school was facing. His description of suspected terrorists entering the school on a regular basis demonstrates very intimidating and uncomfortable times. He also pointed out that co-operation with these groups in the past had never resulted in such tragedy.

The RUC investigation team were very concerned at the time about the conduct of the school, its failure to give the true circumstances of the abductions and its lack of co-operation after the murder.

A report was submitted by Detective Inspector Neill on November 15, to an Assistant Chief Constable, outlining his concerns about the school and seeking any further information about the school from the Ministry of Home Affairs. A newspaper report indicated the Ministry of Home Affairs were conducting an enquiry into the school.

The HET has carried out searches, including the National Archive, Kew, for the details and results of this enquiry but can find no further references to it.

The HET acknowledges that it was the Provisional IRA who murdered Bernard, however the school failed lamentably to fulfill the duty of care towards him when allowing his abduction and failing to report it to the authorities. It is unclear whether they ever acknowledged this or apologized to the family.

School reports

The HET has identified some reports that would appear to indicate that, despite occasionally absconding, Gerard and Bernard were reasonably happy at the school.

A report from a teacher described Bernard, or Barney as he was known, as an innocent victim, treated harshly at times by some boys, but looked upon with unusual understanding by others.

The school had a duty of care to the boys. This was belatedly demonstrated by Canon Murphy, who correctly identified the vulnerability of Gerard to the police, not allowing him to be interviewed and obtaining legal representation for him.

That duty of care was not exercised when the school allowed the abductions, although SPT 151 gave context to the difficulties the school was facing. His description of suspected terrorists entering the school on a regular basis demonstrates very intimidating and uncomfortable times. He also pointed out that co-operation with these groups in the past had never resulted in such tragedy.

The RUC investigation team were very concerned at the time about the conduct of the school, its failure to give the true circumstances of the abductions and its lack of co-operation after the murder.

A report was submitted by Detective Inspector Neill on November 15, to an Assistant Chief Constable, outlining his concerns about the school and seeking any further information about the school from the Ministry of Home Affairs. A newspaper report indicated the Ministry of Home Affairs were conducting an enquiry into the school.

The HET has carried out searches, including the National Archive, Kew, for the details and results of this enquiry but can find no further references to it.

The HET acknowledges that it was the Provisional IRA who murdered Bernard, however the school failed lamentably to fulfill the duty of care towards him when allowing his abduction and failing to report it to the authorities. It is unclear whether they ever acknowledged this or apologized to the family.

School reports

The HET has identified some reports that would appear to indicate that, despite occasionally absconding, Gerard and Bernard were reasonably happy at the school.

A report from a teacher described Bernard, or Barney as he was known, as an innocent victim, treated harshly at times by some boys, but looked upon with unusual understanding by others.

A meeting of the Board of Management was held in the School on Friday 1st June '73 at 11 a.m. His Lordship Most Rev. Dr. Phelbin presided. Present were Rt. Rev. Mgr. Mullally V.C. Very Rev Canon Murphy P.P., Canon Montague P.P., Fr. McNamara P.P. and Fr. Murphy Adm. Apologies were received from Canon McSparran Fr. Teggart and Fr. McGarry.

The minutes of the previous meeting were read confirmed and signed. A general discussion then took place on the Draft Agreement required to establish the Management Board of the 5th Training School. Canon Murphy drew attention to paragraph 2 of the second Schedule and expressed the opinion that it was strongly worded and feared members could be expelled at will. Eventually Fr. McNamara proposed that the draft agreement be accepted subject to clarification of above paragraph. Mgr. Mullally seconded the motion. The second item on the agenda - Delinquency '73 involved all members in serious discussion for a considerable time. Some stressed the growing problem of absenteeism in schools, others believed recent researches into the effects of the troubles on youth were inaccurate while others asked how St. Patrick's managed to cope with recent admissions. Proposed plans to deal with problem children were then discussed. Br. **BR 52** spoke of the need for an intensive care unit on the campus but stressed that an intermediate type of security would be sufficient. The unit should be a separate complex. Fr. Murphy feared its presence would invite extremists along. The Board were satisfied that in view of their discussion and their understanding of the problem that such a unit was an essential need at present and probably for several years to come. The meeting closed with prayer.
+ William J. Phelan
10 May 1974

October 23, 1978

Information was received in September 1978 that a named man of a given address was involved in Bernard's murder.

He was arrested on October 23, and interviewed by CID officers from Newtownabbey at Castlereagh Police Office. He denied all knowledge of the murder.

He also denied membership of the Provisional IRA, although he admitted associating with them while a prisoner in the Maze Prison. He was released without being charged on October 25, 1978.

Admission of responsibility

In October 2004, the Provisional IRA issued a statement in the republican newspaper *An Phoblacht*, saying it had investigated Bernard's death following a request from his family. They said, *'We can now confirm that Bernard Teggart was shot by the IRA. We offer our sincere apologies to the Teggart family for the pain and grief we have caused. The killing should not have happened.'*

No one has ever been charged with Bernard's murder.

Review of Exhibits

Bernard was found in Bellevue Park on a grass bank beside the road leading to a car park; the bank sloped downward towards the road. The scene was examined by Constable Todd (SOCO), and forensic scientist J. Milburn at 10.00am on Tuesday, November 13.

Nothing was found on the bank or in the earth of the bank to indicate where the shooting had taken place. A thorough search was made for a spent bullet or ejected bullet case but none was found.

At 11.30am Constable Todd went to the mortuary at the Royal Victoria Hospital and was present during the post-mortem examination of Bernard.

During the course of the examination he took possession of toxicological samples for analysis and future comparison if suitable items for comparison were recovered. There is no record of any items being submitted thereafter for comparison.

HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE INQUIRY 1922-1995

On Behalf of the De La Salle Order

BR 45

Statement 2

Abduction and Murder of Bernard Teggart

EXHIBIT 1



Historical Enquiries Team

Review Summary Report

Concerning the murder of

Bernard Brendan Teggart

Died on Tuesday, November 13, 1973



HISTORICAL ENQUIRIES TEAM / COMMAND TEAM
4 Ravernet Road, Sprucefield, Lisburn, County Antrim, BT27 5NB Northern Ireland
Tel: 028 9258 9019 Fax: 028 9258 9016

CONTENTS

	<u>PAGE</u>
Description of the role and function of the Historical Enquiries Team	1-5
The murder of Bernard Brendan Teggart	6-18
HET Review of Original Investigation	19-30
Outcome of HET Review	31-39
HET Conclusions	40-41
Review of Open Source Material	42-46
Questions raised by you and your family	47-48
What happens now	49

Review Summary Report

The murder of Bernard Brendan Teggart, who was shot in Bellevue Park, Belfast, at 10.00pm on Monday, November 12, 1973. He died in hospital in the early hours of Tuesday, November 13, 1973, as a result of a gunshot wound to his head.

Introduction

The Historical Enquiries Team (HET) has now completed its review process. This report will set out for you the details that we have been able to establish about the incident and the responses we have to the questions that you asked us. The report begins with a description of the team's role and continues with the specific details of your case. It is yours to keep. You will have the opportunity to discuss it with our staff and raise any further questions that you may have.

Role and Function of the Historical Enquiries Team

What is the role of the Historical Enquiries Team?

The HET was created in 2005 and began work at the end of January 2006. It has three objectives:

- *To assist in bringing a measure of resolution to those families of victims whose deaths are attributable to 'The Troubles' between 1969 and the signing of the Belfast Agreement in April 1998.*
- *To re-examine all deaths attributable to 'The Troubles' and ensure that all investigative and evidential opportunities are subject to thorough and exhaustive examination in a manner that satisfies the Police Service of Northern Ireland's obligation of an effective investigation as outlined in Article 2, Code of Ethics for PSNI.*
- *To do so in a way that commands the confidence of the wider community.*

How will it do this?

With regard to every death, we look at a number of review factors:

- The original case records
- Exhibits
- Any fingerprint evidence
- Family concerns
- Any intelligence records
- The original investigation
- Any linked issues (analysis)
- Any open source material (books, newspaper articles, television programmes, internet, public records etc).

Our approach to the investigative process is designed to concentrate on what evidence, if any, exists, what potential remains for gathering new evidence - either from new lines of enquiry, missed opportunities, advances in forensic science - or any opportunities that exist for turning existing information/intelligence into evidence. Each case is overseen by a HET lead senior investigating officer.

Our contract is with the families; by this, we mean that we deal with families on a basis of honesty, trust and confidentiality. We approach each case independently, no case is deemed more important than another, and we make no moral or political judgement about the victims. We strive at all times to maintain the dignity of the dead. We seek only to conduct a factual review to a modern, professional policing standard, to determine whether any additional evidence can be found, and we will always ask families what questions they would like us to try to answer. We will respond with as much information as we can, subject to legal and ethical considerations.

The HET is an operationally independent unit of the PSNI, which reports directly to the chief constable. To meet concerns around independence, HET developed a structure that has separate investigative units, with some teams composed exclusively of staff with no previous connection to the former RUC or the PSNI.

How does the review process work?

It is a five-phase process:

- Collection
- Assessment
- Review
- Focussed re-investigation
- Resolution

Generally, cases are taken in chronological order, although HET will exempt cases in certain situations, for example if relatives of the victims are themselves very ill.

Collection

HET staff have searched all the police estate, including all buildings, stores, headquarters and storage facilities. Simultaneously, Forensic Science Northern Ireland reviewed all the exhibits in its stores. Checks were made with the Public Record Office of Northern Ireland, gathering all available relevant material and inquest files. The PSNI Fingerprint Bureau has upgraded its databases and many thousands of additional records of finger marks have been identified for re-examination. We have made agreements with other agencies to provide us with access to relevant records and information that they hold. We research records in newspaper libraries, television archives and examine the many books that have been written about events in Northern Ireland.

While the HET is confident that our collection phase was comprehensive, we cannot rule out the possibility that in future new material could be recovered. If this occurs, then the case will be re-assessed and families fully updated of the outcome.

Assessment

This is the beginning of the review process, and involves identifying and tracing relatives, to contact them and ascertain their wishes and any questions that they have. Sometimes this is straightforward, as in many cases families get in contact with us; other times this is far more challenging, as with the passage of time, people have moved away.

HET has established dedicated tracing teams who liaise with many agencies and support groups from within Northern Ireland and other parts of the world. Once traced, HET will talk to families and explain the objectives of the HET and ascertain family wishes and/or concerns.

Original case papers are retrieved, relevant open source material is identified, analysts start work on assessments of patterns or links, and any exhibits remaining are brought out and considered for re-examination using the latest scientific techniques.

Review

The case is passed to one of our teams, either an internal or external team in line with the wishes of the family. The lead senior investigating officer assesses the case against the review factors outlined above, and decides whether there are any opportunities to gather evidence and/or answer family questions based on issues that emerge from the review process. Depending upon the outcome of this assessment, the lead senior investigating officer will authorise the investigation of any lines of enquiry that are necessary.

Focussed Re-investigation

Re-investigations are initially focussed on the new opportunities identified to gather further evidence or answer family questions. The whole case is kept under review while these are completed, to monitor whether developments change our understanding or perception of existing evidence or the circumstances of the case. Focussed investigations can be incremental, leading to a wider review if appropriate. This means that if our work uncovers new information or evidence we re-assess the whole investigation to take account of it.

The investigation will be progressed and if sufficient additional evidence is found, the case will be pursued through the criminal justice system. At the end of this process, whether or not a court case follows, the file enters the last phase of resolution.

Resolution

A review summary report (RSR) is completed and delivered to families.

The RSR details as much information as possible about the case, and explains the work undertaken by the original investigation, and discusses intelligence, exhibits and forensic evidence; it contains an objective assessment by the HET of the evidence available and the handling of the case. HET deals with families on a basis of confidentiality and honesty; the RSR is prepared in line with the principle of maximum permissible disclosure. HET will explain at the outset that it must comply with legal and ethical considerations. Context is always an important factor when HET explains its findings to families; finding missed opportunities does not mean that they can always be re-created.

Families will always be able to seek further clarification of any issue or make any representations they want, and, if necessary, there will be the option of a meeting with the senior managers of the HET to resolve any issues of concern.

Circumstances of the murder of Bernard Brendan Teggart

This part of the report explains the circumstances of the murder of Bernard Brendan Teggart, who was shot in Bellevue Park, Belfast, at 10.00pm on Monday, November 12, 1973.

Bernard, a catholic, was 15 at the time of his murder. He was born on Friday, April 4, 1958 and was a schoolboy. Bernard was one of 13 children; five girls and eight boys.

The family lived at 86, New Barnsley Crescent, Belfast. Bernard's mother, Isobel, known as Bella, was widowed when her husband, Daniel was killed by the army on Monday, August 9, 1971, on Springfield Road, Belfast. Bella died in 2005.

Bernard's siblings were Alice, Margaret, Bernadette, Kathleen, James, Daniel, Isobel, Gerard, John, Anthony, Peter and David. Gerard was Bernard's twin.

Alice Harper, Bernard's sister, and her brothers Peter and Anthony, supported by solicitor, Pdraig O'Muirigh, have engaged with the HET on behalf of the family.

Bernard experienced a troubled life at times. He was a member of a large family that lived in a socially deprived area and although his parents did what they could for their children, it was very difficult for them. The death of their father, who was shot by the army in disputed circumstances at the age of 44, was devastating for the family.

Bernard and his twin brother Gerard had learning difficulties and both were reported as having a mental age of eight or nine when they were 15. He had been in trouble with the police for petty offences and had been sent to St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast as a result of a Training School Order, imposed by Belfast Juvenile Court on April 17, 1968. He was recommitted to the school on April 22, 1970.

For a time he was living at the De la Salle Boy's Home, Kircubbin with Gerard. Gerard was also committed to St Patrick's Training School on April 22, 1970.

St Patrick's Training School was an approved school, run by the De La Salle Brothers and most of the children had been sent there by the juvenile court after offending. Other children went there because of their special needs.

During weekdays Bernard and Gerard stayed at St Patrick's, in the care of the principal. On some weekends they returned to their home in the care of their mother.

On Sunday, November 11, 1973, **SPT 151** a teacher at St Patrick's, found three Provisional IRA men questioning Gerard in the woodwork room. Such uninvited visits from the Provisional IRA and men from similar groups were not condoned but were reluctantly tolerated by the school. The men insisted that Gerard had to go with them to be questioned by others and he would be returned to the school an hour later. The teacher told the men that Gerard had learning difficulties and was vulnerable, but reluctantly about 3.40pm, allowed the men to take Gerard away.

Gerard was taken to a house in the New Barnsley area of Belfast where he was questioned about why he had been stopped by the security forces earlier that morning. He was also questioned about Bernard. He was returned to the school unharmed, at 4.40pm. This was reported to the principal, Brother **BR 52**, who took no other action regarding the removal of Gerard.

At 12.20pm the following day, three different men arrived at the school in a black taxi and informed **SPT 151** and the principal that they wanted to take Bernard away for an hour to question him. The men were more intimidating and the principal believed they may have been armed. After the principal reluctantly consented to Bernard being taken, one of the men said it was Gerard they wanted to question and this was agreed.

SPT 151 handed over Gerard to the men but only realised Bernard had been taken as well about 2.05pm. As the principal had initially agreed to the men taking Bernard, he believed all would be well.

Gerard was taken by the men to another house in the New Barnsley area and was questioned about Bernard and what he had said to the police when he was arrested in August.

About an hour later, Gerard saw Bernard being questioned, and it was only then he realised that Bernard had been taken from the school and brought to the house.

Bernard and Gerard were taken to another house in Oldpark about 7.00pm, where they were held for an hour. They were then driven in a car for 10-15 minutes, until they came across an army road block in Antrim Road.

Tape which had been placed across their eyes was ripped off and they were ordered out of the car and told to walk along the pavement past the army checkpoint. One of the men got out with them and they walked through the check point unchallenged. Further along the road they got back into the car.

They were driven to a house in Glengormley, where they were locked in a bathroom. Minutes later, a man entered and asked which one of them was Bernard. Gerard lifted his head to look at the man but was hit and ordered not to look up.

Two girls then took Gerard out of the house and as he was leaving he heard Bernard crying and screaming. The girls drove to a main road and gave him three shillings (15p) and an anorak. He made his way home and told his mother what had happened.

HET Comment: Gerard did not describe the girls or give an age for them in his statement, but as the girls drove him away from the house, it would appear that they were at the least in their late teens.

At 10.02pm an army patrol discovered Bernard lying at the side of the approach road to the Floral Hall in Bellevue Park, Belfast. There was a piece of cardboard beside him with the word 'tout' written on it. Bernard had been shot in his head and was seriously injured but still alive. The police and an ambulance were called and arrived promptly.

Bernard was taken to the Royal Victoria Hospital (RVH), where he was treated for a gunshot wound to his head. The hospital staff tried to save his life but at 2.45am on Tuesday, November 13, 1973, Doctor Trevor Bell, pronounced him dead.

It was only in 2004 that the Provisional IRA admitted they murdered Bernard, saying that the killing '*should never have happened.*'

No one has been convicted for Bernard's murder.

Witnesses

Witness accounts given to police in any investigation are written down and referred to as statements. If they are used in judicial proceedings, they are regarded as being within the public domain and details of the person making the statement can be made public.

Some accounts were also given at the inquest proceedings, these are referred to as depositions and are regarded as within the public domain, and as a consequence, those witnesses can be named in this report.

Statements that were not used during the inquest or other public proceedings have never been in the public domain; the HET must observe the provisions of the Data Protection Act, and those statement providers cannot be named in this section of the report, although summaries of their evidence will be provided.

Statement makers who were acting in an official capacity (such as police officers or doctors) can be identified.

Witness Accounts

Gerard Teggart had been at St Patrick's with his brother Brendan for about six years. He was in the junior part of the school at 4.00pm on Sunday, November 11, 1973, when two men told him he had to go with them for an hour. SPT 151, a schoolteacher was present. He was taken away in a car by the men.

He was taken to a house in the New Barnsley area of Belfast where he was questioned about having been *'lifted by the Brits'* earlier that morning. They questioned him about Bernard and then returned him to the school.

About 1.20pm the following day, three different men came to the school and took him to another house in the New Barnsley area, where they questioned him about Bernard and what he had said to the police when he was arrested in August. He was then taken to an upstairs room.

About an hour later he saw the men questioning Bernard, asking him what names he had given to the police. They said, *'If you don't tell us what you told the police we will shoot Gerard'*.

About 7.00pm, Gerard and Bernard were taken from the house and driven to a house in Oldpark where they were held for half an hour.

Tape was placed across their eyes and they were taken from the house and driven away in a car. About 15 minutes later one of the men in the car said that there was an army road block ahead; the tape was then ripped from their faces. They were told to get out of the car and to walk along the foot path. He realised they were on the Antrim Road.

One of the men walked with them past the army check point. The car then drew up beside them and picked them up. They were driven to a house in Glengormley and were locked in an upstairs bathroom. There was a green chair in the bathroom, and a mirror against a broken window. He also recalled there was another boy in the house, who was tied up.

A few minutes later a man entered the room and asked which of them was Bernard. Gerard lifted his head and the man hit him and ordered him not to look up. Two girls then took him out of the house and as he was leaving he heard Bernard crying and screaming. The girls drove to a main road and let him go, giving him three shillings and an anorak.

He walked along the road until he saw a man working on his car. He offered to help the man push the car and in return the man gave him a lift into Belfast, where he got a taxi home. He told his mother that some men had taken Bernard and were going to keep him for a fortnight.

HET Comment: *There is no record of what enquiries were conducted about the boy Gerard had seen tied up in the house he was detained in. This will be referred to in the 'Outcome of HET Review' section, later in this report.*

SPT 151

, a teacher at St Patrick's, just after lunchtime on Sunday, November 11, 1973, was told that Gerard Teggart was being interviewed in the woodwork room by three men. He was not surprised as over the years all kinds of organisations, vigilantes and associations, came and went and the school had learned to live with it.

He went to the woodwork room and for a few moments listened to the men question Gerard. He could see that Gerard was taken aback and decided to intervene. He invited the oldest looking man outside the room. The man left the room with him but was followed by one of the other men who stood behind him during the conversation.

He asked them who they were but they declined to answer. He told them he was unhappy about the verbal treatment they were subjecting Gerard to.

He told them that Gerard was a boy with a mental age of nine, who had little education and would probably answer yes or no if he believed that was the answer the men wanted to hear. The man who followed them out told him they were aware of that as they knew Gerard well.

He asked them what it was they wanted and they told him they were going to take Gerard away from the school for an hour. He told them that he could not permit that as he was responsible for the boy. He offered to make a room available so they could speak to him at the school, but they rejected the offer, claiming that the questioning would be conducted by others. He then offered to make the room available to the person who wanted to carry out the questioning. He was told that the person could not come to the school. They then told him that they would take Gerard away.

They were not abusive or threatening but they were very firm about what they had come to do. He gave his objections and expressed his disapproval for about half an hour. They assured him that Gerard would be returned within an hour and as Gerard appeared to be less anxious he let the three men take him about 3.40pm.

SPT 151 told Brother BR 52 what had happened and he agreed it was very worrying, but after 10 minutes of talking Brother BR 52 left him. At 4.40pm Gerard, accompanied by the three men, returned, smiling.

The men spoke to him about their willingness to assist the school with absconders, offering to return them to the school as and when they came across them. They were very friendly and appeared to be genuine in their offer of help. When they left he telephoned Brother BR 52 and told him of Gerard's return.

At 12.20pm the following day, two men who he thought were workmen, entered his office and he signalled them to wait while he finished a telephone call. When he finished the call they then said they wanted to speak to [redacted] and he told them [redacted] was on night duty. They said the [redacted] SPT 158 who he was speaking to on the telephone would do instead.

HET Comment: It is likely that the two men wished to speak with [redacted] SPT 151 having been supplied with this name by the Provisional IRA members who took Gerard the day before, but mistakenly they asked for [redacted]. It would appear to be co-incidence that a person called [redacted] was on night duty.

Suspecting the men were connected to the three men from the day before, he asked them what their business was and they said they had come to take away Bernard, who they called Barney.

He told them that if they wanted to speak to him they must do it on the school premises. They told him that someone else would be questioning him.

He suggested that the person would have to come to the school, but they said that Bernard must go with them. He told them that he could not agree to that and they would have to see Brother **BR 52**

He took the men, who were more sinister and threatening than the men the day before, to Brother **BR 52**'s office. They declined an offer to sit and remained standing with their hands in their pockets.

They insisted that Bernard must go with them and that he would be needed for about an hour. Brother **BR 52** and himself tried to dissuade them for 20 minutes. Brother **BR 52** then relented and gave his permission, telling him to find Bernard.

As he was leaving the office another man was standing outside the door. **SPT 151** told the man he was going to find Bernard but the man said that it was Gerard that they wanted. Brother **BR 52** nodded his approval to go and get Gerard.

He found Gerard in the dining room and waited until he finished his lunch. He took him to the three men and they left in a black taxi at 1.20pm.

SPT 151 went home for lunch and when he returned at 2.05pm saw an empty taxi at the school and assumed that Gerard had returned. He went into the school building and discovered that members of staff were looking for Bernard. They asked him if Bernard would be allowed out for an hour. Brother **BR 52** had left the school and, as Gerard had been allowed out by him, he could see no reason why he shouldn't allow this.

*HET Comment: It is not clear in **SPT 151**'s statement as to whether authority was being sought for Bernard to be allowed out for an hour with whoever had arrived in the taxi. The context of the remainder of the statement would suggest men had returned to take Bernard away.*

At 3.05pm he made enquiries to see if Gerard and Bernard had returned; they had not. When the school closed at 3.30pm he established they had still not returned and became worried.

He went to the De La Salle Brothers Communal House, within the school grounds and asked where Brother **BR 52** was but the De La Salle Brothers would not tell him. He suggested that the police should be informed, but the Brothers said that neither Brother **BR 52** nor the police should be told at that time.

At 5.00pm Brother **BR 52** came to his room and was very worried. They discussed calling the police or someone in authority locally. However no one from the school reported the twins missing or the circumstances of their being taken.

HET Comment: This will be discussed further in 'Outcome of HET' section later in this report.

At 6.50pm they went out looking for the twins. They went to the Teggart family home but they were not there and they tried Clonard Hall where they sometimes played Bingo.

They could not find the twins and returned to the school. He went home at 10.30pm and heard of Bernard's murder the following morning.

Brother **BR 52** was the principal of St Patrick's Training School. He was seen by police at 4.00pm on November 13 and dictated and signed a statement. He said that Gerard and Bernard Teggart were originally committed as being in need of care to the De La Salle home in Kircubbin. However they could not settle there and had been transferred to St Patrick's. He said that they regularly absconded and had been in trouble with the police.

At 3.10pm on Sunday, November 11, 1973, he was informed by **SPT 151**, a senior staff member, that three men had called at the school and taken Gerard away to be questioned.

He was told that the men had been very insistent that Gerard was allowed to leave the school with them. The men said that they would return Gerard within an hour, a promise that they honored.

At 1.00pm the following day he received a telephone call from **SPT 151** who told him that there were two men with him in his office demanding that they be allowed to take away one of the Teggart brothers from the school to be questioned.

*mailed back
now in
trouble...*

*checked
11/11/73*

He told **SPT 151** to bring the men to his office and he arrived shortly after with them.

The men told him they wanted to question Teggart further. He asked them what they were going to question him about and they said that they had only been sent to collect him. He suggested they question him at the school in his presence. They said that they would not be doing the questioning and that they were there just to collect him. He asked what would happen if he did not allow them to take him. They said that they had been sent to get him and that they wanted him.

*at 11.15
Bernard was
spoke to them
off to only was
Hawthorn*

At this stage he believed that the men were possibly armed, although he did not see any guns.

He again tried to persuade them not to take the boy and pointed out that the school had been looking after boys for 60 years without any trouble from anyone else and that he had a duty to stand by them. He felt that they were determined to take him and were paying no heed to his arguments.

He took into account that they had kept their promise the day before by returning the boy, and considering the danger to other boys and staff members, he decided to allow the men to take the boy away. He then asked **SPT 151** to see to the matter. They left his office and he went to a pre-arranged appointment at Newtownards.

*about 10.15
they were
armed*

He returned at 5.00pm and discovered that some men had arrived at the school in a car shortly before 2.00pm and taken Gerard away. It was only then he knew which of the Teggart brothers the men were seeking. He was told the men had returned and had taken Bernard away and that neither boy had returned to the school.



He waited until 7.00pm before trying to discover their whereabouts. He went to the family home and was told by an older brother they were not there. The brother suggested that they may have gone to Bingo in Clonard Hall, but they were not there.

*brother says no one
can*

He returned to the school and called the casualty department at the RVH to enquire if either of the boys had been admitted.

Later he was contacted by the police at Newtownabbey enquiring about laundry marks on clothing they had recovered.

He made enquiries and identified that they were unique St Patrick's laundry numbers sewn in all items of clothing. The laundry numbers were allocated to Bernard.

He returned to Bernard's home and was told that Gerard had returned and was in bed. He then went to the RVH where he saw Bernard lying unconscious in bed. The doctor then informed police at Springfield Road Police Station of his identification of Bernard.

He did not know the men who took the boys away. He described them as follows,

1. 5'8", in his early 20's, very strong of stocky build, with fair to reddish collar length hair. He was wearing a denim jacket and trousers and a hat made of camouflage material.
2. 5'5", in his early 20's, very slim, with short darkish hair and wearing a dark cloth overcoat.
3. 5'5", in his early 20's of slight build.

again - lying down - about 11.00am

HET Comment: **BR 52** made no reference in his statement of when or whether he informed the police of Gerard and Brendan's abduction. A police report seems to indicate that the first time the police knew of Bernard's abduction from the school was when Alice identified Bernard to the police at the mortuary, just prior to the post-mortem examination, at 11.00am on November 13. This will be discussed further in 'Outcome of HET Review' section later in this report.

A 19 year old man was in the Antrim Road with his girlfriend close to Bellevue Park at 9.55pm on Monday, November 12, 1973, when he heard a gun shot. A few minutes later he saw an army patrol turn into the park. A man with a dog, who he had seen crossing into Bellevue Park came running out saying the UDR had just found a man who had been shot. Two minutes later two UDR soldiers approached him and he told them he had heard a shot and provided his details. He saw no one else and no vehicles leaving Bellevue Park onto the Antrim Road.

A 16 year old schoolgirl had been dropped off by her mother on the Antrim Road, at the junction with Haylewood Park, opposite the entrance to Bellevue Park at 10.00pm. She was going to continue her short journey home on foot while her mother went off to collect someone else.

She then saw a white, old type Ford Cortina car, travelling very fast down the driveway from Bellevue Park. It stopped at the main Antrim Road where it remained stationary for a few moments as there was a lot of traffic. The car was very dirty and there were three men in it.

The driver was in his early 20's, well built with long dark hair. He had a large moustache which turned down around his mouth. There was another man in the front and another in the back. She did not see these men clearly. She turned around then and heard the car drive off, but didn't see if it went towards Glengormly or towards Belfast.

[REDACTED], a soldier of the Ulster Defence Regiment (UDR), was on mobile patrol on Monday, November 12, 1973, in Bellevue Park when at 10.02pm he saw Bernard lying at the side of the road with a cardboard sign beside him with the word 'tout' written on it.

He could see that Bernard had been shot in the head but that he was still alive, making noises. He remained with Bernard comforting him until the ambulance arrived with the police.

HET Comment: *Other statements were taken from members of the UDR patrol but they do not add to [REDACTED]'s account.*

Alice Harper, Bernard's sister, said that Bernard was one of 13 children in the family. He had been sent to St Patrick's Training School five or six years before but returned home at weekends.

She last saw Bernard at the home she shared with her husband, at 7.00pm on Sunday, November 11, 1973.

At 1.00am on November 14, the army called at the family home at 86, New Barnsley Crescent and informed them that Bernard had been shot and had been taken to the RVH.

At 4.00am her mother informed her that Bernard had died in hospital. She was also told that Bernard had been taken from St Patrick's Training School by someone the previous afternoon.

At 11.00am Alice went to the mortuary at the RVH where she identified Bernard to the police.

was going back to school.
wrong * mum in hospital
left home to go to hospital
petts crossed on arrival
to hospital added Bernard
Back to house + UDR soldier

date 15

wrong

Constable Alan Mounce, an RUC mapping officer, prepared a detailed plan of the area where Bernard was discovered.

Doctor Trevor Bell, the house surgeon at the RVH, treated Bernard when he was admitted with a gunshot wound to his head. Despite carrying out ventilation and resuscitation on Bernard, there was no hope of recovery for him. Bernard died at 2.45am on Tuesday, November 13, 1973.

Constable John McIlroy, a police photographer, attended the post-mortem examination of Bernard at the RVH, at 11.00am on Tuesday, November 13, 1973 and took photographs at the request of the pathologist.

Later he went to Bellevue Park, where Bernard was found and photographed the scene. He produced the photographs in an album.

Detective Constable James Hardy was at the mortuary at the RVH when Alice identified Bernard to him. He then identified Bernard to the pathologist who conducted the post-mortem examination.

Detective Inspector Hugh Neill informed the coroner at the inquest that Bernard had been found by the UDR unconscious, having been shot in the head. There was a card bearing the word, 'tout' beside him.

He described how the police identified Bernard through a laundry tag on his clothing.

He described the circumstances of Gerard and Brendan being taken from the school and that the police had not been informed by St Patrick's that they had been taken away.

The police carried out a search of the area where he had been found but the police could not establish whether he had been shot there or elsewhere. He said that despite extensive enquiries no-one had been arrested or charged with Bernard's murder.

HET Comment: Although Detective Inspector Neill said that no arrests had been made, this was incorrect. Details of the arrests are provided later in this report.

Post-Mortem Examination

On Tuesday, November 13, 1973, at the mortuary of the Royal Victoria Hospital, Doctor Derek J. L. Carson, the deputy state pathologist for Northern Ireland, conducted a post-mortem examination of Bernard.

He recorded that the injury caused by a single bullet would have resulted in immediate unconsciousness and that it led to his death in hospital a few hours later. He also said that the bullet was fired at close range to Brendan's head. There were no significant signs of other violence.

Doctor Carson recorded the cause of Bernard's death as *'a gunshot wound to head'*.

Inquest Proceedings

On Thursday, October 3, 1974, an inquest into Bernard's death was held at The County Courthouse, Crumlin Road, Belfast, before the coroner, Mr J. H. S. Elliot sitting with a jury. An open verdict was returned.

The terminology open verdict was that used by coroners' courts in Northern Ireland at the time; it was given when a death had not been through the criminal courts process.

The coroner, after hearing the evidence, would not apportion blame in the matter of the death, but would be required to establish the time, day, date and the cause of death. As a result, an open verdict would often have been declared.

HET Review of Original Investigation

As part of the review process, the HET recovered and considered the following documentation:

- Eighteen statements
- Nine depositions
- RUC investigation file
- Crime report
- Investigation log book
- Plans made of the area where Bernard was found
- Photographs taken at the location where Bernard was found and during the post-mortem examination
- Pathologist's report
- Inquest file
- Intelligence file.

Initial action at the scene

Bernard was found by a UDR patrol within minutes of a shot being heard by a couple at a bus stop on the Antrim Road. Neither the couple nor the army patrol saw anyone leaving the scene in a car or by foot.

The UDR patrol immediately called for an ambulance and police assistance.

There is no statement from the ambulance crew or documentation identifying the time they arrived at the scene, what they were able to do for Bernard, or what time they took him to hospital. There is a statement from the doctor at the hospital describing Bernard's medical treatment and certifying his death, but it does not include the time he arrived at the hospital.

The army patrol looked for witnesses in the area, identifying the couple at the bus stop who heard a shot being fired. They also identified another man who was in the vicinity and the registration numbers of four cars in the park and their driver's details. The investigation team obtained no useful information from follow up enquiries with the people whose details had been taken.

The officer in charge of the investigation, Detective Inspector Neill, with other police officers, went to where Bernard was found. He recovered the cardboard with 'tout' written on it.

Bernard's identity was not known to police who initially only had a description of him. Detective Inspector Neill, at 10.56pm, arranged for a police officer to go to the Royal Victoria Hospital to recover Bernard's clothing to see if it could aid identification.

Local enquiries were conducted by police to trace witnesses and at 12.05am a 16 year old girl was found who possibly saw suspects leaving Bellevue Park, about 10.00pm, in a white Ford Cortina. She did not see a registration number and could only describe one occupant.

The HET could find no record of the description of the car being circulated by police, although this may have been done.

At 12.30am Bernard's description was circulated to the police and army to assist with his identification.

Bernard's clothing was examined at Newtownabbey Police Station and a laundry mark, '106', was found on each item of clothing. Detective Inspector Neill arranged for one of his officers to telephone all known male residential institutions in Belfast, including training schools, to identify the marks.

The police called St Patrick's School and informed them of the unknown youth being shot and being treated in the RVH. Brother **BR 52** confirmed that the mark was a unique St Patrick's laundry mark allocated to Bernard.

Brother **BR 52** then went to Bernard's home and established Gerard had returned safely and was in bed. He went to ward 21 in the RVH and verified that the youth who had been shot was Bernard. He confirmed the identification to the doctor who informed the police at Springfield Road. The time of his attendance at the hospital is not recorded.

Detective Inspector Neill recorded in his investigation log book that Bernard died at 2.45am. In the same log entry he also recorded Bernard's date of birth, his home address and that he and his twin brother were 'escapees' from St Patrick's Training School. There is no record of where this information originated, but it must have been supplied by Brother **BR 52**.

Due to weather conditions, the scene at Belleview Park was secured and preserved by police until daylight for a more detailed search and examination. It was then revisited by Detective Inspector Neill, photographed and searched but no bullet or bullet case was found.

It could not be established if Bernard had been shot where he was found. This was considered likely, however, given that a shot was heard in the vicinity of Bellevue Park and that Bernard was still alive when discovered by the army patrol.

HET Comment: There is no reference in the material recovered to show whether there was blood staining on the grass verge. There is a record that the scene examination had to be delayed until the following morning due to 'inclement weather' but did not expand on what this was. An examination of scene photographs taken the following day indicates that the ground was still wet and it is likely it had been raining.

An RUC mapping officer attended the scene and prepared detailed plans.

Bernard's family were informed of his murder and at 11.00am, his sister Alice, went to the mortuary at the RVH and identified Bernard to the police. After the identification Alice provided police with a statement. She complained that Bernard and Gerard had been taken in a taxi from the school the day before.

The general circumstances of the brothers being removed from the school were passed from Inspector Jackson to Detective Inspector Neill at 2.20pm. This was the first time the investigation team knew of the brothers being taken from the school, having been wrongly informed by the school they had escaped from there.

HET Comment: It is not known how Inspector Jackson, who is not mentioned elsewhere in the case papers, obtained this information. This issue will be discussed in the 'Outcome of HET Review' section later in this report.

It cannot now be established who gave Inspector Jackson this information but it is likely that Alice provided this information, which was only passed on after the completion of the statement.

After Bernard's formal identification a post-mortem examination was conducted, which identified that the bullet to his head had passed through him. There were minor scrape injuries consistent with a fall after he had been shot. Photographs were taken by police during the post-mortem examination.

Police investigation

The officer in charge of the investigation initially concentrated on identifying and obtaining accounts from witnesses.

An RUC press officer circulated appeals for information. Bernard's death attracted widespread news coverage but no useful information was provided to the investigation team as a result of these appeals.

Police conducted house-to-house enquiries in Antrim Road and two witnesses who lived in close proximity to Bellevue Park made statements but they saw nothing suspicious and their accounts are not included in this report.

A detective sergeant, who was driving in the Antrim Road about 9.30pm, saw a blue Ford Escort emerging from Bellevue Park. There were two male occupants in the car, one of whom looked like Bernard. He did not obtain the registration number and could not assist the investigation team further.

Gerard Teggart went to Queen Street Police Station at 3.00pm on November 13, with his sister Alice, Canon Murphy and Mr Farrell, a solicitor. Canon Murphy and the solicitor would not allow Gerard to be interviewed because he was a vulnerable person under the care of a psychiatrist.

In the days following, the investigating officer persisted in emphasising the importance of obtaining Gerard's account and Mr Farrell agreed that if Canon Murphy would give his authority, an interview could take place in the presence of a doctor.

Authority was given and Gerard was interviewed in the presence of Mr Farrell, Canon Murphy and a doctor in the solicitor's office at 8.00pm on Thursday, November 15, 1973; Gerard made a statement to police.

SPT 151 prepared a handwritten statement which he gave to the police on November 24.

A report, dated November 15, from Detective Inspector Hugh Neill to the Assistant Chief Constable (crime branch) outlined difficulties encountered by the investigation team with St Patrick's School and obtaining accounts from some of the key witnesses. The officer asked could the Ministry of Home Affairs be asked for any information they had on the school.

It had been said in the press that the Ministry of Home Affairs was to conduct an investigation.

Detective Inspector Neill explained that he had only learned about the Teggart twins abductions from their sister after the post-mortem examination; the school had never divulged this information to him. He explained the reluctance of Canon Murphy and Mr Farrell, who was acting on his instructions, to allow Gerard Taggart to be interviewed.

He stated that Brother ^{BR 52} had dictated a prepared statement to police but **SPT 151** was too agitated to provide a statement. He reported however that an added difficulty was that **SPT 151** and his wife lived in the **SPT 151** (a nationalist area).

The HET has been unable to find any further correspondence replying to Detective Inspector Neill's request and can find no record of a Ministry of Home Affairs review into the school.

The investigation team made enquiries with the army at Carnmoney for details of military vehicle check points on Antrim Road on November 12. Gerard had said that he and Bernard, accompanied by one of their abductors, had walked through an army checkpoint. The result of this enquiry is not recorded.

Anonymous information

On Tuesday, November 13, 1973 the station duty officer at Glengormley Police Station was contacted by the Irish News. They had received a call at 11.45pm from a man who said, '*This is Captain Black of the UFF; a young man was picked up on the Antrim Road and executed as an IRA suspect*'.

This information was passed to the investigation team. There is no record of what credence, if any, the investigation team placed on this information.

HET Comment: The UDA was the largest paramilitary group in Northern Ireland and was formed in September 1971, from the amalgamation of a number of loyalist vigilante groups, commonly referred to as defence associations and was a legal association until 1992, when it was proscribed as a paramilitary organisation.

The UFF emerged from within the UDA in 1973 and is recognised as being the military wing of that organisation.

Although the UDA and UFF could be said to be inextricably linked, membership of the UDA did not automatically infer membership of the UFF. The UFF regularly used the codeword 'Captain Black' when making admissions to acts of terrorism.

On Wednesday, November 14, 1973, at 3.47pm, a female called the confidential helpline number at police headquarters. She said, 'Re Teggart murder, the houses you want are...' She then gave two addresses. The police made enquiries at the addresses and were satisfied that the residents, who were protestants, had no involvement in Bernard's murder.

On January 1, 1974 at 8.30am anonymous information was received from a female caller on the police confidential helpline number. The caller said that Bernard Teggart was taken from St Patrick's to a New Barnsley address by the driver of a black taxi she named. She said the taxi had recently been sold to a named person. This information was passed to the investigation team.

HET Comment: See 'Arrests' paragraph below.

Arrests

November 13, 1973

On Tuesday November 13, 1973 at 12.30pm Detective Inspector Neill and Detective Constables Leskey and McGuinness, interviewed a 15 year old boy from New Barnsley at the Castlereagh Police Office about Bernard's murder. The grounds for the arrest and interview cannot now be established. The investigation log only records that enquiries were ongoing.

This youth was one of four people named in intelligence received in late November 1973 as being involved in Bernard's murder.

The HET has searched for the youth's custody record and interview notes but these cannot be located. There is no evidence of this person's involvement in the murder.

HET Comment: HET cannot name people who have never been charged with or convicted of an offence, or whose name is not otherwise legitimately in the public domain.

It would not be ethical for HET to attribute responsibility to named individuals unless there is evidence available to substantiate the assertions.

November 22, 1973

Gerard, accompanied by a sister, was driven around the area by police. He indicated that he may have been held in a road in Glengormley and indicated two or three houses that could have been where he was detained. Police kept observations on one of the premises in particular, as they had identified the house had a broken bathroom window, but there was no suspicious activity.

Detective Inspector Neill and members of his team, supported by an army patrol, searched the address on November 22.

A broken window with a mirror propped against it was found in the bathroom, but the green chair was not found and there was no other evidence of Gerard or Bernard having been in the premises.

The house was forensically examined and five fingerprints recovered; one belonged to the householder, one had insufficient detail for comparison and the other three palm prints were unidentified. Bernard and Gerard's fingerprints were not found in the house.

The 46 year old owner of the house was arrested and interviewed. He said that he worked abroad the majority of the time and had only returned recently due to a family bereavement.

He believed he was at home from 6.00pm on November 12, as he was most evenings since his return to Northern Ireland.

He gave no one access to his home, although a brother he named had a spare key.

He always locked his home and did not believe anyone had gained access without his knowledge. He denied any involvement in Bernard's murder and said he had no association with the Provisional IRA or any other terrorist group.

The man had no criminal convictions and there was no intelligence linking him to criminals or terrorists. He gave police a witness statement after his interviews. He was released without being charged.

HET Comment: See 'Review of Fingerprint' section later in this report.

December 17, 1973

The investigation team arrested a 40 year old man from New Barnsley on December 17, 1973, who had apparently recently sold a black taxi. This was as a result of information received by the team in mid December. He was interviewed by Detective Inspector Neill at Castlereagh Police Office.

He confirmed that he did own a black taxi but had sold it three weeks before to a man he named. He could not give a date and did not know if this was before or after November 12. He denied involvement in Bernard's murder and had never been inside St Patrick's School. He said he had heard about the murder of Bernard but did not know the Teggart brothers, although it was possible he had seen them before as they lived in the same estate as him. To his knowledge they had never been in his house.

He strongly denied membership or association with the Provisional IRA. He also said he had never lent out his black taxi. The man then gave police a witness statement.

There was no evidence against the man. He was not known to associate with terrorists and he was released without being charged.

January 20, 1974

Information was received in January 1974 that a named person of a given address in New Barnsley, who owned a taxi, had kept Gerard Teggart in his home. This man was arrested and interviewed at Castlereagh Police Office on January 20, 1974.

The HET has recovered very brief interview notes where the man denied murdering Bernard or having anything to do with his murder.

He stated that he knew Bernard but that his wife knew him better. Bernard had been to his home on several occasions. He gave police a witness statement after his interviews. He was released without being charged.

October 23, 1978

Information was received in September 1978 that a named man of a given address was involved in Bernard's murder.

He was arrested on October 23, and interviewed by CID officers from Newtownabbey at Castlereagh Police Office. He denied all knowledge of the murder.

He also denied membership of the Provisional IRA, although he admitted associating with them while a prisoner in the Maze Prison. He was released without being charged on October 25, 1978.

Admission of responsibility

In October 2004, the Provisional IRA issued a statement in the republican newspaper *An Phoblacht*, saying it had investigated Bernard's death following a request from his family. They said, *'We can now confirm that Bernard Teggart was shot by the IRA. We offer our sincere apologies to the Teggart family for the pain and grief we have caused. The killing should not have happened.'*

No one has ever been charged with Bernard's murder.

Review of Exhibits

Bernard was found in Bellevue Park on a grass bank beside the road leading to a car park; the bank sloped downward towards the road. The scene was examined by Constable Todd (SOCO), and forensic scientist J. Milburn at 10.00am on Tuesday, November 13.

Nothing was found on the bank or in the earth of the bank to indicate where the shooting had taken place. A thorough search was made for a spent bullet or ejected bullet case but none was found.

At 11.30am Constable Todd went to the mortuary at the Royal Victoria Hospital and was present during the post-mortem examination of Bernard.

During the course of the examination he took possession of toxicological samples for analysis and future comparison if suitable items for comparison were recovered. There is no record of any items being submitted thereafter for comparison.

The only item still retained by the police is a sample of Bernard's head hair.

A report by Sergeant Johnson, who was the first police officer to attend the scene, dated November 13, identifies that sunglasses were found beside Bernard.

There is no record of who found the sunglasses but they were handed to Constable Todd, on November 15. They were examined for finger prints but none was found. The HET has been unable to establish what, if any, enquiries were made about their origin.

Weapons and Ballistics

In spite of a detailed search conducted by the investigation team at the location where Bernard was found, no bullet or spent cartridge was recovered and no bullets were recovered during the post-mortem examination. There is, therefore, no evidence available to enable the weapon used to murder Bernard to be identified.

Review of Fingerprint Evidence

The piece of card with the word 'tout' written on it was submitted by Sergeant Johnston for examination but no fingerprints were found. The HET has been unable to locate this card.

A report dated November 27, 1973, provided a result of a fingerprint search of a house in Glengormley where Bernard and his brother were believed to have been held. Two fingerprints and three palm prints were found on the bathroom door; one contained insufficient detail for comparison, one was eliminated to the lawful householder and the three palm prints were unidentified.

HET Comment: This will be discussed further in 'Outcome of HET Review' section later in this report.

Review of Intelligence Matters

All investigative agencies rely on intelligence to assist in the investigation of crime. Intelligence is not evidence.

Intelligence is information from any source and can be given openly or confidentially. Ideally, when information is given openly, particularly where the person giving the information is a witness, it is in the best interests of justice for that person to make a statement, and give evidence at court (which converts that intelligence into evidence).

Understandably, not every body wishes to do this.

Intelligence sources are many and varied and could include anonymous information, information given by a member of the public, by an agent (informant), or as a result of surveillance.

Intelligence sources may be reliable or unreliable. There are occasions when intelligence received is no more than local gossip or rumour, or may even be given maliciously. For this reason, all intelligence has to be graded to assess what reliance can be placed on it. Intelligence about criminal offences should be passed to the investigating teams, who would decide what action to take as a result. Police have a legal duty to take every precaution to protect the identity of intelligence sources.

Summary of Intelligence

There was no prior intelligence recorded in this case which could have prevented Bernard's murder.

Intelligence reports name members of the Provisional IRA from west Belfast as being responsible for Bernard's murder.

A report in November 1973, named four men as being involved in the murder of Bernard. This information was passed to Detective Inspector Neill. One of the men was interviewed by the police.

A report in December 1973, provided details of a rumour that a named man from Belfast shot Bernard. This information was passed to Detective Inspector Neill.

A report in August 1974 was received that a named man had said to others in the Maze Prison that he and another were responsible for Bernard's murder. This information was passed to Detective Inspector Neill but there is no record of what the investigation team was able to do with this information.

HET Comment: This will be discussed further in 'Outcome of HET Review' section later in this report.

Intelligence was received in November 1973 that members of the Teggart family had been warned by those who murdered Bernard, who were known to the family, that Gerard would be shot if he assisted police investigating his brother's murder.

HET Comment: There is no record of what the police did with this information but there was little contact by the police with the family thereafter. This will be discussed further in 'Outcome of HET Review' section later in this report.

Intelligence was also received in November naming a person who was potentially involved in Bernard's murder. This person was interviewed on December 20, 1973 at Castlereagh Police Office and denied involvement in Bernard's murder. There is no other evidence or intelligence suggesting the involvement of this person.

There is no record of any action being taken in furtherance of some of the above intelligence. The HET cannot, therefore, comment definitively on why this is the case. However, to assist the family, the HET can outline some of the considerations that were a common theme at the time across many of the cases it has reviewed.

Intelligence is not evidence; if information were given in isolation, in the absence of any witnesses or forensic evidence, only a confession would implicate a suspect. In the immediate aftermath of an incident, paramilitaries expected a police response, including the arrest of prominent local activists; as time passed, however, direct action could only have arisen as a result of information from an informant.

Outcome of the HET Review

The Historical Enquiries Team has conducted its review of the investigation into Bernard's murder and this has now been completed.

The HET often seeks to engage directly with retired officers to discuss the investigations they conducted. In many cases, retired officers have engaged enthusiastically with the HET, and their help is always greatly appreciated, by HET and the families. However, engagement with the HET is a voluntary undertaking and in some cases retired officers choose not to engage. This is extremely valuable for a number of reasons.

In this case, the officer in charge of the investigation was Detective Inspector Hugh Neill who has since retired and is very elderly. Mr Neill has been contacted by the HET in connection with other reviews and has declined to engage.

The HET has considered the original investigation carried out by the RUC and acknowledges that applying modern standards to earlier enquiries could be potentially misleading. The context of the times is a feature in all HET reviews, and officers involved in investigations of the time have pointed to an environment that included a huge volume of cases and incidents, an atmosphere of fear and confusion, and adherence to policies and practices that were in place at the time but which seem completely unacceptable when judged against present day procedures.

They also frequently highlighted that recovering evidence was not always a routine process, and that security concerns precluded the passing of information from witnesses to the security forces due to the involvement of paramilitary organisations.

Belfast, where the incident happened was unfortunately the scene of many murders, and the scale and the volume of the violence often overwhelmed the security forces, which consisted of the RUC and the army.

There were 263 deaths attributable to 'The Troubles' in 1973. In November there were 20 deaths, nine of which occurred in Belfast.

Initial police response and scene examination

From its examination of the available documentation it is apparent that the RUC investigated Bernard's murder with drive and enthusiasm.

Detective Inspector Neill was supported by at least one detective sergeant and seven detective constables on the investigation team, but there are records of others assisting during searches and interviews.

Bernard had been found by the army shortly after he was shot. Despite his speedy admission to hospital, his life could not be saved.

The scene was initially preserved by the army and then the police, ensuring negligible contamination until it could be examined by a scenes of crime officer and a forensic scientist in daylight. Although little of evidential value was found, this should not detract from the thoroughness of the search.

Bernard's identification was clearly the priority for Detective Inspector Neill, so that Bernard's family could be informed of his critical condition. The excellent work by the police to achieve this important task has been described earlier in this report.

Detective Inspector Neill also sought witnesses to the murder. A couple near the scene heard a shot but saw no one leaving the park other than a dog walker going into the park minutes before. This was after the arrival of the army patrol.

A witness saw a white Ford Cortina containing three men leaving the park. It is possible that these were the gunmen who killed Bernard. Although nearby residents were questioned about what they heard or saw, no other useful information was obtained.

Investigation

The investigation was generally well managed, with timed and dated decisions being recorded by Detective Inspector Neill. The decisions reviewed what had been established by the investigation team and directed additional lines of enquiry.

Although Detective Inspector Neill stated at the inquest, *'despite extensive enquiries nobody had been arrested or charged with Bernard's murder'*, he must have meant no-one had been charged as there had been arrests.

The investigation team had been very active in responding to information received and conducted observations, searches and arrests.

The reasoning and rationale for some of the arrests is clear, but in some instances, because of a lack of documentation, the grounds for the arrests or questioning cannot now be established.

The investigation team sought forensic corroboration when conducting the searches taking fingerprint officers and photographers with them.

The HET has conducted a new search of the three unidentified palm prints found in a house in Glengormley where Bernard and his brother were believed to have been held, on the automatic fingerprint retrieval (AFR) data base. Two of those palm prints were identified. One was identical to the palm prints of a man who would have been 16 at the time. He was believed to have associations with the Provisional IRA but was never convicted of terrorist offences. One palm print was identical to those of a man who would have been 17 at the time of Bernard's murder who was believed to be a member of the Provisional IRA. The third palm print remains unidentified.

Neither of the men was named in intelligence and neither came to notice of the investigation team. Although it was suspected that the Glengormley House was where Bernard and Gerard were taken, this could not be proved.

Gerard could not identify the house, although he believed it was the road he was detained in, and neither brother's fingerprints were found in the house. The date the fingerprints were deposited cannot be ascertained.

The HET is unable to establish that this was definitely the house where the brothers were detained, therefore there are insufficient grounds to justify the arrest or questioning of these men at this time. No other fingerprints were recovered during the original investigation.

HET Comment: AFR is a national database that retains and automatically compares all identifiable crime scene marks that are held on it against the fingerprints (and since 2006, palm prints) of persons who have had their fingerprints taken by the police and recorded on the database.

A report in August 1974 was received that a named man had said to others in the Maze Prison that he and another were responsible for Bernard's murder. This information was passed to Detective Inspector Neill but there is no record of what the investigation team was able to do with this information.

The HET has conducted research but cannot identify the person named. Someone with a similar name was serving six years in the Maze Prison at the time but was in custody when Bernard was murdered.

The HET has spoken to Mr Pdraig O'Muirigh who represents the family, about the intelligence that members of the Teggart family had been warned by those who murdered Bernard that Gerard would be shot if he assisted police investigating his brother's murder. He said that the family had informed him that the threat was made by the men who abducted Gerard before he was released. There was no other threat to the family. Mr O'Muirigh said that the family had asked that the HET do not speak with Gerard because of his vulnerability.

The arrest and interview of a man on October 23, 1978 demonstrated the ongoing determination of the RUC to bring Bernard's murderers to justice.

The HET has examined the records of available interviews and custody records and conducted research into those who were arrested. The HET has identified no additional grounds to show it is likely that any of those arrested were involved in Bernard's murder.

In the absence of forensic or eye witness testimony the RUC was responding to intelligence, which is not evidence, and this meant that the only way they could secure a conviction was through any of the arrested men admitting their involvement.

Despite arresting and questioning at least five men this did not happen and no one was ever charged with Bernard's murder.

While the HET believes that a good investigation was conducted, driven by a competent and experienced detective, his decision log requiring lines of enquiry to be conducted has not been resulted in every instance.

Some of those enquiries the HET would now class as missed opportunities that unfortunately cannot now be recreated. The HET has identified that:

- An enquiry to identify the soldiers at the army roadblock on the Antrim Road on November 12 was an important line of enquiry that should have been resulted. It may have identified further investigative opportunities which could have led to the identification of the car that Gerard was in, or the gunmen. The HET cannot now say whether the investigation team failed to record the result of the enquiry or whether it was not done.

- There is no record of what enquiries were conducted about the white Ford Cortina or the blue Ford Escort, seen in the vicinity of Bellevue Park.

It would have been good practice for the investigation team to have considered whether any cars of that description had recently been stolen or found abandoned. They may also have considered circulating the details in the press for sightings or information.

- The men who took Gerard and Bernard from Saint Patrick's were spoken to at length by SPT 151 and Brother BR 52. There is no record of them being asked to assist with the compilation of photofit likenesses, to identify suspects in photograph albums or attend identification parades. The limited co-operation of both men has been referred to in this report and it may be that any further assistance to police was declined.

It is clear, however, that very bravely, Gerard was willing to assist police catch his brother's killers, in any way he could.

Gerard could also have assisted with the identification of his and Bernard's abductors, however because he was a vulnerable person, it would have meant any identification he made, unless corroborated, would have been of limited evidential value. There is no record that he knew any of his abductors but he and his brother were known to them and, therefore, he would have been further exposed to violence or death if it became known he was assisting police.

- There is no record of other witnesses being sought at the school or in the vicinity of the school.
- Gerard said he saw another boy who was tied up being detained in the Glengormley house. There is no record of what enquiries were conducted by the investigation team about this information. The HET can find no record of any other abduction or other murders of boys at that time.

The HET is aware that it is possible that some of these enquiries may have been completed but the results were not recorded. It is also pertinent that some of these unresolved enquiries would have been unlikely to result in useful information being obtained.

Motive

The motive for Bernard's murder appeared to be clear from the outset; Bernard was suspected of being an informant.

No admission was made by the Provisional IRA, but the ease with which the terrorists entered the school in west Belfast, and the location of the houses in nationalist areas where the brothers were detained, supported the police belief that the Provisional IRA was responsible for the murder.

Gerard said he was asked about Bernard being questioned by 'the Brits', which would appear to refer to the army and his arrest in August by the police. This line of questioning reinforced the police belief that the Provisional IRA suspected Bernard of being an informant.

Bernard was arrested by the army on August 30, 1973.

Bernard had committed a burglary in New Barnsley on August 16 and three days later was confronted by the owner of the house who made him give back some of the items he had stolen. He was however unable to give back the money he stole as he had spent it.

On August 30 1973, he was walking in New Barnsley when he saw a car with four young men in it, approaching him. He recognised two of the men in the car. Bernard realised they were after him because of the burglary and ran. He was caught and one of the men, who had a gun, tried to force him into the car, but he was rescued by a local person.

He ran into a nearby bar to seek refuge but was arrested shortly after by the army and was taken to Springfield Road Police Station. The HET is unable to say why the army was called to the bar but it could be that they had been alerted to the attempted abduction outside the bar.

He was interviewed and made a statement under caution. This statement was in the murder investigation papers recovered by the HET and would have been considered by Detective Inspector Neill, but the HET can find no other reference to it.

In the statement Bernard admitted the burglary and provided the surnames of two youths he recognised in the car prior to his arrest.

One of them, the youth with the gun, bore the same surname as the 15 year old who was later named in intelligence as being involved in his murder and who was interviewed on Tuesday November 13, 1973 by Detective Inspector Neill. It cannot be said the person the police interviewed was the person Bernard said had chased him.

The HET is unable to identify the second named person, who is not referred to in intelligence or in the investigation material seen by the HET.

There is no record of what action the police took thereafter.

There is no intelligence or evidence to suggest Bernard had any association or involvement with the Provisional IRA or any other terrorist organisation. The Provisional IRA was a ruthless terrorist organisation and would kill any person who they thought might assist police. Their threat covered people who engaged as witnesses and sadly throughout 'The Troubles' there were many instances where innocent witnesses were murdered.

The claim, allegedly by the UFF, on November 13, had little credibility and almost certainly was dismissed by the investigation team.

Saint Patrick's

The conduct of two senior members of staff at Saint Patricks must be mentioned.

Brother **BR 52**, the principal, failed to report Gerard's abduction on November 11 and agreed to Gerard and Bernard being taken from the school on November 12.

He failed to inform the police of the circumstances at the earliest opportunity, when enquiries were being made about the laundry marks and he knew it was likely that it was Bernard who had been shot.

It must also have been his information that, distressingly for the family, resulted in the boys being branded 'escapees'. Early press reports referred to them as such.

The first record of assistance by Brother **BR 52** is when he supplied police with a prepared statement. **SPT 151** also supplied police with a prepared statement declining to be interviewed or to go to the police station.

The school had a duty of care to the boys. This was belatedly demonstrated by Canon Murphy, who correctly identified the vulnerability of Gerard to the police, not allowing him to be interviewed and obtaining legal representation for him.

That duty of care was not exercised when the school allowed the abductions, although SPT 151 gave context to the difficulties the school was facing. His description of suspected terrorists entering the school on a regular basis demonstrates very intimidating and uncomfortable times. He also pointed out that co-operation with these groups in the past had never resulted in such tragedy.

The RUC investigation team were very concerned at the time about the conduct of the school, its failure to give the true circumstances of the abductions and its lack of co-operation after the murder.

A report was submitted by Detective Inspector Neill on November 15, to an Assistant Chief Constable, outlining his concerns about the school and seeking any further information about the school from the Ministry of Home Affairs. A newspaper report indicated the Ministry of Home Affairs were conducting an enquiry into the school.

The HET has carried out searches, including the National Archive, Kew, for the details and results of this enquiry but can find no further references to it.

The HET acknowledges that it was the Provisional IRA who murdered Bernard, however the school failed lamentably to fulfill the duty of care towards him when allowing his abduction and failing to report it to the authorities. It is unclear whether they ever acknowledged this or apologized to the family.

School reports

The HET has identified some reports that would appear to indicate that, despite occasionally absconding, Gerard and Bernard were reasonably happy at the school.

A report from a teacher described Bernard, or Barney as he was known, as an innocent victim, treated harshly at times by some boys, but looked upon with unusual understanding by others.

The report finishes, *'Perhaps the latter days of his life were the happiest in this particular sense, because he was really trying to improve in gymnastics and was very proud of the little praise I gave him for his progress. It is reassuring to know that all that could be done to make life a little happier for Barney, was being done here at the school.'*

Another report described Bernard as *'yearning for notice or attention'* and *'not capable of telling a lie.'* Bernard spoke about his dead father and other members of his family, including his sister's new baby, with affection. He always included and looked out for Gerard.

The teacher reported that Bernard was sometimes too open and would tell everything about his home life and all that went on in school to anyone who would listen. He said, *'Barney had a great 'gra' (sic) for the ladies and loved to work in the kitchen or up in the classrooms after school since the lady cleaner came. This to me showed a great kindness and love that was in him.'*

HET Conclusions

The review into Bernard's murder has been examined against the below factors:

- The original investigation file
- The inquest file
- Exhibits
- Intelligence records
- Fingerprint evidence
- Family concerns
- The original investigation
- Analysis of any linked issues
- Open source material.

The HET concludes on the basis of the available case papers that:

On Monday, November 12, 1973, Bernard was taken from St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast, by three unidentified members of the Provisional IRA.

After being detained and questioned in west Belfast he was taken to Bellevue Park, Belfast and just before 10.00pm was shot in the head. He was found shortly after by an army patrol, still alive, with a piece of cardboard beside him with the word 'tout' written on it.

Bernard was quickly taken to the Royal Victoria Hospital, Belfast, but despite every effort to save him, died at 2.45am on Tuesday, November 13, 1973.

The cause of Bernard's death was *'a gunshot wound to head.'*

The RUC conducted an investigation arresting five men in connection with Bernard's murder. No one was ever charged with his murder.

Bernard was a likeable young man who had learning difficulties. He was much loved by his family. He had been sent to Saint Patrick's Training School after getting in trouble for minor crime and to take benefit of the services provided there.

It is clear to the HET that the duty of care owed by the school to Gerard and Bernard was wanting. The HET accepts the difficulty the school had in managing groups, including the Provisional IRA, who intimidated staff and pupils, walking in and out of the school as they pleased. However the school failed lamentably to fulfill its duty of care by allowing the abduction and failing to report them to the authorities. It is unclear whether they ever acknowledged this or apologised to the family.

Bernard's amicable nature, his willingness to please and his inability to tell a lie did not assist him when confronted by the Provisional IRA, who convinced themselves that Bernard's interactions with the police and army meant to them he was an informer.

Despite being informed by the school of Bernard's vulnerability and likelihood to agree with anything he thought they wanted to hear, the Provisional IRA killed the defenceless 15 year old boy. It took them over 30 years to admit they murdered him and that it should not have happened.

The HET concludes that there remains an absence of forensic, fingerprint and identification evidence. Without such evidence there are no new lines of enquiry or realistic evidential opportunities which could bring about the identification or prosecution of those responsible for Bernard's murder.

The HET greatly appreciates the co-operation of the family in this review process and recognises the courage that this takes on your part. It is our hope that the information contained within this report will provide you with a clearer understanding of the circumstances relating to Bernard's death.

Review of Open Source Material

Open Source material (books, articles, public records, etc) in relation to this case has been traced and includes local newspaper articles, internet material, television news reports and an entry in the book *Lost Lives*. It must always be borne in mind that entries may not be entirely accurate.

Books

Lost Lives is a publication that chronicles, for the first time, accounts of all the deaths attributable to The Troubles between 1966 and 2006. It is the work of five respected journalists and was compiled almost entirely from open source material and their own contacts. Occasionally mistakes are exposed as more information about 'The Troubles' becomes available.

Bernard's murder is included on page number 400, entry number 959.

The entry described how Bernard was taken with his twin brother from St Patrick's in west Belfast. His brother was later released and Bernard was discovered shot but alive close to Bellevue Zoo. A placard had been pinned on his chest bearing the word 'tout'.

Bernard was described as having a mental age of eight. The Provisional IRA did not admit responsibility for his death until October 2004 when they issued a statement saying it had investigated Bernard's death following a request from Bernard's family. They said, *'We offer our sincere apologies to the Teggart family for the pain and grief we have caused. The killing should not have happened.'*

Watching the Door - Cheating Death in 1970's Belfast

By Kevin Myers

This book gave details of the murder of Bernard. The author commented *'that this utter evil did not cause an uproar in nationalist ghetto's should have told me the emotional and unscrupulous energy underlying the tribal identity, which with the unspoken ruthlessness was able to exonerate terrorists for even the most terrible deeds.'*

Newspapers

The Belfast Telegraph

Tuesday, November 13, 1973, carried a headline *'Probe into victim's kidnapping is ordered - shot boy and his twin were abducted.'* The report related that the Ministry of Home Affairs had started an inquiry into the circumstances surrounding how the boys were able to be abducted from the training school they attended.

The Irish Times

Wednesday, November 14, 1973, carried a headline, *'Murdered boy taken from training school.'* It described how Bernard had been found dying by an army patrol with a note pinned to his clothes proclaiming him a tout. It then reported that earlier he had been taken away from his school by men.

Thursday, November 15, 1973, headlined, *'Killing of boy 15 condemned by CCDG.'* It reported that the Belfast Central Citizens' Defence Committee had denounced Bernard's killers as criminals who knew no morality, no law and no justice. It went on to say that Irish history could recount many foul deeds but that Bernard's murder marked a new low.

The Irish Press

Wednesday, November 14, 1973, carried a headline, *'Not an Informer, Says Mother.'* The report related that Bernard's mother had said it was cruel to say that her son was an informer. The report described how Bernard had been taken away from his school with his brother, Gerard and how he was found shot and later died in hospital.

The News Letter

Wednesday, November 14, 1973, carried the headline *'Boy saved twin says mother.'* Mrs Teggart said that Bernard pleaded with his killers to save his brother. She said that he always stood up for his twin brother Gerard.

The Belfast Telegraph

Tuesday, November 13, 1973, carried a headline '*Shot boy and his twin were abducted.*' The report described how an inquiry had been ordered by The Ministry of Home Affairs into why Bernard and his brother had been abducted from their training school. The report added that their disappearance had not been reported to the security forces. It described their abduction and that Bernard was later found shot dead with a placard placed beside him with the words '*tout*' written on it. The report included a photograph of Bernard.

Thursday, November 15, 1973, carried a headline '*Abducted boy's killing vile and brutal, says CCDC.*' It reported that the Central Citizens Defence Committee had described Bernard's abduction and killing as '*vile and brutal*' and that it marked a new low.

The Irish News

Sunday, November 11, 1973, carried three separate death notices from Bernard's family and friends.

Friday, November 17, 1973, carried a headline, '*Murder of Bernard Teggart: Priests pose four questions.*' The story related to Father Denis Faul of Dungannon and Fathers Aodh Bennett and Alexander Reid of Clonard Monastery. The questions they posed were:

1. What kind of an organisation would feel threatened by a boy with the mental age of eight?
2. What kind of '*justice*' did this boy receive who was ill-treated and murdered without trial?
3. What kind of moral standards operate in people who are responsible for this child murder?
4. What kind of Irishman would condone, support or be associated with the people who did this deed?

The Irish Independent

Wednesday, November 14, 1973 carried a headline, *'Is horror wave the end or a new beginning?'* It made comment of a storm of violence sweeping Northern Ireland, while efforts were being made to bring about a political settlement. It described how Bernard's murder had produced a new shock wave of disgust.

The Sun

Wednesday, November 14, 1973 carried a headline, *'IRA murder boy in school grab.'* It described Bernard as a shy 15 year old reform school boy who was taken from his school and later found shot. The report stated that a top-level enquiry had been ordered into the terror murder and that government officials were asking how the Provisional IRA gang was able to walk into St Patrick's Training School and abduct Bernard and his brother and why their disappearance was not reported to the police until the following day.

The Guardian

In an Irish Times interview in January 2004 Bernard's sister gave an account of how Bernard had stumbled across a Provisional IRA hijacking of a beer lorry and had shouted his objection to the action. She described Bernard as being innocent and childish. At the time of witnessing the hijacking, soldiers arrived and arrested the men and although Bernard played no part in causing them to be arrested she believed that the Provisional IRA blamed him. His mother held no bitterness towards his killers.

The Daily Mirror

Friday, August 7, 2009 carried a headline *'IRA Admit Lad Was Innocent'*, and described how the Provisional IRA had finally dismissed claims that Bernard had been an informant. In October 2004 the Provisional IRA had issued a statement admitting responsibility for his death and apologised for the pain and grief that it had caused.

The News letter

Friday, August 7, 2009, carried a headline *'IRA victim was not an informant'*, and went on to describe that the family had told the republican newspaper *An Phoblacht*, *'We know Bernard was innocent. He was not an informer. We are glad that that stigma has been removed.'*

The Irish News

Friday, August 7, 2009 carried a headline, *'Latest apology to the victims of republicans.'* The report described how the Provisional IRA had issued a number of statements of apology to victims of its violence, including a number of children. The newspaper carried a further report with a headline *'Acknowledgement shows need for truth in dealing with past'* and sub-headlined a quote by Andree Murphy, *'The Teggart's, as a family have endured horrific experiences during our conflict and with their honesty, humanity and courage are an example to all of us.'*

Internet

There is an entry regarding the murder of Bernard on the Cain website. This site lists alphabetically all deaths attributable to 'The Troubles' and each victim has a small synopsis relating to the circumstances of their death.

The entry relating to Bernard's murder states:

November 13, 1973

Bernard Teggart, (15) Catholic

Status: Civilian

Killed by: Irish Republican Army (IRA)

Found shot near Floral Hall, Zoological Gardens, Antrim Road, Belfast.

Alleged informer.

Questions Raised by You and Your Family

1. The family would like to know the full facts of the case.
 - A. *The HET has a clear and unambiguous policy of maximum permissible disclosure within the bounds of the Human Rights Act and other legislation, and will give families as much information as possible. This review summary report details the known facts of the case as ascertained by the HET, and it also details conclusions we have been able to draw as a result of the review. It is hoped that the information provided is sufficient to give you a clear picture of the events leading up to, and surrounding Bernard's murder.*
2. The family were never given any details of what happened. The family feel let down by the authorities.
 - A. *The HET acknowledges and regrets that you were not kept as updated, as you should have been. This seems hugely insensitive and is a recurring theme in many HET reviews; families were not kept informed or updated. Modern police investigations prioritise maintaining ties with victims' families, ensuring that they are kept informed of developments and supported. The HET hopes that this review report will enable the family to gain a full understanding of what happened at the time and what investigation took place.*
3. Can the HET give details of suspects?
 - A. *The HET cannot name people who have never been charged with or convicted of an offence, or whose name is not otherwise legitimately in the public domain. It would not be ethical for HET to attribute responsibility to named individuals unless there is evidence available to substantiate the assertions.*
4. Alice recalls that the day following Bernard's death a TV camera crew turned up at her mother's home to interview her. At that time Canon Murphy was there and ordered them to leave therefore no interview took place. What did the church do in relation to the failings of the principal and staff at St Patrick's School by allowing the two boys to be taken away from the school while they were in their care?

- A. *The HET has concentrated in reviewing the circumstances of Bernard's murder that was committed by the Provisional IRA. While we have made some comments on actions by the school, the HET feels that questions to the catholic church, about duty of care issues by the school be addressed by the family or your legal representative with the catholic church.*

What Happens Now

The Historical Enquiries Team has now concluded their review into Bernard's murder.

The review has not uncovered any potential new lines of enquiry. Murder investigations are never officially closed, but with the passage of time since 1973, it is unlikely that new investigative opportunities will arise.

All material gathered in this review, and records of the review and the investigative process are being consolidated and will be filed in purpose built PSNI storage facilities, where they will be kept indefinitely.

This report is a full summary of those papers and is yours to keep.

We are very aware that concerns exist regarding the disclosure of information obtained by the HET during the review of the original investigation. In order to maintain the confidence of families and the integrity of the review of all those deaths linked to the 'troubles', Freedom of Information Act and Data Protection Act requests will be resisted by the HET and the PSNI, who will seek, on a case-by-case basis, to impose legal exemptions.

In the opening paragraphs, the HET objectives were set out. Of these, the primary concern is the interests of the family. Our hope is that you will find some clarity and comfort from the work that has been undertaken and some measure of resolution in a greater knowledge of the circumstances of Bernard's murder.

Philip James QPM
Lead SIO,
Historical Enquiries Team.

1 Q. Then the last thing I want to do, BR52, in fairness to
2 you, because I know you have not been looking forward to
3 this day, if we look at paragraph 13 of your statement,
4 please, at 2977, you express to the Panel the level of
5 distress that this incident and the living with it has
6 brought you and the sense of guilt that you feel that
7 you didn't do more.

8 **A. Correct, yes.**

9 Q. Is there anything else you want to say? If we bring up,
10 please, 2977, you explain the sense of guilt that you
11 felt and that you have lived with those consequences for
12 the last 42 years.

13 **A. Oh, yes, because what happened that day was so much**
14 **against my whole ethos, all that I had lived for, and as**
15 **a practising teacher I had spent my entire working life,**
16 **45 years, working with young people, teaching them**
17 **outside activities as well. What happened that day was**
18 **so different from everything -- all that my life stood**
19 **for that it was agonising for me even to think about it,**
20 **because I have so often said to myself, "How could it**
21 **have happened? How could you ...?", because it was so**
22 **alien to my whole way of life both before and after the**
23 **event that, yes, it did torment me, has done and still**
24 **does. I have black moments, you know, when I feel**
25 **terrible about what happened to that boy and that I had**

1 helpful. Can I just ask about the relationship you had
2 with the bishop? Was it possible for you to go and
3 discuss things with him on a one-to-one basis? Was that
4 a usual thing for you?

5 **A. No, no.**

6 Q. No. So that --

7 **A. I met him only at the Board of Governor meetings except**
8 **on this one occasion when I phoned and went to meet him**
9 **to give him a detailed account as to what was happening**
10 **in the school. That was the only time that I ever met**
11 **with the bishop outside of the Board of Governors**
12 **meetings.**

13 Q. And that was because it was so exceptional? That was
14 the reason?

15 **A. Yes.**

16 Q. And can I ask, I mean, in the challenging times that
17 were there were the Board of Governors, you know,
18 supportive? Did you see them? There is obviously the
19 formal meetings, but did you have any support outwith
20 those meetings from any of the ...?

21 **A. No. I never met with any of -- the total make-up of the**
22 **Board of Governors were priests of the diocese -- of**
23 **Belfast, but I never had any meeting or discussion with**
24 **them apart from the Board meetings twice a year or**
25 **whatever.**

1 find in the time available to me last evening, that when
2 training schools, as they were in Northern Ireland, were
3 introduced in 1952, they had already been operating in
4 England as approved schools in the period from 1933
5 onwards, and in the Home Office in England writing about
6 setting up approved schools and their open nature there
7 was recognition that by making that choice and not
8 locking down the young people that you were working with
9 there was going to be the reality of absconding, and
10 that prophecy was ultimately recognised through their
11 analysis in England.

12 Was it always a problem in both Milltown between [REDACTED]
13 [REDACTED] and then from your time in the Glen Road on --
14 was absconding always a significant issue or was it
15 something that, while it did happen initially, it became
16 much more prevalent at certain periods of time? Can you
17 give the Panel some understanding of the level and
18 nature of absconding and when it was occurring most?

19 **A. In Milltown days it was very, very infrequent, extremely**
20 **infrequent. In the overall context of my time in**
21 **Milltown, [REDACTED] of it, the lads liked to be there**
22 **and they wanted to be there. They had very little going**
23 **for them in their own homes, a lot of them, at that**
24 **time. Now you are talking about the [REDACTED]**

25 [REDACTED]

1 As time went on it became, you know, more apparent
2 that there was a bit of a devil may care element coming
3 into the school in the '60s, and then the '70s radically
4 different again, you know, and a lot of the young fellas
5 coming in in the '60s and onwards they were fairly, dare
6 I use the word, wild and untamed and they were used to
7 freedom day and night. I hope I will not being too
8 harsh now in saying that, but that's the reality.

9 Q. So your reflection on your time in St. Patrick's is that
10 it was always there, but it was not a major issue until
11 in the Glen Road site in the '60s and '70s it becomes
12 a much more prevalent problem with the introduction of
13 much more difficult children?

14 A. Perhaps also -- perhaps coupled with the fact that they
15 were in such a spacious site some of them might not have
16 been able to cope with that, the freedom that that gave.

17 Q. And can you recollect discussions amongst the staff, the
18 senior staff, for instance, where you spent most of your
19 time, if not with the principal, so that the junior head
20 was also involved in it, can you remember discussions
21 taking place about the fact there were abscondings and
22 what could be done about it?

23 A. I already said it was an ongoing topic nearly every
24 Thursday at the housemasters' meeting to review the
25 conduct and progress of the boys. Absconding would have

HIA 26

D.O.B. [REDACTED]

HIAI REF 26

MOVEMENT HISTORY

*(COMPILED FROM LOG BOOK ENTRIES – MAY CONTAIN
SOME GAPS/INACCURACIES)*

05/09/1970 REMANDED TO ST PATRICK'S T.S.

14/09/1970 DISCHARGED

21/09/1970 REMANDED TO ST PATRICK'S T.S.

28/09/1970 ABSCONDED

13/11/1970 RETURNED TO ST PATRICK'S T.S. BY RUC

16/11/1970 COMMITTED TO ST PATRICK'S T.S.

17/11/1970 - 23/11/1970 ABSCONDED

24/11/1970 ABSCONDED

27/11/1970 - 07/12/1970 ABSCONDED-RETURNED BY RUC

11/02/1971-21/02/1971 ABSCONDED

21/02/1971-17/03/1971 ABSCONDED

21/03/1971-30/03/1971 ABSCONDED

31/03/1971 – 08/04/1971 ABSCONDED

08/04/1971 – 19/04/1971 ABSCONDED

23/04/1971 – 28/04/1971 ABSCONDED

30/04/1971 TO HMP

17/05/1971 COMMITTED TO BORSTAL

27/08/1971 RETURNED TO ST PATRICK'S (APPEAL UPHELD)

03/10/1971 – 22/11/1971 ABSCONDED

22/11/1971 IN POLICE CUSTODY IN BIRMINGHAM

23/11/1971 RETURNED TO ST PATRICK'S T.S.

24/11/1971 COMMITTED TO BORSTAL TRAINING

MOVEMENT HISTORY

HIA 272

DOB

OR

07/07/1971 Committed to St Patrick's Training School on charges of T.A.D.A., Careless Driving, No Licence, No Insurance
20/07/1971-05/08/1971 At Summer Camp
08/08/1971-09/08/1971 On Parole home
14/08/1971-23/08/1971 On Parole home
29/08/1971-30/08/1971 On Parole home
30/08/1971-03/09/1971 Absconded
10/09/1971-07/10/1971 Absconded
30/10/1971-02/11/1971 Halloween Break
07/11/1971 Parole
08/11/1971-10/11/1971 Absconded
19/11/1971 Out with Parents for day
28/11/1971 Out with Mother for day
05/12/1971 Out for day – returned late
11/12/1971 Out for day – failed to return
12/12/1971 Returned
16/12/1971 Walked out – returned later
23/12/1971-30/12/1971 Absconded
31/12/1971-01/01/1972 Absconded
01/01/1972-03/01/1972 Absconded (by throwing locker through window)
06/01/1972-08/01/1972 Absconded
16/01/1972 Absconded
17/01/1972-21/01/1972 Absconded
22/01/1972 Absconded
31/01/1972 Absconded
04/03/1972 Parole – collected from RVH (had been shot in finger)
06/03/1972 Questioned by Police
11/03/1972-13/03/1972 Absconded
15/03/1972 Recommitted to Training School on Car related offences
31/03/1972-09/04/1972 Easter leave. Failed to return
09/04/1972-04/05/1972 Absconded
17/05/1972 Absconded
20/05/1972-21/05/1972 Absconded
18/06/1972 Parole. Returned late
20/06/1972 Taken to Hospital (Slashed his arm)
01/07/1972 to Summer Camp
29/07/1972-08/08/1972 On Parole home. Failed to return until 09/10/1972
09/10/1972 No home leave permitted unless accompanied
28/10/1972 Parole home
29/10/1972 Parole home

ADMISSION HISTORY

HIA 253

D.O.B.

26/08/1983 REMANDED TO ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL
FOR BREACH OF SUPERVISION ORDER
26/08/1983 ABSCONDED
29/08/1983 RETURNED TO ST PATRICK'S
03/09/1983 – 13/09/1983 ABSCONDER
16/09/1983 COMMITTED TO ST PATRICK'S ON TRAINING
SCHOOL ORDER
03/10/1983 BAIL PENDING APPEAL
23/11/1983 TSO AFFIRMED AND RETURNED TO ST
PATRICK'S
23/11/1983 ABSCONDED FOR DAY
25/11/1983 – 26/11/1983 ABSCONDED
27/11/1983 – 28/11/1983 ABSCONDED
01/12/1983 – 02/12/1983 ABSCONDED
02/12/1983 – 05/12/1983 ABSCONDED
08/12/1983 – 09/12/1983 ABSCONDED
12/12/1983 – REMANDED TO Y.O.C.
24/12/1983 RECEIVED BAIL. RETURNED HOME UNTIL
04/01/1984
04/01/1984 RETURNED TO ST PATRICK'S
06/01/1984 ABSCONDED
10/01/1984 TRANSFERRED TO LISNEVIN
15/05/1984 FAILED TO RETURN FROM HOME LEAVE
16/05/1984 REMANDED TO Y.O.C.
24/07/1984 RECEIVED 12 MONTHS SENTENCE TO Y.O.C.

ADMISSION HISTORY


(Taken from Pupil File)

HIA 384

D.O.B.

17/09/1993 Admitted to St Patrick's T.S. on a Place of Safety Order
24/09/1993 Absconded
27/09/1993 Absconded
02/10/1993 - 03/10/1993 Absconded
18/10/1993 Interim Order of Detention granted
27/10/1993 - 29/10/1993 Home leave to Bocombra Lodge
31/10/1993 - 02/11/1993 Home leave to Bocombra Lodge
03/11/1993 Returned to Bocombra Lodge
16/11/1993 Discharged from Court and returned to Bocombra Lodge,
30/11/1993 Readmitted to St Patrick's T.S. on Place of Safety Order
04/12/1993 Absconded
20/12/1993 Interim Order granted
23/12/1993 - 27/12/1993 Home leave to Bocombra Lodge
30/12/1993 Home leave to Bocombra Lodge
03/01/1994 Absconded from Bocombra Lodge, collected by St Patrick's
staff and returned to St Patrick's T.S.
04/01/1994 - 05/01/1994 Absconded
10/01/1994 - 11/01/1994 Absconded
14/03/1994 Absconded
17/01/1994 Received Training School Order - Care
17/04/1994 - 18/04/1994 Absconded (Detained in Dublin)
25/04/1994 Absconded
22/06/1994 - 23/06/1994 Absconded (Detained in Newry)
25/06/1994 - 26/06/1994 Absconded (Detained in Banbridge)
11/07/1994 - 12/07/1994 Absconded
09/08/1994 - 14/08/1994 Absconded (Detained in Galway)
15/02/1995 - 13/03/1995 Absconded (In Dublin)
06/04/1995 - 13/04/1995 Absconded (In Dublin)
16/08/1995 Absconded
17/08/1995 Communication from E.H.B. Dublin to confirm he was in
Dublin
25/08/1995 **HIA 384** requested St Patrick's staff collect him - NIO directive
prevented this as out of jurisdiction

LIST OF ABSCONDERS

NUMBER	NAME	ABSC.	RETD.	REMARKS
C/94/79 ✓		5.10.79	19.10.79	
✓ R/95/79		5.10.79	5.10.79	
✓ R/97/79		5.10.79	6.10.79	
C/5/79 ✓		5.10.79	6.10.79	
" ✓		6.10.79	9.10.79	
✓ R/76/79		5.10.79	6.10.79	
C/27/79 ✓		5.10.79	6.10.79	
C/81/78 ✓		5.10.79	?	
C/30/79 ✓		6.10.79	8.10.79	
C/23/79 ✓		6.10.79	14.10.79	
C/44/79 ✓		7.10.79	22.10.79	
C/38/79 ✓		7.10.79	?	
C/98/78 ✓		8.10.79	9.10.79	
C/47/79 ✓		8.10.79	31.10.79	Y.O.C. 1.11.79
C/39/78 ✓		8.10.79	11.10.79	
C/50/79 ✓		8.10.79	10.10.79	
C/56/79 ✓		8.10.79	9.10.79	
C/54/79 ✓		8.10.79	10.10.79	
C/67/79 ✓		8.10.79	9.10.79	
C/77/79 ✓		8.10.79	11.10.79	
C/75/79 ✓		8.10.79	?	
C/32/79 ✓		8.10.79	12.10.79	
C/41/79 ✓		8.10.79	9.10.79	
✓ R/113/79		8.10.79	10.10.79	
C/35/78 ✓		11.10.79	4.11.79	
C/77/79 ✓		13.10.79	12.10.79	
C/64/79 ✓		13.10.79	19.10.79	
C/93/79 ✓		14.10.79	23.10.79	
✓ R/96/79		12.10.79		Failed to appear in court 26.10.79
C/80/78 ✓		13.10.79	15.10.79	
C/65/79 ✓		13.10.79	17.10.79	
C/86/79 ✓		13.10.79		
C/20/79 ✓		13.10.79	14.10.79	
C/11/79 ✓		15.10.79	17.10.79	
C/28/78 ✓		15.10.79	17.10.79	
C/39/78 ✓		15.10.79	17.10.79	
C/95/79 ✓		15.10.79	17.10.79	
✓ R/101/79		17.10.79	22.10.79	
" ✓		22.10.79	7.11.79	Committed to prison for 10 years on 7.11.79
PR.	32C.			


ST. PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL, GLEN ROAD, BELFAST, BT11 8RXABSCONDERS FROM 1st JANUARY, 1974 TO 31st MARCH, 1974

REG. NO.	NAME	ABSCONDED	RETURNED
J.611		2.1.74	2.1.74
J.611		4.1.74	29.1.74
J.598		5.1.74	6.1.74
S.1080		5.1.74	6.1.74
J.608		7.1.74	15.1.74
J.623		8.1.74	9.1.74
S.1065		8.1.74	9.1.74
J.626		8.1.74	10.1.74
S.1077		8.1.74	10.1.74
S.1074		8.1.74	2.2.74
J.624		9.1.74	11.1.74
J.629		10.1.74	10.1.74
S.1084		10.1.74	10.1.74
Remand		11.1.74	
S.1046		13.1.74	14.1.74
J.624		19.1.74	23.1.74
J.598		19.1.74	26.1.74
J.597		19.1.74	20.1.74
J.604		21.1.74	23.1.74
S.1000		22.1.74	23.1.74
S.1009		22.1.74	23.1.74
J.608		22.1.74	23.1.74
J.629		24.1.74	26.1.74
Remand		24.1.74	27.1.74
J.624		24.1.74	31.1.74
J.597		27.1.74	30.1.74
S.1081		27.1.74	14.3.74
Remand		2.2.74	
S.1074		2.2.74	11.2.74
J.624		3.2.74	8.2.74
Remand		3.2.74	6.2.74
Remand		4.2.74	4.2.74
Remand		4.2.74	4.2.74
Remand		7.2.74	7.2.74
J.597		7.2.74	12.2.74
Remand		7.2.74	11.2.74
J.633		7.2.74	7.2.74
J.624		10.2.74	12.2.74
Remand		10.2.74	11.2.74
Remand		11.2.74	12.2.74
S.1074		11.2.74	21.2.74 In Custody
S.1065		11.2.74	12.2.74
J.623		11.2.74	12.2.74
J.624		13.2.74	3.4.74
Remand		13.2.74	26.2.74
Remand		13.2.74	
Remand		14.2.74	15.2.74
Remand		14.2.74	15.2.74
S.1073		17.2.74	19.2.74
S.1077		17.2.74	19.2.74
J.618		17.2.74	19.2.74
J.617		17.2.74	19.2.74
J.581		17.2.74	19.2.74
Remand		18.2.74	18.2.74
Remand		19.2.74	20.2.74
S.1072		24.2.74	25.2.74 In Custody
J.604		25.2.74	26.2.74
S.1060		25.2.74	26.2.74
J.594		25.2.74	26.2.74
J.598		25.2.74	27.2.74
Remand		26.2.74	
S.1065		26.2.74	
J.623		26.2.74	4.3.74
Remand		27.2.74	4.3.74
Remand		27.2.74	
Remand		1.3.74	1.3.74
Remand		1.3.74	1.3.74
Remand		2.3.74	3.3.74

St. Patrick's TRAINING SCHOOL - QUARTER - 19 :....4.

REG NO	NAME	ABSCONDED	RETURNED
S.1216		1. 4.76	2. 4.76
S.1168		3. 4.76	4. 4.76
S.1177		3. 4.76	6. 4.76
C/17/76		3. 4.76	6. 4.76
J.633		3. 4.76	6. 4.76
J.626		3. 4.76	5. 4.76
S.1195		3. 4.76	5. 4.76
J.659		3. 4.76	
J.624		8. 4.76	28. 6.76
R/56/76		9. 4.76	12. 4.76
R/44/76		10. 4.76	13. 5.76 PRISON
R/52/76		10. 4.76	13. 5.76 PRISON
R/56/76		12. 4.76	15. 4.76
C/17/76		17. 4.76	10. 6.76
S.1168		23. 4.76	4. 5.76 Borstal
S.1177		23. 4.76	14. 5.76
C/1/76		25. 4.76	26. 4.76
S.1217		25. 4.76	27. 4.76
S.1208		25. 4.76	26. 4.76
J.627		26. 4.76	4. 5.76
S.1208		26. 4.76	27. 4.76
S.1200		26. 4.76	27. 4.76
S.1193		26. 4.76	10. 5.76
S.1180		26. 4.76	27. 4.76
J.657		26. 4.76	27. 4.76
S.1212		26. 4.76	27. 4.76
C/4/76		26. 4.76	27. 4.76
C/7/76		26. 4.76	7. 5.76
C/3/76		26. 4.76	27. 4.76
C/3/76		27. 4.76	6. 5.76
C/11/76		29. 4.76	29. 4.76
C/22/76		29. 4.76	29. 4.76
C/27/76		29. 4.76	29. 4.76
C/30/76		2. 5.76	5. 6.76
C/29/76		2. 5.76	16. 5.76
C/28/76		2. 5.76	13. 5.76
R/78/76		3. 5.76	
J.658		6. 5.76	27. 5.76
R/77/76		7. 5.76	8. 5.76
J.649		9. 5.76	9. 5.76
J.646		9. 5.76	10. 5.76
C/4/76		9. 5.76	10. 5.76
R/80/76		9. 5.76	10. 5.76
S.1197		16. 5.76	17. 5.76
C/8/76		18. 5.76	
J.646		19. 5.76	10. 6.76
C/37/76		19. 5.76	27. 5.76
C/22/76		22. 5.76	24. 5.76
S.1203		23. 5.76	25. 5.76 Bors
S.1138		23. 5.76	24. 5.76
C/77/76		24. 5.76	25. 4.76
S.1195		24. 5.76	
C/27/76		25. 5.76	25. 5.76
C/22/76		25. 5.76	25. 5.76
C/86/76		26. 5.76	27. 5.76
C/37/76		27. 5.76	28. 5.76
C/32/76		27. 5.76	9. 6.76 Pri
C/86/76		27. 5.76	28. 5.76
C/37/76		29. 5.76	9. 6.76
C/86/76		29. 5.76	28. 6.76

LIST OF ABSCONDERS

NUMBER	NAME	ABSC.	RETD.	REMARKS
C/94/79 ✓		5.10.79	19.10.79	
✓ R/95/79		5.10.79	5.10.79	
✓ R/97/79		5.10.79	6.10.79	
C/5/79 ✓		5.10.79	6.10.79	
" ✓		6.10.79	9.10.79	
✓ R/76/79		5.10.79	6.10.79	
C/27/79 ✓		5.10.79	6.10.79	
C/81/78 ✓		5.10.79	?	
C/30/79 ✓		6.10.79	8.10.79	
C/23/79 ✓		6.10.79	14.10.79	
C/44/79 ✓		7.10.79	22.10.79	
C/38/79 ✓		7.10.79	?	
C/98/78 ✓		8.10.79	9.10.79	
C/47/79 ✓		8.10.79	31.10.79	Y.O.C. 1.11.79
C/39/78 ✓		8.10.79	11.10.79	
C/50/79 ✓		8.10.79	10.10.79	
C/56/79 ✓		8.10.79	9.10.79	
C/54/79 ✓		8.10.79	10.10.79	
C/67/79 ✓		8.10.79	9.10.79	
C/77/79 ✓		8.10.79	11.10.79	
C/75/79 ✓		8.10.79	?	
C/32/79 ✓		8.10.79	12.10.79	
C/41/79 ✓		8.10.79	9.10.79	
✓ R/113/79		8.10.79	10.10.79	
C/35/78 ✓		11.10.79	4.11.79	
C/77/79 ✓		13.10.79	12.10.79	
C/64/79 ✓		13.10.79	19.10.79	
C/93/79 ✓		14.10.79	23.10.79	
✓ R/96/79		12.10.79		Failed to appear in court 26.10.79
C/80/78 ✓		13.10.79	15.10.79	
C/65/79 ✓		13.10.79	17.10.79	
C/86/79 ✓		13.10.79		
C/20/79 ✓		13.10.79	14.10.79	
C/11/79 ✓		15.10.79	17.10.79	
C/28/78 ✓		15.10.79	17.10.79	
C/39/78 ✓		15.10.79	17.10.79	
C/95/79 ✓		15.10.79	17.10.79	
✓ R/101/79		17.10.79	22.10.79	
" ✓		22.10.79	7.11.79	Committed to prison for 10 years on 7.11.79
PR.	32C.			

- 5.19 Nevertheless, in the Inspectors' view the lack of any regulations or guidance on such a sensitive topic as the use of secure accommodation for children is too serious an omission to remain until the implementation of the new legislation. **They recommend that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools as soon as possible and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff.**

Absconding

- 5.20 **SPT 81** had absconded twice while he was in the Western Board's area. On the first occasion he left Nazareth House and was found the following morning at his grandmother's home. On the second he went missing from Harberton House with another boy and they were both found a few hours later by a member of staff. It appears that the two boys were "mitching" school for the morning. In themselves these two incidents were not regarded as being very serious.
- 5.21 At the time that **SPT 81** was admitted to Aisling House, there had been a spate of abscondings which were brought to the attention of the Western Board's staff only at the initial case review, four days later. In the two months prior to 14th August there had been twenty eight abscondings from the unit. Eighteen of them involved the four boys who later absconded with **SPT 81**. One of them had left the school on seven separate occasions; a second boy on five occasions and the other two had each left three times without permission. A culture of absconding appears to have been established with incidents involving small groups of boys occurring every five or six days on average. In the whole of St Patrick's there were 353 abscondings from the school in the first six months of 1994.
- 5.22 In the Inspectors' view it should have been a matter of concern that a new boy to the unit, especially one as young as **SPT 81**, would be at real risk of being influenced by others to become involved in their absconding activities. The staff who had worked with him, however, felt that he was unlikely to abscond and told the Inspectors that they were surprised when they were told that he had become involved in the incident on 14th August.
- 5.23 With the benefit of hindsight this proved to be an incorrect assessment and it is now clear that **SPT 81** was subject to the influence of a group of persistent absconders to the point where he collected and hid the food and clothes that they needed. The staff involved were aware that **SPT 81** was easily influenced by others and in the Inspectors' view more cognisance of the dangers of his becoming involved in absconding should have been taken at the time of his admission. **It is recommended that more consideration should be given to the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour if they are placed in a group containing persistent absconders.**

1 "He asked me to touch him, and I was really
2 frightened, because I knew it was not normal. I had
3 refused to do these things in primary school, but in
4 St. Patrick's I did certain things because I was so
5 afraid and had no-one to turn to for help. I was also
6 confused because I thought he might be able to get me
7 out quicker, even though what he was doing was wrong.
8 He took me to a room on three or four occasions and
9 unzipped his trousers. He took his penis out and tried
10 to persuade me to touch it and masturbate him. He was
11 trying to persuade me to progress and to let him take my
12 clothes off and I resisted him and would not do what he
13 asked. It was then that I began to abscond at every
14 opportunity."

15 Now we were talking earlier this morning, HIA253.

16 **A. Yes.**

17 Q. I was explaining to you that we have received certain
18 records. You go on in paragraph 10 to say that you --
19 this led you to absconding.

20 **A. Uh-huh.**

21 Q. I am just going to look at a document SPT48251, which is
22 the history that the Department of Justice have compiled
23 --

24 **A. Yes.**

25 Q. -- of your time in all the homes. It is clear that you

that they also differ in their success rates with boys on release. It has been suggested that absconding and recidivism are linked. While boys are on the run their delinquent behaviour is renewed and reinforced.

Absconding has been found by both Clarke and Martin and others to correlate with failure of boys after release. Absconders, it seems, are more likely to be reconvicted once they have left their CHE. Clarke and Sinclair also found in a study of 66 boys' approved schools that high absconding rates were associated with low success rates of boys even when intelligence and boys' previous delinquencies were controlled.[13]

As Clarke and Martin and Sinclair have demonstrated that absconding rates differ widely between institutions and are independent of the nature of the pupil intake, it seems likely that high absconding could be one, but certainly not the only, index of an ineffective regime. However, it is important to stress that a strong correlation does not imply any causal relationship between running away and future persistent recidivism, a point that is frequently ignored by those working in the field.

Vital studies which could decide the question have yet to be undertaken. They would need to compare the post-release careers of absconders who commit serious offences while absconding from residential care with those who run but do not offend. What little evidence there is, such as Sinclair's findings from probation hostels, questions both the idea of a learning component in absconding and its relationship with delinquency.[14] He found that absconders who committed offences were no less successful in the long term than those who did not indulge in criminal offences while on the run.

While we cannot compare the careers of absconders who commit offences with those who do not, we can, at least, explore the characteristics of those regimes which have low absconding rates. We can relate the absconding patterns of 17 schools we studied between 1969 and 1973 to aspects of their regimes and the boys' response to them.

We found that running away from schools related to a number of indices of satisfaction with the residential experience. For example, a good pastoral care system, particularly a climate in which boys feel able to discuss their personal problems with staff, moderates absconding. Feelings of happiness and well-being within the school are also significant and an index constructed from responses to questions exploring areas of satisfaction with the regime clearly shows that high satisfaction correlates with low absconding.

When we look at other aspects of our group of schools only the differing levels of delinquency among intake and aspects of control seem to be associated with absconding. Surprisingly, factors such as the proximity of the school to home, a boy's intelligence or a school's attempts to promote good staff-pupil relationships all fail to correlate with running away.

From our analysis, it is clear that absconding rates are closely related both to features of boys' backgrounds and to certain aspects of school regimes. Schools which admit deeply delinquent boys have high absconding, but so do those schools which admitted more docile clients and exercise low levels of institutional and

Of course, sociologists following in the footsteps of Goffman, Sykes and Etzioni have long emphasised the significance of institutional structures. Since Clarke and Martin's original work, a number of studies of the approved schools, Borstals and probation hostels have concluded that the ethos of the institution, that is, its values and perspectives, can override marked variations in the background of the clientele.[9] But while subsequent studies of absconding have confirmed Clarke and Martin's stress on the importance of environmental factors, they have given less support to explanations in terms of learning behaviour.

In fact, the suggestion that there is a learning component in repeated absconding is difficult to substantiate. The theory is general rather than specific and it certainly lacks a predictive quality; as the authors themselves comment, 'Absconders and non-absconders are remarkably similar groups in nearly every respect but in absconding behaviour itself and this would be very difficult to predict.'[10]

The greatest challenge to the learning theory viewpoint is, of course, that sizeable minority who cease to abscond when they are transferred to a new institution. In general, children in residential care for a long period are more likely to adopt the absconding habit the longer they stay in care but, nevertheless, many do cease to behave in this way. Indeed, both Clarke and Martin's study and a number of others show that up to one-third of persistent absconders give up the behaviour at some point during their delinquent careers.[11] If unlearning can be so frequent and haphazard, then learning theory is robbed of much of its reliability and validity.

Several of the hypotheses put forward by Clarke and Martin have also been questioned by Laverack in his study of absconding from one boys' CHE.[12] He found that the most frequent absconders did not necessarily experience poor contact with home or have greater numbers of previous court appearances; nor did they seem to be affected by hardened absconders. While boys ran away mostly during the evening, the season of the year seemed unimportant. Laverack could also find little evidence that truancy from day school was related to absconding. However, assessment reports on school absences are often unreliable and, as we shall see, this finding need not challenge the view that absconding from CHEs may be part of a long development of techniques for avoiding stress. Like the other studies, though, Laverack found that boys with a history of previous abscondings ran away from this particular home with the greatest frequency.

Generally, the evidence suggests that absconding patterns develop over time and in the case of many boys it is persistent to the point of being habitual. Learning theory has been advanced to account for the 'habitual' nature of absconding. Nevertheless, in a significant number of cases the persistent pattern of running is broken.

Absconding and recidivism

However, the implications of Clarke and Martin's research do not stop here. Schools can be demonstrated to differ greatly in their levels of absconding and we know

5. THE ARRANGEMENTS FOR **SPT 81**'S CARE AND SUPERVISION IN ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

Physical Care

- 5.1 When **SPT 81** was transferred to St Patrick's he was placed in Aisling House, the reception and assessment unit. It is a new building which was opened in May 1994 to accommodate 11 boys referred from the care system. It is pleasant with a fairly domestic atmosphere. The facilities include a recreation room, dining room, kitchen and single bedrooms for all the boys. In addition there is a general office for all the staff, plus separate ones for the Team Leader and Intake Social Worker, interviews and meetings.
- 5.2 Aisling is an open unit and although there is a considerable emphasis on locking and unlocking doors it tends to be to prevent the boys gaining access to some rooms rather than to stop them leaving the building. In fact, it has five external doors which would be difficult for staff to supervise if any of the residents did show a tendency to want to leave by them. The Inspectors did have some concern about the two fire exits which are a considerable distance from most of the activities going on in the house. They were assured that they are not currently used for absconding but if it does become a problem **the Inspectors suggest that consideration should be given to fitting the doors with alarms so that staff would be aware whenever they are opened.**
- 5.3 Although this review did not include an examination of all the arrangements for the care of the boys they appeared to be well dressed and cared for. The food provided was ample and nourishing.

The Assessment Process

- 5.4 Aisling House is described by St.Patrick's as its assessment unit for "care" children. All the boys admitted to it are the subjects of Place of Safety Orders or Interim Orders for Detention. Place of Safety Orders last for a maximum of 35 days and, if it is deemed necessary to keep a boy in the unit for longer than this period, the Board or Trust that arranged for him to be admitted under the Place of Safety Order must apply to the court for an Interim Order. Each Interim Order lasts for a maximum of 35 days and up to two consecutive ones can be granted. In this way a boy can be held in Aisling for up to 15 weeks. In order for a boy to remain in the training school for longer than 15 weeks an application must be made to the court for a Training School Order and at this point he will be transferred to a long stay unit.

1 programmes and to help them as much as possible, you
2 know.

3 Q. I think you described when you first arrived, the boys
4 were just sort of shepherded around in groups rather
5 than given individual attention. Would that be fair?

6 A. As I say yes, I think the activities were all sort of --
7 all went together, because -- because of the limit of
8 staff. It must have been a very hard situation.

9 Q. I was asking --

10 A. We tried -- we tried to break them up into smaller
11 groups and get more involved, more staff involved with
12 them, etc, but there was only -- there was about four or
13 five of us started at the one time. That was split into
14 two shifts. So enhanced the staff ratio. Then there
15 was more staff came in late -- in latter years.

16 Q. What would have been the division between sort of lay
17 staff and the Brothers in the home?

18 A. What division?

19 Q. In the sense of how many Brothers would have been
20 working with the boys and lay staff working with the
21 boys? Were there more -- did that change over the
22 years? I think we discussed --

23 A. I think the Brothers -- there was never too many of them
24 initially. There was the head Brother and some of the
25 teachers were Brothers and I think on the care staff

studied. These institutions had high absconding rates but preferred to hold on to their boys and transferred very few.

One of the surprising findings in our previous work was that schools which transferred prematurely were also those which were least successful with boys who completed their training and were released to the community.[17] These schools have high transfer rates, high absconding rates and also high failure rates. Unfortunately the majority of the schools we studied were in this category. It is because of this that we, as well as Clarke and Sinclair, find that absconding correlates with failure. In fact, it is not the *absconding* that causes the failure but the ineffective regime which produces high failure, high transfer and high absconding. When a large number of schools are analysed this general pattern will dominate, giving a correlation between absconding and failure, especially for senior schools where there are fewer exceptions to the rule. Interestingly, those schools with low transfer, high success but *high* absconding show that much is achieved by taking back absconders.

To summarise, in unsatisfactory schools boys run away and quickly get transferred. In other schools, there is less likelihood of ever running or developing a pattern of persistent absconding and in a number of 'exceptional' schools, absconders are numerous but are generally readmitted so that after release, they share in the generally high success rate of the schools. As Sinclair's study implies and these schools demonstrate, absconding does not *cause* failure.

In our previous work, we also found that in effective schools all boys, whatever their background, did better than in the bad regimes. Admittedly, individual absconders are still more prone to failure than those who never run, but a good regime can disrupt the absconding process. Indeed, from the point of view of security, only boys who persistently run away from *effective* regimes, therefore, present a serious absconding problem and this conduct needs to be identified and met early. The majority of absconders could be helped by correct transfer or, as we shall see, by providing small, open intensive care units in CHEs. Unfortunately, transfer between these homes is usually from one unsatisfactory environment to another and only very rarely is a boy lucky enough to find himself moved to a more effective setting. For example, in our sample of 17 schools there were 1,119 boys, 106 of whom had been to a previous approved school. The schools with low transfer, low absconding and high success contained 18 of these and the 'exceptional' schools (high absconding but low transfer and high success) contained 21. Of this 106, therefore, 39 had been transferred to regimes which stood a good chance of breaking the absconding habit, whereas the remaining 67, two-thirds, had been allocated to homes where failure to moderate absconding was already manifest.

We feel that these findings have considerable implications for secure provision. We noted at the outset that a child's arrival in security resulted from a process of transfer and referral. We found secure units were used more by some local authorities than others and disproportionately more by some CHEs. Studies of children's aggressive behaviour demonstrated the importance of institutional regimes in engineering conflict and turmoil. Now, once again, a careful study of absconding brings us to similar conclusions. Far from being different from other vulnerable children,

expressive control. The reader can look at our other publications for a fuller description of these concepts.[15] But, briefly, institutional control refers to the restrictions imposed on an individual's choice, movement and privacy which result from living in a residential setting, while expressive control measures attempts by the institution to mould and influence children's moral behaviour, beliefs and interpersonal relationships.

While all the dimensions of institutional control seem to correlate equally with absconding, in the case of expressive control, certain areas, such as the lifestyle of the institution and the expressive role of staff, seem to be more significant than others. High levels of both institutional and expressive controls are associated with low absconding. In the first case, the link is more obvious as high institutional controls must restrict freedom to run away. But institutional controls in *themselves* are not sufficient to hold children. While they provide a sense of order and security, they must also be linked with a manifestly caring, moral lifestyle which tempers for children the disadvantages of residential living.

These relationships hold even when we control for the boys' backgrounds. We might have expected that as schools which care for the most delinquent boys tend to display high institutional but low expressive controls, any established links between absconding and control could be explained by the impact of boys' backgrounds. In fact, this is not so. Absconding and control are still related even when the extent of pupils' previous delinquency is taken into consideration. As Clarke and Sinclair say from their evidence, 'Whatever the explanation of these present findings, they do not suggest that schools with low absconding rates have "easier" intakes.' [16]

What, then, can we glean from this evidence on absconding? It is clear from the extensive researches into boys' backgrounds that persistent absconding seems to relate to little else other than deep delinquency and previous absconding. There also seems to be an habitual element in the conduct in that abscondings become more likely the longer a child stays in residential care. In many cases, usually about one-third of the children, the habit is broken if they are transferred elsewhere.

There is also overriding evidence that the environment and climate of the residential setting influences absconding behaviour. Unfortunately, apart from our own material, there seems to have been very little exploration of the characteristics of regimes which display extreme absconding rates. The regimes with high absconding seem to take in very delinquent boys, exercise low levels of institutional and expressive control and achieve poor levels of pastoral care and commitment. On the other hand, regimes with low absconding rates have higher levels of control, happier boys, better pastoral care and seem to give less reinforcement to boys' delinquent aspirations so that even if some boys do run away, they commit fewer offences. Such homes are also more willing than others to take back the returning child.

We have also noted that absconding rates are related to rates for premature transfer of boys before the completion of their stay in residential care, usually because of offences committed while on the run. While this relationship held for the majority of schools, there were a number of exceptions among the schools we

PRIVATE

knew for a fact he was abusing one younger boy at least. If we saw this abuse, the Brothers obviously saw it too but nothing was done about it. It was part of the whole culture, the whole regime.

18. My mother used to come up to visit me every Thursday evening from 7.30pm to 9pm. These visits were always supervised. If our visitors brought us food, very often the older boys would take it off us. An older boy called [REDACTED] used to look after me so I would share my food with him. On a Sunday we would get out to visit our families as well but there was a points system and if your points were too low on a Sunday you would be held back. Even while you were queuing to get the bus home, you could be refused permission over the smallest indiscretion.

19. We had morning Mass daily and then the Angelus in the evenings. I often saw boys being abused during the Angelus while they were at the rear with the Brothers. I think [REDACTED] BR 1 was one of the Brothers who abused boys during the Angelus.

20. I couldn't tell my parents about the abuse as they were very religious and would not accept that a member of the Catholic Church would do such a thing. There were two nuns there and they must have known about the abuse. We tried to mention it to the nuns because we thought we might get a bit of support or help from a woman but they just called us liars and hit us. I believe one of the nuns was called [REDACTED] SR 74 and though I cannot be positive, I recall a [REDACTED] SR 75 as well.

21. Boys would often run away from the home, especially those from the country. Whenever they did, the Brothers would take us bigger ones out in the car to look for them. If you done a runner, as punishment the Brothers would shave your head and take one of your shoes off so you couldn't run. There was one boy nicknamed [REDACTED] who ran away a couple of times and they shaved his head and took one shoe off him to stop him running away.

22. There were rooms underneath the kitchen with just a bed in them. We called them the cells and you would be put in there as punishment anytime you

1 get fur coats and trousers, but in my time there and
2 because I ran away twice, I was always in short
3 trousers. I never received any clothes. So I was in
4 short trousers and that's why I was identified twice
5 when I ran away.

6 Q. In paragraph 19 here you say that you could not do
7 paperwork and you put that down to because you only
8 recall being in the school for two days, although the
9 record we have seen suggests you were there maybe more
10 often than you actually remember, HIA58. You got off to
11 a bad start, and you talk about you had a civilian
12 teacher and you talked about throwing the duster at him
13 to us. You imagine:

14 "... the Brothers were telling him that I was one of
15 the bad boys. I was falling asleep in class as I'd been
16 up half the night before being beaten by the Brothers
17 with sticks, and he could not understand why I wasn't
18 paying attention and why I was dosing off. I ended up
19 back in more trouble and yet I felt I did very little
20 wrong."

21 You go on to speak there about the fact that you
22 blamed your mother when you got out of the home, because
23 you felt she had deserted you and let you down. I know
24 from talking to you that you regret that you never
25 actually called her "mother" when you got out of the

1 was an old pool table, but it did not have any felt on
2 it, just slate and six pockets. A table-tennis table
3 that boys could use.

4 You say some of the older boys were given the power
5 and were able to leave the grounds to look for people,
6 as you have described. You say:

7 "If they found a boy who had absconded, they were
8 allowed to beat him and they were never reprimanded by
9 the Brothers."

10 Now the Order would say that certainly older boys
11 might have sought absconders, but they would not have
12 condoned them assaulting or in any way encouraged them
13 to assault these younger boys. Is there anything you
14 want to say about that?

15 **A. Well, if you didn't like somebody who ran away, that was**
16 **your chance to get him back.**

17 Q. So the older boys basically you are saying took the
18 opportunity --

19 **A. Yes.**

20 Q. -- to mete out vengeance on younger boys --

21 **A. Yes.**

22 Q. -- or any boy who had run away?

23 **A. The chances is the kid would be running away because he**
24 **had grassed him up for hitting him. So now the guy can**
25 **get a chance to get him up now for grassing on him when**

studied. These institutions had high absconding rates but preferred to hold on to their boys and transferred very few.

One of the surprising findings in our previous work was that schools which transferred prematurely were also those which were least successful with boys who completed their training and were released to the community.[17] These schools have high transfer rates, high absconding rates and also high failure rates. Unfortunately the majority of the schools we studied were in this category. It is because of this that we, as well as Clarke and Sinclair, find that absconding correlates with failure. In fact, it is not the *absconding* that causes the failure but the ineffective regime which produces high failure, high transfer and high absconding. When a large number of schools are analysed this general pattern will dominate, giving a correlation between absconding and failure, especially for senior schools where there are fewer exceptions to the rule. Interestingly, those schools with low transfer, high success but *high* absconding show that much is achieved by taking back absconders.

To summarise, in unsatisfactory schools boys run away and quickly get transferred. In other schools, there is less likelihood of ever running or developing a pattern of persistent absconding and in a number of 'exceptional' schools, absconders are numerous but are generally readmitted so that after release, they share in the generally high success rate of the schools. As Sinclair's study implies and these schools demonstrate, absconding does not *cause* failure.

In our previous work, we also found that in effective schools all boys, whatever their background, did better than in the bad regimes. Admittedly, individual absconders are still more prone to failure than those who never run, but a good regime can disrupt the absconding process. Indeed, from the point of view of security, only boys who persistently run away from *effective* regimes, therefore, present a serious absconding problem and this conduct needs to be identified and met early. The majority of absconders could be helped by correct transfer or, as we shall see, by providing small, open intensive care units in CHEs. Unfortunately, transfer between these homes is usually from one unsatisfactory environment to another and only very rarely is a boy lucky enough to find himself moved to a more effective setting. For example, in our sample of 17 schools there were 1,119 boys, 106 of whom had been to a previous approved school. The schools with low transfer, low absconding and high success contained 18 of these and the 'exceptional' schools (high absconding but low transfer and high success) contained 21. Of this 106, therefore, 39 had been transferred to regimes which stood a good chance of breaking the absconding habit, whereas the remaining 67, two-thirds, had been allocated to homes where failure to moderate absconding was already manifest.

We feel that these findings have considerable implications for secure provision. We noted at the outset that a child's arrival in security resulted from a process of transfer and referral. We found secure units were used more by some local authorities than others and disproportionately more by some CHEs. Studies of children's aggressive behaviour demonstrated the importance of institutional regimes in engineering conflict and turmoil. Now, once again, a careful study of absconding brings us to similar conclusions. Far from being different from other vulnerable children,

expressive control. The reader can look at our other publications for a fuller description of these concepts.[15] But, briefly, institutional control refers to the restrictions imposed on an individual's choice, movement and privacy which result from living in a residential setting, while expressive control measures attempts by the institution to mould and influence children's moral behaviour, beliefs and interpersonal relationships.

While all the dimensions of institutional control seem to correlate equally with absconding, in the case of expressive control, certain areas, such as the lifestyle of the institution and the expressive role of staff, seem to be more significant than others. High levels of both institutional and expressive controls are associated with low absconding. In the first case, the link is more obvious as high institutional controls must restrict freedom to run away. But institutional controls in *themselves* are not sufficient to hold children. While they provide a sense of order and security, they must also be linked with a manifestly caring, moral lifestyle which tempers for children the disadvantages of residential living.

These relationships hold even when we control for the boys' backgrounds. We might have expected that as schools which care for the most delinquent boys tend to display high institutional but low expressive controls, any established links between absconding and control could be explained by the impact of boys' backgrounds. In fact, this is not so. Absconding and control are still related even when the extent of pupils' previous delinquency is taken into consideration. As Clarke and Sinclair say from their evidence, 'Whatever the explanation of these present findings, they do not suggest that schools with low absconding rates have "easier" intakes.' [16]

What, then, can we glean from this evidence on absconding? It is clear from the extensive researches into boys' backgrounds that persistent absconding seems to relate to little else other than deep delinquency and previous absconding. There also seems to be an habitual element in the conduct in that abscondings become more likely the longer a child stays in residential care. In many cases, usually about one-third of the children, the habit is broken if they are transferred elsewhere.

There is also overriding evidence that the environment and climate of the residential setting influences absconding behaviour. Unfortunately, apart from our own material, there seems to have been very little exploration of the characteristics of regimes which display extreme absconding rates. The regimes with high absconding seem to take in very delinquent boys, exercise low levels of institutional and expressive control and achieve poor levels of pastoral care and commitment. On the other hand, regimes with low absconding rates have higher levels of control, happier boys, better pastoral care and seem to give less reinforcement to boys' delinquent aspirations so that even if some boys do run away, they commit fewer offences. Such homes are also more willing than others to take back the returning child.

We have also noted that absconding rates are related to rates for premature transfer of boys before the completion of their stay in residential care, usually because of offences committed while on the run. While this relationship held for the majority of schools, there were a number of exceptions among the schools we

1 **and '80s, it was a very different environment.**

2 Q. Our remit goes up to 1995 obviously. During that time
3 what sort of measures were taken to deal with
4 absconding?

5 A. Well, absconding would have decreased as the numbers of
6 young people coming into the facilities decreased,
7 because staff were able to give them more time.

8 Q. Right.

9 A. By that time in the '90s the young people would have
10 been moved out of the big main school block, which did
11 not give much comfort to young people. I mean, it was
12 quite a cold stark building, tiled, and not much room
13 for privacy or comfort for young people, you know.

14 Q. You mentioned the number of people you got through staff
15 training in-house. Was that to qualification level?

16 A. That was professional qualification level. It was known
17 as the employment-based route to professional training.

18 Q. To -- what, to the CQSW, was it, at that stage or ...?

19 A. It was the CQSW and then I think latterly it became the
20 --

21 Q. The CSS or something different?

22 A. The diploma -- no, the CSS was the forerunner.

23 Q. It was a diploma in social work?

24 A. Well, it is now the -- I think it is now the diploma.

25 Q. Yes.

that training school unit has significantly fewer staff than the children's home. In the Inspectors' view the staffing levels currently allocated by St Patrick's management do not adequately take into account the special demands of work in an assessment unit. It was noted that the school does not even employ in Aisling House the full number of staff for whom it receives funding. Furthermore the duty rota does not make the best use of the people available and, in some respects, appears to be designed for the convenience of the staff involved rather than for the best supervisory arrangements for the children. A further concern was the apparent inadequacy of the arrangements for senior staff cover to resolve problems and difficulties. Given the additional duties associated with a short term reception and assessment unit the Inspectorate believes that there is a need for a review of the existing staffing provision in this unit. It is also necessary to review the way in which staff are deployed to ensure that it is in the best interests of the residents.

- 6.9 The assessment process in Aisling House currently appears to lack a firm focus. The Inspectors have suggested that consideration should be given to adopting a more structured approach.
- 6.10 There is considerable reliance on the use of the quiet rooms and Slemish House, both of which are forms of secure accommodation, as responses to poor behaviour. This may be because the current staffing levels are not adequate but it is not considered to be most appropriate way for a care unit to attempt to modify behaviour. Furthermore this method will probably not be legal following the implementation of the Children (NI) Order 1995.
- 6.11 Most importantly, however, is the response to absconding in the school. The records show that absconding levels are very high and it is an problem which staff find difficult to control. Whilst the Inspectors were told that both management and staff treat it seriously it is felt that a more strategic approach is needed if it is to be tackled effectively. While it is not expected that absconding will be completely eliminated the current levels are too high and they should not be treated as inevitable. Given that a considerable amount of work has been done to try to reduce absconding in another training school in Northern Ireland the lessons learnt there should be passed on to St.Patrick's. The Inspectors have made a number of suggestions which should enable the school to monitor absconding more closely and develop a strategy to reduce it.

- 5.24 Some of the records in Aisling House examined by the Inspectors suggest that absconding from the school is not always treated as seriously as it might be. For example a number of the reports on case files do not suggest that the dangers of an eleven or twelve year old boy being missing for several days are fully recognised. Some of them are written in style which suggests that they may not be treated with the seriousness they deserve. Furthermore there is little indication that the reasons for the absconding are followed up or discussed with the boy following his return. Staff appear to take the view that, since it is an open unit, there is little that they can do to stop absconding if the boys are determined to go whereas experience elsewhere shows that a considerable amount can be done to reduce the risks by identifying them systematically and providing additional direct supervision when necessary.
- 5.25 Absconding is a serious issue and steps need to be taken to address the problem as a matter of urgency if the current levels are to be reduced. There are obvious dangers when children as young as eleven remain out of adult supervision and care overnight or for even longer periods, particularly during a period of civil unrest as is amply demonstrated by SPT 81's tragic death. However, there are also risks that the young people can become involved in delinquent activities. It can instil a sense of failure among staff and seriously damage the reputation of the school.
- 5.26 A review of the literature on absconding suggests that there is likely to be more absconding by young people in short term care units, particularly when they are uncertain about their futures. It is also more likely to occur when there are high occupancy levels. All these factors apply in Aisling House which would suggest that the risk of absconding may be higher there than in other units on the St.Patrick's campus.
- 5.27 The incidence of absconding from the other large training school in Northern Ireland has also been high. As a result of public concern about it a special study was undertaken by APRU in 1991. This study helped the school's management to identify a pattern of absconding in terms of the type of young people most likely to abscond, the times of the day and even the season of the year at which they were most likely to leave, the house units with the highest levels of absconding and the types of supervision which gave the highest and lowest levels of risk. Having identified the risk factors management were able to develop a fifteen point strategy to tackle the problem. It is significant that when the situation was reviewed a year later the levels of absconding in the school had been significantly reduced. The Inspectors were concerned to be told that the lessons learnt in the exercise were not shared with the staff of St.Patrick's. **It is recommended that at least the conclusions and recommendations should be made available and that a similar exercise should be conducted in St.Patrick's.**

RECOMMENDATIONS

1. It is recommended that the Western Board should commission a review of its fostering services with a view to achieving an improved level of availability. (Paragraph 3.2)
2. It is recommended that St.Patrick's Training School should prepare an information leaflet for referring agencies outlining the services that they can offer. (Paragraph 3.4)
3. It is recommended that the Western Board should prepare guidance for its staff on the admission of young children to training schools. (Paragraph 3.7)
4. It is recommended that Place of Safety Orders should not be used to transfer children to training schools other than in emergencies when the school is in a position and willing to admit them immediately. (Paragraph 3.9)
5. It is recommended that when children are transferred from Board accommodation to training schools the time prior to admission should be used to provide the school with information about the child's history and behaviour and to make firm plans about how the placement will be used to achieve identified objectives. (Paragraph 4.5)
6. If it is found that boys are absconding from Aisling House through doors that are difficult for staff to supervise consideration should be given to fitting them with alarms. (Paragraph 5.2)
7. It is recommended that consideration should be given to providing a more structured approach to the assessment process. (Paragraph 5.12)
8. The use of secure accommodation as a response to misbehaviour should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.16)
9. It is recommended that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools on the use of secure accommodation and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff. (Paragraph 5.19)
10. It is recommended that care should be taken to consider the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour by their placement in group containing persistent absconders. (Paragraph 5.23)
11. It is recommended that the conclusions and recommendations made in the study of absconding in another training school should be made available to St.Patrick's and that a similar exercise should be conducted there. Paragraph 5.27)

RESTRICTED - MANAGEMENT

identified by the review, especially those set out in the "lessons to be learned" in Chapter 6. The current arrangements for inspections of training schools were agreed between SSI and NIO in 1992. In summary they require SSI to carry out a general inspection of each of the training schools every fourth year. In the intervening years the three schools not subject to a general inspection are subject to a regulatory inspection. There are, in addition, arrangements for SSI to periodically undertake unannounced visits to units within the schools. The first general inspection of St Patrick's was due to have taken place in late 1994. It was postponed because of the need to conduct the review into the circumstances surrounding [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED]'s death. I am confident that if the inspection had gone ahead as planned many of the deficiencies would have been identified in its course.

3. I should point out that on the basis of our knowledge about St Patrick's and the other schools we have been advocating for some time the need for the establishment of proper monitoring systems to inform management committees and the NIO of the adequacy of the oversight and control arrangements in the schools. Had there been such systems in place it is likely some of the concerns identified by SSI in the [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED] case would have come to light earlier. NIO was, of course, already well aware of the high levels of absconding at St Patrick's and there have been a number of the concerns arising from the [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED] investigation which SSI had already brought to the attention of either the Boards or the NIO. I do not feel it is, therefore, entirely justified to imply that SSI has not been as perceptive as it might have been.
4. This said I am pleased to report that following the production of the [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED] report we have agreed with NIO (CJSD) the need for a review of the current arrangements for inspection and

RESTRICTED - MANAGEMENT

1 **people in the chalets never absconded. Not in our**
2 **chalet they never absconded. It was always in the main**
3 **building.**

4 Q. Right. Thank you. Thank you very much.

5 CHAIRMAN: HIA227, can I just come back to the chalets
6 again? I gather from what you said there was more than
7 one chalet?

8 **A. Yes.**

9 Q. Can you remember how many there were even approximately?

10 **A. There was three chalets, but one was for senior side and**
11 **that was -- that was down -- that was on the senior**
12 **side. There was the two chalets for junior.**

13 Q. When you say on the senior side, somewhere else on the
14 site?

15 **A. Yes, on the site. There was three chalets altogether --**

16 Q. Yes. So --

17 **A. -- one for seniors and two -- two chalets for juniors.**

18 Q. Two chalets for juniors?

19 **A. For juniors, yes.**

20 Q. And the junior chalets were in a different part to the
21 senior chalets?

22 **A. Yes, they were out of the road, yes.**

23 Q. Thank you very much indeed.

24 Well, HIA227, those are the only questions we want
25 to ask you. Thank you very much for coming to speak to

- 2.23 A case discussion was held at Harberton House on 27th June 1994 when, among other things, it was confirmed that attempts to secure a place for SPT 81 at St Patrick's would continue. In the middle of the following month the Western Board's staff were informed that he could be admitted there on 22nd July as a place had become available.
- 2.24 The Western Board were granted a Place of Safety Order on 22nd July and SPT 81 was transported to St Patrick's by his own social worker. When he was admitted to Aisling no written information about SPT 81 was provided for the training school staff. However, it was arranged that an initial case review would be held four days later on 26th July.
- 2.25 Following SPT 81's admission a woman member of the Aisling House staff was appointed as his key worker and she helped to settle him into the unit. He was reported as being "quite cocky and attempted to have the last word". At bedtime SPT 81 was found sticking a compass spike into his door lock and the senior residential social worker removed it from him and warned him about his behaviour.
- 2.26 SPT 81's behaviour caused problems the following evening as well. The night supervisor recorded that both SPT 81 and another boy were very badly behaved and that he had to contact the Senior Residential Social Worker at 11.20 pm. SPT 81 had demanded that his bedroom light be left on and called the night supervisor "a variety of choice names" including "queer" and others that were "more spicy". As a result the Senior Residential Social Worker removed him to Slemish House which is St Patrick's close supervision unit. It provides secure accommodation for "care" boys on the campus.
- 2.27 SPT 81 was returned to Aisling at about 8.45pm on the evening of 24th July, but the night supervisor again recorded that SPT 81 and the other boy were "very cheeky and high". After lights out they continued to disturb the other boys, one of whom complained about their behaviour and asked the supervisor to keep them quiet. However, he noted that this was "an impossible feat" for him.
- 2.28 After that the number of references to SPT 81 in the night book decline rapidly. On 27th July it was noted that "SPT 81" and "SPT 81" in bed by 9.10pm after attempting to abscond at 9pm" (there is no further information about this attempted absconding in any of the other records) and on 31st "SPT 81" had his radio on at 7.45am. A little cheeky when asked to turn it off".
- 2.29 The case file also suggests that SPT 81 was beginning to settle quite rapidly after his first week at Aisling. There are fewer comments about bad behaviour and more about him playing with his toys (apparently a rare activity for boys in St Patrick's), his interest in helicopters, being "competitive in a positive way" and responding co-operatively to a request

- 5.19 Nevertheless, in the Inspectors' view the lack of any regulations or guidance on such a sensitive topic as the use of secure accommodation for children is too serious an omission to remain until the implementation of the new legislation. **They recommend that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools as soon as possible and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff.**

Absconding

- 5.20 **SPT 81** had absconded twice while he was in the Western Board's area. On the first occasion he left Nazareth House and was found the following morning at his grandmother's home. On the second he went missing from Harberton House with another boy and they were both found a few hours later by a member of staff. It appears that the two boys were "mitching" school for the morning. In themselves these two incidents were not regarded as being very serious.
- 5.21 At the time that **SPT 81** was admitted to Aisling House, there had been a spate of abscondings which were brought to the attention of the Western Board's staff only at the initial case review, four days later. In the two months prior to 14th August there had been twenty eight abscondings from the unit. Eighteen of them involved the four boys who later absconded with **SPT 81**. One of them had left the school on seven separate occasions; a second boy on five occasions and the other two had each left three times without permission. A culture of absconding appears to have been established with incidents involving small groups of boys occurring every five or six days on average. In the whole of St Patrick's there were 353 abscondings from the school in the first six months of 1994.
- 5.22 In the Inspectors' view it should have been a matter of concern that a new boy to the unit, especially one as young as **SPT 81**, would be at real risk of being influenced by others to become involved in their absconding activities. The staff who had worked with him, however, felt that he was unlikely to abscond and told the Inspectors that they were surprised when they were told that he had become involved in the incident on 14th August.
- 5.23 With the benefit of hindsight this proved to be an incorrect assessment and it is now clear that **SPT 81** was subject to the influence of a group of persistent absconders to the point where he collected and hid the food and clothes that they needed. The staff involved were aware that **SPT 81** was easily influenced by others and in the Inspectors' view more cognisance of the dangers of his becoming involved in absconding should have been taken at the time of his admission. **It is recommended that more consideration should be given to the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour if they are placed in a group containing persistent absconders.**

an absconder and did not return to Belfast until after midnight. The RSW told the Inspectors that he had told one of the school's senior management team on Saturday morning and again after Mass on Saturday evening that there did not appear to be anyone available to cover Saul House on the Sunday. As far as he was aware no plans were made to cover this. Consequently when he awoke on the Sunday morning he telephoned the night supervisor in Saul and found that no one had reported for duty. He came to St. Patrick's and telephoned SPT 81's keyworker who was on duty in Aisling and advised her of the problem. She told him that all the boys were still asleep and that she could manage without his help. As a result he decided to let the night supervisor go home and phoned the staff member who had gone to Galway. He agreed to shower and come in to work. The RSW decided that he would cover Saul until he was relieved.

- 2.39 When the RSW was relieved by his colleague he went to Aisling. By that time it had been reported that the weekend leave arrangements of two Aisling boys had broken down and their parents had requested that they be returned to the school. As a result SPT 81's key worker left to collect them accompanied by another RSW who worked in Chalet 1. This arrangement left Aisling, Saul and Chalet 1 with only one member of staff on duty in each.
- 2.40 The RSW was left in Aisling supervising four boys (SPT 81, [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]). SPT 81 and [REDACTED] were playing with a football, [REDACTED] was playing with a frisbee on the other side of the building and the RSW was talking to [REDACTED].
- 2.41 SPT 81's key worker and the RSW from Chalet 1 returned with the first boy ([REDACTED]) at about 12.45pm and he went into the house. They then left again to collect the other ([REDACTED]), returning at about 2.50pm after which the key worker went off duty having been relieved by another residential social worker who had come on duty at 2.30. For the first time that day there were two members of staff in Aisling House. They both felt that the group was becoming increasingly unsettled and decided to take them out in the minibus. At that stage four of the boys (SPT 81, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED]) were outside playing football and [REDACTED] was still playing with his frisbee. The Saul House RSW arranged to get the keys for the minibus from the brothers' house. He suggested that the four boys who were playing football should accompany him but they did not want to. He then left his colleague with the six boys. This RSW entered the house apparently wanting to check on the whereabouts of the boy [REDACTED], although in fact he was still outside playing with his frisbee where he had been for some time. While they were thus unsupervised the five boys absconded. This was at 3.30pm.
- 2.42 When the Saul RSW returned his colleague told him that "all" the boys had gone although one of them, [REDACTED], turned out still to be there. When asked, he said that he did not know where the others had gone. The two RSWs

then searched the school grounds and, having found no sign of them, one of them took the minibus intending to tour the area to see if they could be found. He returned at about 4.30pm whereupon their absence was reported to the police, the boys parents and the children's homes from whence they had come. One of the RSWs also phoned acquaintances in the community to ask them look out for the boys.

- 2.43 According to the statements that the four surviving boys subsequently made to the staff of the school the absconding was, to at least some extent, planned in advance in that SPT 81 had hidden a bag of clothes and food in the bushes alongside Hookers Lane, which leads from Aisling to the Mona by-pass and is a route favoured by boys leaving the school illicitly, between the times that [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were returned to the school. After the boys left they made their way right across the city to the Antrim Road area. During the evening they passed some time in Dunville Park and the Waterworks before returning to the Falls Road area in the early hours of the following morning.
- 2.44 In the early hours of the morning the boys broke into one car but were unable to drive it because of a chain attached to the steering wheel. At about 3.30am they did succeed in "bump-starting" another car. On the first attempt two boys ([REDACTED] & [REDACTED]) got into the car but it stalled and had to be push started again. On this occasion a third boy ([REDACTED]) also got in, leaving SPT 81 and [REDACTED] in the road. According to [REDACTED], SPT 81 lay in the road crying because he could not get into the car. The Police confirmed that a lady in the street had heard a boy crying at this time.
- 2.45 The three boys in the car drove around a block and were seen from an army observation post in Divis Street. Initially the soldiers did not pay much attention to it because it was only being driven slowly. However, their attention was drawn by the rear lights which were flashing on and off. They radioed their suspicions that it might have been stolen to Grosvenor Road RUC Station where it was arranged that a patrol would be sent to investigate.
- 2.46 SPT 81 and [REDACTED] moved to the corner of Albert Street and Ross Street where the soldiers view of them was obscured by buildings. However, according to the boys' statements each time the car was driven around the block SPT 81 stood in front of it in an attempt to get the driver to stop but managed to jump aside to avoid being hit. On the first two occasions he jumped out of its path in one direction and the driver swerved the other way avoiding him. On the third occasion SPT 81 is said to have jumped the other way, was hit by the car, run over and killed.
- 2.47 The car stopped a short distance down the road where it was again seen from the army observation post. It was abandoned by the boys who made their way through an alley way into the Falls Road. Their movements were reported to the Police by the Army until they lost sight of them but a

short time later they were picked up by security cameras in the Springfield Road. Within a few minutes the Police arrived and all the boys were arrested.

ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

INQUIRY REPORTTHE INCIDENT

The incident involved the absconding of five boys from Aisling House on Sunday August 14th and the subsequent death of one of those boys on Monday August 15th.

REASON FOR THE INQUIRY

Was it not, therefore, at the instigation of N.I.O. that this report was done?
On learning of the above incident on August 15th and in light of the serious consequence, the Chairman of the Board of Management directed two members of the Board to undertake an inquiry into the incident as soon as was appropriate and practical.

FOLLOW-UP

Canon Peter McCann (Deputy Chairman of the Board of Management) and Mr [REDACTED] (Board of Management), on behalf of the Board of Management, interviewed members of the staff involved on Monday August 22nd and drafted a report for the meeting of the Board of Management on September 9th 1994.

BRIEF DETAILS OF INCIDENT

- a) Four boys resident in Unit over the weekend.
- b) Two other boys from the Unit whose leave had broken down were, at the request of their parents, collected and returned to Aisling House on Sunday August 14th at 12.30 p.m. and 2.50 p.m. respectively.
- d) Of these six boys five boys absconded in the direction of Turf Lodge at 3:30 p.m. on Sunday August 14th.
- e) One member of staff searched the area for about an hour looking for them.
- f) Incident reported to Police at 4:30 p.m.
- g) Grosvenor Road R.U.C. contacted St Patrick's at 4:55 a.m., August 15th, reporting they had apprehended four boys whom they believed to be absconders from St Patrick's Training School. They wanted to question them regarding a stolen car which may have been involved in the death of a boy. Later it transpired that the boy in question was [REDACTED]

SPT 81

- 2 -

STAFF INVOLVED DIRECTLY/INDIRECTLY

Marie O'Neill - Residential Social Worker (on duty Sunday August 14th
8.30 a.m. - 3.30 p.m.) — See p.3. Went off duty at 3.00pm!!

Jim Brady - Residential Social Worker (on duty Sunday August 14th
2.30 p.m. - 10.00 p.m.)

SPT 57 - Residential Social Worker (on duty Sunday August 14th
11.00 a.m. - 10.00 p.m.)

Margaret Erskine - Domestic Staff (on duty Sunday August 14th
9.15 a.m. - 1.00 p.m. and 3.45 p.m. - 6.15 p.m.)

STAFF INTERVIEWS

Marie O'Neill (duty Sunday August 14th, 8:30 a.m. to 3:00 p.m.). Marie said that the four boys who had been resident in the Unit over the weekend (**SPT 81**, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]), got up for brunch at 11:00 a.m. They appeared settled and in good form.

SPT 57 arrived on duty in Aisling House at 11:00 a.m. Marie brought **SPT 57** up to date on the events in the Unit.

Two events of particular concern were 'phonecalls received from Mrs [REDACTED] (mother of [REDACTED]) and Mrs [REDACTED] (mother of [REDACTED]).

The weekend leave granted to both [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] had broken down. Both boys had to be collected from their homes.

Pearse McCreesh (Residential Social Worker, Chalet II) was called to accompany Marie to collect [REDACTED] and all returned to Aisling House at 12:45 p.m. As they were returning they noticed people on the streets assembling for the proposed Sinn Fein march, and there was talk of the Derry Group "D.Ream" playing the final night of the West Belfast Festival.

On his return to the Unit [REDACTED] showed signs of being unsettled. However, he joined the four residents who were playing football on the gravel pitch.

Pearse McCreesh then accompanied Marie to collect [REDACTED] and returned to the School with him at 2:50 p.m.

- 3 -

Marie went off duty at 3:00 p.m. The boys were out on the pitch and [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] gave indications of being unsettled.

Jim Brady (duty 2:30 p.m. to 10:00 p.m.), said the boys were out playing and he noticed they were restless and decided to take them for a drive as a diversionary tactic. SPT 57 went to collect the minibus and while they were waiting, Jim missed [REDACTED], who is a very disturbed boy, and went upstairs to see if he was in his bedroom. While he was upstairs the other five absconded but [REDACTED], who was in the grounds, refused to go with them. When SPT 57 returned with the minibus Jim told him the boys were missing and SPT 57 immediately went to look for them. Jim reported the incident to the R.U.C. at 4:30 p.m.

SPT 57 (duty 11:00 a.m. to 10:00 p.m.), said he came to Aisling House at 11:00 a.m. As the boys seemed happy and contented he freed Marie to collect [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].

[REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were very friendly when they returned. SPT 57 noticed them engaged in conversation and at one stage asked them what they were talking about. They seemed a little restless. Jim and he decided they would take the boys for a drive to ease the situation. SPT 57 went to get the minibus and was away for 15 mins. When he returned Jim told him that five of the boys were missing and he left immediately in the minibus to see if he could find them. He made an extensive search of the area, shopping malls etc for about an hour to no avail.

Margaret Erskine (Domestic Staff), said that on Sunday morning [REDACTED] SPT 81 was around the kitchen and she gave him a banana as he had not eaten his breakfast. He also took with him some biscuits and orange juice as he was leaving the kitchen.

- 4 -

GENERAL COMMENTS

Since absconding can sometimes be explained by boys being unhappy or because of a perception real or imaginary of not being fairly treated by staff or companions, the Investigatory Committee asked about Saturday 13th August.

Statements given by Brother **BR 90**, Margaret Erskine and Marie O'Neill described the boys as being settled and happy.

In particular, Brother **BR 90** told us how happy **SPT 81** was on Saturday evening, when his desire to be the altar server at the Vigil Mass was fulfilled. His joy was evident at the time of the Sign of Peace when he exchanged greetings with staff and companions. Later, while waiting for the evening meal, prepared by Marie O'Neill, **SPT 81** joined Brother **BR 90** in throwing a boomerang in the field adjoining Aisling House. **SPT 81** was obviously happy.

Marie O'Neill described the events of Sunday morning, 14th August. It is possible that the return to Aisling House of the two boys whose weekend leave had broken down had an unsettling effect on the four boys in the House. There was talk of the Sinn Fein parade to the City Hall and the possibility that the Derry music group "D.Ream" was coming to Belfast for the outdoor festival on Sunday night.

AISLING HOUSE:

St Patrick's is an open Training School and Aisling House, which is the Assessment Centre, is the most open of all the Chalets. It is the first point of entry into St Patrick's for boys who have varying degrees of disturbance. The assessment/programme of care includes helping young people develop relationships and learn to trust adults. However, it is often a very painful time and any changes in the group dynamics can affect individuals and the group.

Mr Jim Brady and Mr **SPT 57** are experienced Residential Social Workers and we have every confidence in them. They were quickly aware of the unsettled mood among some boys and had taken the decision to redirect the boys' interest.

- 5 -

They had given as adequate supervision as possible in the open ethos of Aisling House where relationships are at an embryonic stage at this point of entry. There is a fluidity in any assessment group and individuals and the group can be unpredictable. The sudden absence of [REDACTED] was part of the unpredictability that Mr Brady had to contend with whilst on his own. During those few moments whilst he checked upstairs for [REDACTED], SPT 81 SPT 81 became caught up in the excitement of a 'follow-the-leader' adventure which ended so tragically.

- 6 -

SUMMARY OF CONCLUSIONS

(1) The level of staffing was adequate and in keeping with staffing policy. However, the necessity to take two boys back from weekend leave placed extra stress on staff and group of boys.

(2) The reason for deciding to take the boys on an outing was good child care practice for the following reasons:

(a) Staff were aware that two boys were unsettled after returning and took steps to alleviate the situation. The decision to take them out would have been a good diversionary tactic.

(b) It would have minimised the effect of the bands, parades and general festivities which were clearly audible in the Unit.

(3) The Investigatory Committee examined Mr Brady's decision to leave five boys and go to seek out **NL 260**. **NL 260** is a seriously disturbed boy so Mr Brady's anxiety about his sudden disappearance was justified. The difficulty Mr Brady experienced was how to harmonise his concern for the boy out of sight and at the same time observe the five boys on the nearby pitch. Whatever decision he made in this dilemma was likely to have repercussions.

*help from
other units?
- eg, RSW from
Chapel-It helps
our earlier
leaving 2 RSWs
in charge of 4
boys 0 left in
charge of 5 at
one stage!*

- esp when admission of boys of unstable status amongst the gp.

(4) The time it took **SPT 57** to collect the minibus was checked by the Investigatory Committee. They walked from Aisling House to the point where keys are collected and found that 12/15 minutes was the minimum time in which this exercise could be carried out.

(5) RECOMMENDATION

THE MANNER OF COLLECTING THE MINIBUS WAS EXAMINED AND WE RECOMMEND THAT IN SUCH CIRCUMSTANCES CARE STAFF SHOULD TAKE THE BOYS WITH THEM WHEN GOING TO COLLECT THE MINIBUS, SO AS TO HAVE MAXIMUM SUPERVISION.

(6) The Board recognises that even with maximum supervision, boys may still abscond.

The supervision could hardly be described as 'maximum'.

- 7 -

SEARCH AND REPORTING:

Because of the situation in West Belfast, police have been unable over the years to respond to a situation such as the one under scrutiny or to search for boys. The Policy of the School has been firstly for staff to do an immediate search of grounds and local area and to notify the R.U.C. as soon as possible.

The action of the staff to go out immediately to search for boys and to notify the police in the event of not finding a boy or boys was in keeping with the School Policy. *Should both not be done when it is clear boys have absconded as here.*

The Board noted the following:

- (a) The Sinn Fein parade and the West Belfast festivities would have further exacerbated the situation.
- (b) The parents/guardians of all absconders had been informed of the situation soon after the event.
- (c) Jim Brady and **SPT 57** waited in St Patrick's on that Sunday hoping that the parents of the two boys whose home leave had broken down would again telephone the School as they had done earlier and tell of the whereabouts of the boys. Unfortunately, they did not see them.

SIGNED ...*B*...

BRO

BR 90**BR 90**

(Secretary)

(Board of Management)

DATE ...*20/9/94*...

STRICTLY CONFIDENTIAL

**REPORT ON THE
CARE PROVIDED FOR
SPT 81**

December 1994

**R J Bunting
Chairman
Case Management Review Team**

C O N T E N T S

	PAGE(S)
1 BACKGROUND AND REMIT	1 - 2
2 CIRCUMSTANCES LEADING TO SPT 81 ADMISSION TO CARE	3 - 47
3 GENERAL OVERVIEW	48- 49
4 SUMMARY OF CONCLUSIONS	50- 58
5 RECOMMENDATIONS	59- 60

BACKGROUND AND REMIT

1.1 On the 17th August 1994, the General Manager and the Director of Social Care initiated a Case Management Review to consider the care of SPT 81 and his subsequent placement in St Patrick's Training School. The Review was initiated following SPT 81's death as a result of an accident involving a stolen car. This car was stolen by boys, who had absconded from St Patrick's Training School. SPT 81 was with this group.

1.2 The Officers appointed to undertake the Review were Mr R Bunting, Assistant Director of Social Services, Family and Child Care, Eastern Health and Social Services Board, Chairman, and Mr T Haverty, Chief Social Work Adviser, Western Health and Social Services Board.

1.3 The terms of reference for the Review Team were approved on 20th September 1994 following discussions between and with the Social Services Inspectorate of the Department of Health and Social Services, the Management Executive and the Northern Ireland Office and are as follows

"The Case Management Review will consider arrangements for the care of SPT 81 from his admission to the care of the Western Health and Social Services Board on 24th May 1993 until his transfer to St Patrick's Training School, Belfast on the 22nd July 1994. The Review will also consider the nature of liaison between the Western Health and Social Services Board staff and staff at St Patrick's while SPT 81 was a resident there.

The Review Team will examine -

- i. the reasons for SPT 81's admission to care on 24.5.93
- ii. the extent to which care plans were prepared and implemented
- iii. the reasons for his transfer to St Patrick's Training School and the procedures followed
- iv. liaison arrangements with St Patrick's Training School during the time of his residence there
- v. whether established policies and procedures were followed in all circumstances.

The team will recommend any appropriate action in the light of the Review findings.

The Review Team's Report will be forwarded to the Director of Social Care, Western Health and Social Services Board by 28th October 1994".

1.4 The Review Team's approach to the task in order to fulfil its remit was to:-

- i. obtain all relevant reports and information including an examination of fieldwork, residential and day care files,
- ii. interview relevant residential and field work staff,
- iii. analyse the information,
- iv. identify gaps in the information and seek further information where necessary,

- v. evaluate on a professional basis the care and services provided to SPT 81 and his parents prior to admission to care and during the period he was in the care of the Board, taking into consideration the resources available including staff workloads, and
- vi. determine whether the decisions in relation to SPT 81 and his parents were realistic bearing in mind the state of knowledge at the time and resources which were available.

1.5 The Review Team met on twenty six occasions and in addition worked individually. The case files examined included SPT 81's file, the family file, Nazareth House and Harberton House files SPT 81's file, and Creggan Day Centre File. These were read and relevant issues were identified and analysed.

We would wish to place on record that we have received the full co-operation of every staff member who was asked to provide information and/or clarify specific issues. In all the Review Team had contact with thirteen social work staff and interviewed eight of these staff. In addition the Team had contact with the Police, St Patrick's Training School and interviewed the appropriate St Patrick's staff.

1.6 The Review Team's conclusions are based on the information contained in these records, discussions with relevant staff and interviews with both Mr [REDACTED] and Mrs [REDACTED].

Hopefully we avoided making assumptions and the use of hind-sight in coming to our conclusions. All the conclusions reached and opinions expressed are the unanimous views of the Review Team.

2 CIRCUMSTANCES LEADING TO SPT 81'S ADMISSION TO CARE

2.1 [REDACTED] FAMILY [REDACTED] LONDONDERRY

Mr [REDACTED]	Father	[REDACTED]
Mrs [REDACTED]	Mother	[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]	Daughter	[REDACTED]
	Son	
	Daughter	
	Son	

2.2 Social work involvement with this family recommenced on the 23rd October 1991. At that time the family was living at [REDACTED]. The parents were separated but had resumed living together and both were unemployed. [REDACTED] and SPT 81 attended St Mary's Holy Child School, [REDACTED] attended Cromore Gardens Play group and [REDACTED] was at home.

On this date Mrs [REDACTED] contacted Riverview Social Care office (Foyle Community Unit of Management) seeking social work support. She was very upset and asked to speak to a female social worker. She told the Social Worker that her husband had an alcohol problem and had been extremely violent to her in the past. She said that she was at her wits-end and needed social work support. She was advised to call into the Riverview Social Care Office on the 25th October 1991.

Mrs [REDACTED] did not keep this appointment. She telephoned again on the 30th October 1991 and a Social Worker arranged to visit her at home on the 4th November 1991. During this visit Mrs [REDACTED] advised that Mr [REDACTED] was in Crumlin Road Prison, Belfast following damage to a friend's house and assaulting a Police Officer who had been called to the scene. Mr [REDACTED] was apparently drunk when this incident took place. It would appear that this violence was also directed at his wife and Mrs [REDACTED] obtained an Emergency Personal Protection Order at this time and subsequently obtained an Exclusion Order and Personal Protection Order on the 22nd November 1991.

Mrs [REDACTED] advised that she had previously obtained help from a Social Worker during the period 1983-86, when she suffered from post-natal depression. At this time [REDACTED]'s name was placed on the Child Protection Register due to bruising she sustained when beaten by her mother.

Mrs [REDACTED] was depressed and receiving medication. Her main concern was how her husband would react when he was released from prison and not allowed to return home. She complained of feelings of loneliness and being alone. She felt that separating from her husband now would be beneficial for the children. She said that she had a lot of support from neighbours, her sister and a group of people from within the Cursillo group (Voluntary Support Group). In view of this the Social Worker decided not to revisit but arranged for Mrs [REDACTED] to contact her if she felt she required further assistance.

2.3 On the 6th November 1991, Mrs [REDACTED] contacted again seeking advice on how to handle SPT 81. Mrs [REDACTED] said that she was coping well with the other children. She remained anxious about her husband's release from Prison. However on release he went to live with his mother. The Social Worker dealt with this matter by telephone contact and having allayed Mrs [REDACTED]'s concerns decided to put the case forward for closure. This decision was approved by the Senior Social Worker (Team Leader).

2.4 On the 11th December 1991 Mrs [REDACTED] telephoned again requesting help with SPT 81's behaviour. During a social work visit on 12 December 1991, Mrs [REDACTED] reported that SPT 81 was stealing down town as well as from her. The Social Worker raised with both Mrs [REDACTED] and SPT 81 the possibility of him attending the After School Group at the Family Day Centre, Creggan. He agreed to this and a referral was made to the Centre.

2.5 On the 13th December 1991 Mr [REDACTED] phoned the Out of Hours Emergency Social Work Service and reported that the children had been left unattended. Mrs [REDACTED] had gone down town. Mr [REDACTED] removed all four children to his care.

2.6 On the 16th December 1991 a Social Worker visited both Mr and Mrs [REDACTED] and spoke with [REDACTED] and SPT 81 at Creggan Day Centre. Mr [REDACTED] returned and [REDACTED] to Mrs [REDACTED] on the 16th December 1991 but refused to return and SPT 81. He stated that they refused to go home as their mother had physically abused them. Both children advised the Social Worker that they wanted to remain with their father and claimed that their mother had physically abused them. They remained in their father's care until the end of January 1992 when Mr [REDACTED] was admitted to the St John of God, Nursing Home, Newry, for treatment for his abuse of alcohol. Prior to admission he left the two older children in the care of family friends.

During this period SPT 81 was aware of his father's limited ability to care for him and his sister, because of his drinking. SPT 81 and the other children witnessed an incident prior to Christmas when Mr [REDACTED] called at their mother's home and damaged the furniture and Christmas presents, whilst under the influence of alcohol. This led to Mr [REDACTED] being charged with criminal damage and assault on a Police Officer.

All four children spent Christmas Day and Boxing Day at home with their mother. SPT 81 and his sister [REDACTED] returned to their father afterwards. On New Year's Eve, Mr [REDACTED] called at their mother's house shortly after midnight along with the children in their night clothes, to wish her a happy New Year.

Early in January 1992 SPT 81 reported that his father continued to abuse alcohol and on one occasion while drunk told SPT 81 that he was not his son and that he should go home to his mother. During the remainder of January 1992, Mr [REDACTED] continued to experience difficulty in caring for the children.

2.7 The Social Worker visited SPT 81 and his sister during January 1992 when they were in the care of their father. They refused to return home to their mother but SPT 81 seemed unhappy with his father's care. He attended Creggan Day Centre during this period. The Social Worker also visited the children during the period they were placed with friends. SPT 81 was happy with this placement and indicated that he wished to remain there long term.

In addition, the Social Worker visited SPT 81 at the Holy Child School on the 4th February 1992. He seemed unhappy and said that he hated school.

2.8 Mrs [REDACTED] had been granted custody of all the children in 1987. She decided to regain the care of SPT 81 and [REDACTED] and initiated legal proceedings on the grounds that Mr [REDACTED] was in contempt of court. A hearing took place at Londonderry Magistrates Court on the 20th December 1991 and this was followed by a number of adjournments.

As part of these proceedings Mrs [REDACTED] had agreed to adjournments to enable Mr [REDACTED] to petition for the custody of SPT 81 and [REDACTED]. However following breaches of the Exclusion Order by Mr [REDACTED] she initiated proceedings in the High Court on the 10th February 1992 to have all the children made Wards of Court and for her to be given their care and custody on the grounds that Mr [REDACTED] and his mother were not fit persons to have the care of the children.

The Master at the High Court confirmed the children as Wards of Court, appointed the Director of Social Care as their Guardian and gave the Director the care and control of the children. This Order was subsequently discharged on the 26th February 1992. The Master was aware that a custody hearing was to take place at Londonderry Magistrates Court on the 14th February 1992 and stressed that SPT 81 and [REDACTED] should return to their mother's care before this hearing and they were returned on the 13th February.

On the 14th February 1992 Custody of all four children was returned to Mrs [REDACTED] and Mr [REDACTED] was awarded reasonable access on the basis that he gave twenty-four hours notice. Both Mr and Mrs [REDACTED] were in court on this occasion.

2.9 On the 17th February 1992, following a Child Protection Case Conference, the names of all four children including William's were placed on the Child Protection Register. Mrs [REDACTED] was unable to attend this case conference. The Child Protection Plan provided for the Social Worker to undertake a comprehensive assessment and for SPT 81 to be referred to the Creggan Day Centre. why
213

2.10 In early March 1992 SPT 81 was experiencing difficulty at school. He hit a canteen lady and was threatened with suspension. Generally, he was not doing any work in class. Although Mrs [REDACTED] was receiving support from the Social Worker and Creggan Day Centre, having been referred on the 26th February 1992 for support and help with parenting skills, she continued to express difficulties in caring for SPT 81.

On the 19th March 1992, when the Social Worker visited SPT 81 at his school, he reported that he was unhappy about his father being out of the home, and pleased that contact had resumed. He said he was not getting on well at school. He indicated that things were tolerable at home and that his mum was not hitting out at him as before.

2.11 Difficulties continued between Mr and Mrs [REDACTED] over access resulting in rows and arguments. This was discussed by the Social Worker on a visit on the 2nd April 1992. She subsequently wrote to Mr [REDACTED] and, following discussions, access arrangement were agreed for all the children on Saturdays and Sundays. Mrs [REDACTED] was in agreement with these arrangements.

2.12 Up to the 2nd April 1992 the case was dealt with by a Social Worker specialising in short term work and was transferred on this date to a Social Worker specialising in long term work.

2.13 On the 6th April 1992, the Area Clinical Psychologist confirmed an appointment for him to see SPT 81 and Mrs [REDACTED] on 16th April 1992 following a referral by the Social Worker on the 26th March 1992. In her referral letter she indicated that SPT 81 was presenting behaviour which was causing both him and his family a lot of anxiety. He had difficulty settling in at school, was often disruptive, refused to undertake the work given to him and had occasional violent outbursts. At home he refused to co-operate with his mother and presented to her as a very angry child. There was also concern about Mrs [REDACTED]'s physical punishment which led to SPT 81's name being placed on the Child Protection Register. SPT 81 had difficulty accepting that his parents' separation was permanent. He had advised the Social Worker that he was unhappy and angry and had no control over his violent outbursts. Mrs [REDACTED] was very anxious and stated that he was exhibiting behaviour that was similar to the violent behaviour of her husband. She said that SPT 81 in the past had said it was all right to steal and hit a woman.

The Area Clinical Psychologist saw SPT 81 and his mother on the 16th April 1992 and the 18th June 1992. They missed two appointments on the 7th and 26th May 1992. These appointments took place prior to the setting up of a Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Unit.

2.14 Towards the end of April and the beginning of May 1992, SPT 81 was not presenting major problems at home for his mother, but was experiencing some difficulties at school. However, on the 8th May 1992 she contacted the Creggan Day Centre, stating that she could not cope with SPT 81 and requested that he should be taken into care. Following support from the Day Care Worker and Social Worker, it was not necessary to proceed with this request for admission to care.

2.15 In early June 1992, the Social Worker wrote supporting Mrs [REDACTED]'s application for a housing transfer. At this time difficulties had re-emerged over access, resulting in Mr [REDACTED] breaking some windows in the home. On the 2nd June 1992 Mrs [REDACTED] left the children in the care of a baby-sitter over night. She claimed that she had been at a friend's house and had fallen asleep.

2.16 A Child Protection Review Case Conference was held on the 10th June 1992. A comprehensive assessment had been carried out following the Initial Case Conference and a report submitted to the Review. It was decided to keep the names of all four children on the Child Protection Register and the Child Protection plans were revised and provided for Social Work involvement to continue. SPT 81 was to continue attending Creggan Day Centre and the Social Worker was to liaise with the Area Clinical Psychologist.

2.17 Following an incident on the 19th June 1992 when Mrs [REDACTED] beat SPT 81, he was placed in his father's care probably by the Day Care Worker. On Saturday, the 27th June 1992 Mr [REDACTED] took SPT 81 to the Police Station in the first instance and then to family friends as he could not cope any longer. Following social work contact with these friends it was agreed that SPT 81 should be admitted to Nazareth House Children's Home on a Place of Safety Order on the 29th June 1992, as the family friends could no longer look after him.

2.18 During this period Mr [REDACTED] and his mother phoned the Out of Hours Emergency Social Work Services and called at Riverview Social Care office on a number of occasions to complain about Mrs [REDACTED]'s care of the children. It transpired following investigations that there was no foundation to most of these allegations. However, on the 13 December 1991 the children were left alone and Mr [REDACTED] removed them to his care.

2.19 Evaluation 23rd October 1991 - 29th June 1992

The Review Team was concerned at the lack of a thorough assessment of this case when social work involvement recommenced on the 23rd October 1991.

The problems in this family created risks, both physical and emotional, for the children and were of long-term duration. It was important therefore to assess risk and develop a programme of care for the family which would address the problems and promote the children's welfare. There is no evidence of such an approach. Indeed, following her first visit on the 4th November, the Social Worker decided that further visiting was unnecessary and after her second contact with Mrs [REDACTED] on the 6th November submitted the case for closure. This was approved by the Senior Social Worker (Team Leader).

This decision appears to have been based on the fact that Mrs [REDACTED] had support from neighbours, her sister and the Cursillo Group. However, this support had clearly not been sufficient to meet the needs in this case and none of the sources mentioned would have been able to deal with the domestic violence and child protection issues. In addition the family situation had not been assessed in any depth.

The Review Team, consequently, is of the opinion that the case should not have been closed at this time.

Mrs [REDACTED] continued to seek help specifically in relation to SPT 81. In response the Social Worker visited on the 12th December 1991 and arranged for him to attend the After School Group at the Creggan Day Centre. While this would have been appropriate as part of a planned programme of care for SPT 81 it appears that this was the only help offered apart from advice on how to handle him.

It was clear by this stage that SPT 81 was posing considerable management problems for his mother. The Review Team is consequently of the opinion that SPT 81 required assessment as did the relationship which he had with his parents. This assessment would have formed the basis for therapeutic work with SPT 81 and his parents.

On the 16th December 1991 both [REDACTED] and SPT 81 alleged that their mother physically abused them and refused to return to her care. There is nothing to indicate that these allegations were investigated in accordance with the Board's Child Protection Policy and Procedures. A Child Protection Case Conference was held on the 17th February 1992, and all of the children's names were placed on the Child Protection Register. The only available information in relation to this matter is the case conference minutes.

The Review Team is concerned at the way this matter was dealt with and is of the opinion that the Social Work staff did not fully implement the Board's Child Protection Policy and Procedures.

One of the decisions of the Child Protection Case Conference was that the Social worker should undertake a comprehensive assessment and in doing so liaise with her colleagues in the other professions involved with the family. The Social Worker began this process and also dealt satisfactorily with issues arising over Mr [REDACTED]'s access to his children.

In addition, she arranged for Mrs [REDACTED] to attend the Creggan Day Centre to help develop her parenting skills and referred SPT 81 and his mother to the Area Clinical Psychologist on the 26th March 1992 for SPT 81 to be assessed and possibly counselled.

She then transferred the case to a Social Worker specialising in long-term work on the 2nd April 1992.

The Area Clinical Psychologist saw SPT 81 and his mother on two occasions between April and June 1992, two other appointments in May having been missed by Mrs [REDACTED] and SPT 81. There is no record of the outcome of the Psychologist's assessment being communicated to the Social Worker or of any liaison between him and the Social Worker. The latter did glean some information from Mrs [REDACTED] to the effect that she and Mr [REDACTED] needed to sort out their relationship if SPT 81 was to be helped.

The Review Team wishes to place on record its concern at this unsatisfactory outcome of the referral to the Area Clinical Psychologist.

The Social Worker completed a comprehensive assessment of the family and submitted her report to the Child Protection Case Conference on the 10th June 1992. This proved particularly helpful and provided the basis for the plans to meet the needs of the family and its individual members.

The Review Team is of the opinion that the help the family received from Social Services during the period following the Initial Case Conference was satisfactory and that the correct approach had now been adopted.

Unfortunately, nine days after the Case Conference Mrs [REDACTED] beat SPT 81 and he was placed in his father's care. There is nothing on the records to indicate how this was arranged but Mr [REDACTED] has stated during interview that the Social Worker (? Day Care Worker) brought SPT 81 to him.

In the event, Mr [REDACTED] could not cope and took SPT 81 to the same family friends who had cared for him on a previous occasion. This time they felt unable to provide care and Social Services took a decision to obtain a Place of Safety Order on SPT 81 and placed him in Nazareth House Children's Home.

The Review Team considered a number of issues arising from these events.

If the Social Work staff decided to place SPT 81 with his father then this decision is questionable given that Mr [REDACTED] had not been able to care for SPT 81 in the past and his circumstances had not improved.

In addition, SPT 81 was placed with family friends for the second time. In the particular circumstances of this case if the placement was likely to exceed a month the Board should have been notified by both those placing and receiving the child and should have approved the placement. On the first occasion the length of placement was unclear. However there is no indication that the legal requirements were explained to those involved and no indication that any approval process was started. On the second occasion it was clear within a few days, that the placement was not going to continue and consequently the notifications and approval were not required.

The Review Team is of the opinion that the Social Work staff did not fully discharge the statutory responsibilities of the Board in relation to the placement of [REDACTED] and SPT 81, by Mr [REDACTED], with family friends.

The Review Team considered the decision to use compulsory measure to remove SPT 81 and place him in Nazareth House rather than a voluntary admission to care. Given that SPT 81's name was on the Child Protection Register; the physical abuse by his mother and the inability of his father to care for him, the Team is of the view that the Board needed legal control of SPT 81 at this time and that the use of compulsory measures was appropriate. Given the circumstances an assessment would have to have been undertaken as to whether SPT 81 required long term care and if so whether to apply to Juvenile Court to have him committed to the care of the Board. For these reasons the Review Team is of the opinion that any preference between foster care and residential care in relation to the initial placement would not have been significant.

The Review Team has been informed that foster care was considered at the time but a place was not available.

2.20 NAZARETH HOUSE

SPT 81 was admitted to Nazareth House on the 29th June 1992 on a Place of Safety Order. SPT 81 and his siblings were made Wards of Court on the 30th June 1992 following an application by Mr [REDACTED] on the basis that the children might not return from Scotland where they were going on holiday. Mrs [REDACTED] had had custody of the children since February 1992.

A Residential Social Worker was appointed as SPT 81's Primary Worker, following his admission, to take a special interest in him.

2.21 The records indicate that on admission, SPT 81 was unsettled and frequently questioned rules and regulations. He appeared to be of a nervous disposition, displaying thumb sucking, nail biting and fidgeting. He also had a fear of the dark and was enuretic. He was adamant he did not want to have contact with his mother and wanted to go and live with his father. He had difficulty in adjusting to set boundaries and correction often responding with verbal aggression and threats. He also appeared to be quite aggressive with members of his peer group and in particular a nine year old girl.

2.22 He enjoyed his holiday in County Cork in August 1992. However, he got into difficulty there for stealing magazines from a shop. Around this time his outbursts of verbal aggression became more frequent. He also became involved in sexualised language. He

absconded from the Home in September in the company of another boy who was the instigator. Attempts were made by the Officer-in-Charge of Nazareth House to locate the two boys by contacting their relatives and the Police were informed. The following morning (Sunday) the Officer-in-Charge was informed that the boys were at the home of SPT 81's grandmother. She collected the boys and brought them back to Nazareth House. Social Services was informed and as the boys had stolen bikes, which were returned to the owners, arranged for them to be spoken to by the Police Juvenile Liaison Officer. At this time SPT 81 required almost a constant level of staff monitoring in order to maintain an acceptable level of behaviour. He became physically aggressive and kicked staff. Mr [REDACTED] had to leave town which upset SPT 81 as he was very attached to him and hoped to return to his care but he now appeared anxious to return home to his mother. SPT 81 interacted well at a one-to-one level in Nazareth House but overall continued to refuse to accept responsibility for his actions and tried to blame his peers.

2.23 When he returned to School after the summer holidays he was unsettled and disruptive in class. He was suspended for a week due to unacceptable behaviour in the canteen where he became verbally abusive to staff and children.

2.24 SPT 81 continued to attend Creggan Day Centre until the Residential Review on the 17th August 1992 when it was agreed that the on-going work would be carried out by field and residential social workers. His behaviour at the Centre resembled that at Nazareth House and was typical of a very hurt and confused child.

2.25 Mrs [REDACTED] returned from holiday on the 31st July 1992. It was agreed at the August Review that she would be offered twice weekly access in Nazareth House and Mr [REDACTED] would be offered twice weekly access on a supervised basis in Nazareth House.

2.26 Residential Reviews took place on the following dates

17th August 1992
23rd October 1992.

2.27 There were fourteen visits to SPT 81 by field social work staff during the period the 29th June 1992 until the 26th October 1992, some of which involved supervising Mr [REDACTED]'s access to SPT 81. There does not appear to have been any visits between the 26th October 1992 and his discharge on the 27th November 1992.

2.28 Following admission SPT 81 did not want any contact with his mother. However when his mother returned from her holiday visits began to take place on a regular basis. There were in the region of sixteen visits by Mrs [REDACTED] and SPT 81's siblings until his return home and she telephoned about ten times. There were three visits by his father which were always supervised due to the negative influences he had on the Care Plan.

2.29 Evaluation 30th June 1992 - 27th November 1992

This was an emergency admission which meant that it was not possible to implement a planned process to prepare SPT 81 and introduce him to the home. A limited care plan for SPT 81 was agreed at the post-admission case discussion on the 30th June 1992 which included his proposed length of stay in Nazareth House and access arrangements with his parents. The

issue about the continuing legal control of SPT 81 was resolved in that he was made a Ward of Court on the 30th June 1992.

SPT 81 was allocated a Primary Worker at Nazareth House who was able to establish a positive relationship with him. Her work focused on achieving acceptable standards of behaviour with SPT 81 and in particular in controlling his aggression. However, this had limited success. The Primary Worker also facilitated the maintenance of the relationship between SPT 81 and his family and liaised with other key professionals involved with SPT 81.

At the Review on the 17th August 1992 the care plan was extended and included the need for SPT 81 to address his experience at home; his relationship with his parents; his position in the ongoing physical violence at home and access arrangements. It was also decided to discontinue his attendance at Creggan Day Centre as the necessary work could be undertaken by the Residential Social Worker and Field Social Worker.

There was a further Review on the 23rd October 1992. This indicated that some improvement had been made in his relationship with his mother but at this stage his father "was out of town" and SPT 81 was aware that in order to leave care he would have to return to his mother. In addition, his father had indicated that it would be best for him to return to his mother's care.

It was decided at this Review that SPT 81 should return home on the 27th November 1992 and that this should be phased, involving increased access and overnight stays. Residential staff prepared SPT 81 for his return home and arrangements were made for him to again attend the After School Group at Creggan Day Centre commencing November 1992. In addition, at this time Mrs [redacted] moved to 14 Corrib Court and as a consequence SPT 81 transferred to a new school on the 16th November 1992.

The Review Team is of the opinion that the discharge of SPT 81 to his mother's care was properly planned and appropriate given the help and support they were to receive and that both wanted to be reunited albeit that SPT 81 was influenced by the fact that this was the only alternative to remaining in care.

The Social Worker was on sick leave from the 3rd September 1992 to the 12th January 1993, and during her absence the Acting Senior Social Worker maintained an oversight of the case and the Acting Locality Manager maintained contact with SPT 81, his family and residential staff.

The Review Team understands that a replacement was not obtained for this Social Worker as it remained unclear when she would be returning to work. In addition the Fieldwork Team experienced a number of staff absences due to acting up arrangements, sick leave and training commitments. Difficulties were experienced in finding temporary replacements and those recruited were inexperienced. Also during 1992 and into 1993 there was an increase in the number of referrals which required an immediate response.

In effect this meant that

- a manager undertook visits to SPT 81 in September and October

- there was no field social worker input to the Review on the 23rd October 1992 and to the decision to allow SPT 81 to return home
- there was no field social work input to preparing SPT 81 for his return home
- there was no field social work support for Mrs [REDACTED] both prior to and following SPT 81's return home up to the 20th January 1993 when the social worker visited following her return to work.
- the requirements in relation to the responsibilities of a Guardian of all the children who were Wards of Court including reporting to the High Court were not carried out. The Acting Senior Social Worker wrote to the High Court on 26th October apologising for not submitting the Report due on the 30th September and advised that she would complete it and forward it to the High Court by the 30th November. In effect this did not happen and it was not until the 8th February 1993 that the Report was forwarded by the Social Worker following her return from sick leave.
- The Child Protection Procedures were not fully implemented and the Review Child Protection Case Conference scheduled for the 10th September was not held and a review did not take place until the 26th January 1993 following the return of the field Social Worker.

The Review Team regards these as significant shortcomings in the services provided to SPT 81 and his family at this particularly difficult time and is concerned that the Board's statutory responsibilities were not fully discharged during this period nor its policy and procedures in relation to child protection fully implemented. The explanation provided by the Community Unit is summarised above. While the Review Team is appreciative of the pressures which staff were under we are of the opinion that this case was not accorded sufficient priority during this period.

The Review Team was concerned about the resources available in the Unit to meet the increasing demands and sought further information on this. The Team was informed that the Unit's Social Work establishment had been increased by seven during 1991 and 1992.

The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 received satisfactory care at Nazareth House Children's Home but was concerned to note from the class Teacher's report of the 23 October 1992 indicated that he rarely did his home work. This should have been addressed by staff at Nazareth House and the Social Work staff.

There was contact with Holy Child School during SPT 81's stay in Nazareth House including a visit by the School Principal to try to allay SPT 81's anxieties about returning following Mr [REDACTED]'s assault on a Teacher which SPT 81 witnessed. The Review Team would wish to acknowledge the commitment of the School to liaising with social services regarding SPT 81.

The Review Team was informed that the Acting Senior Social worker took up her new role in January 1992 at short notice and without preparation. In addition she had a team of eight social workers which is a very wide management span of control particularly as the majority of the work of her team involved the protection of children. It has long been recognised that

social workers involved in child protection require considerable support and structured supervision given the stressful and complex nature of the work.

In at least one other Board's area the management span of control in child protection is one Senior Social Worker (Team Leader) to 4 Social Workers.

The Review Team is concerned that these working arrangements placed considerable pressure on the Acting Senior Social Worker (Team Leader) and would have made it very difficult for her to discharge her management responsibilities to a satisfactory standard. It would also have been difficult in these circumstances to provide the level of support and supervision required by the Workers in her team.

28th November 1992 - 25th May 1993

2.30 Following the Social Workers return from sick leave in January 1993, the Child Protection Case Conference originally scheduled for September took place on the 26th January 1993. The Protection Plan was reviewed and it was decided that all the children's names except SPT 81's should be removed from the Child Protection Register. SPT 81 and [REDACTED] were to be referred to the Extern Youth Support Project - "Passport to the Future" and SPT 81 was also to be referred to an Educational Psychologist.

2.31 In early February 1993 SPT 81 refused to return home from school as he claimed that his mother beat him. He wanted to be taken into care. Mrs [REDACTED] denied that she beat SPT 81. As he refused to remain with his mother, the Social Worker arranged for him to stay with his aunt for two nights after which he agreed to return home.

2.32 The Wardship Orders were discharged on the 1st March 1993, on the application of the Board, as the children had returned from Scotland and it was felt that they served no useful purpose.

2.33 In early March there was a telephone call to the Out-of-Hours Emergency Social Work Service. The Co-ordinator was advised that the children had been left unattended. This was followed up and Mrs [REDACTED] said that she had gone to the shop for milk.

2.34 The Educational Psychologist undertook an assessment of SPT 81 on the 8th March and completed a report which was forwarded to Social Services on the 23rd March which stated that SPT 81 was a child of high average intelligence but his reading and spelling age were slightly below his chronological age and his attainment in language and visual perception were mildly retarded. This was most likely due to his behaviour problems. In addition, SPT 81 scored highly on social maladjustment and perceived himself as friendless.

The Educational Psychologist also saw Mrs [REDACTED] along with SPT 81 and recommended that she should join the Parent Management Group at the Brook Park Education Centre once she had completed the course on child care at Creggan Day Centre.

In the event Mrs [REDACTED] did not avail of this service and stopped attending the parenting skills class at the Creggan Day Centre when SPT 81 was admitted to Nazareth House.

It will be recalled that SPT 81 was to recommence attendance at the After School Group at the Creggan Day Centre when he was discharged from Nazareth House in November 1992. He did not attend this group but did attend the Extern Project - Passport to the Future commencing in April 1993.

2.35 A Child Protection Review was held on the 26th April 1993 and it was decided that SPT 81's name should remain on the Child Protection Register. The Deputy Principal of SPT 81's school remained concerned about William's activities and bad language. The Protection Plan included support from Extern and continuing attempts to get Mrs [REDACTED] to attend the Creggan Day Centre focusing on Mrs [REDACTED]'s ability to cope with SPT 81 and liaison between Mr & Mrs [REDACTED] regarding access arrangements.

2.36 At the end of April and May 1993 Mrs [REDACTED] reported that SPT 81's behaviour at school and at home had not improved and she felt she needed more help in caring for him.

On the 12th May 1993 she contacted the Out-of-Hours Emergency Social Work Service and both SPT 81 and his mother requested that he be admitted to care. This was followed up by a Social Work home visit the following day. Admission to care was deferred and a referral was made to the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team on the 14th May 1993, who agreed to provide a consultation service on receipt of the referral information.

2.37 On the 20th May Mrs [REDACTED] again telephoned Social Services requesting that SPT 81 be received into care. She felt that SPT 81 was beyond her control and stated that she was no longer able to manage his behaviour eg stealing, smoking, leaving home without permission, refusing to do what she asked and not responding to discipline.

It was agreed that SPT 81 should be admitted to care on a voluntary basis and this took place on the 24th May 1993. The view of the Social Worker was that SPT 81 manipulated his admission to care.

2.38 Evaluation - 28th November 1992 - 25th May 1993

The Review Team was concerned that there was no planned social work support for Mrs [REDACTED] and SPT 81 from his return to his mother on the 27th November 1992 until the 20th January 1993 when the Social Worker visited, having returned from sick leave on the 12th January 1993.

Staff had recognised the importance of support when planning SPT 81's discharge from Nazareth House and arrangements had been made for SPT 81 and his mother to attend the Creggan Day Centre to work on their relationship and modify SPT 81's behaviour. This was additional to the help and support from the Social Worker.

The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81's discharge was properly planned but is concerned that SPT 81 and his mother did not attend the Day centre and that this was not immediately followed up by the social work staff.

The Review Team considered the decision made at the Child Protection Review Case Conference on the 26th January 1993 to deregister all of the children except SPT 81. Given

that there had been no planned social work undertaken with the family for the two months prior to the Case Conference it was not possible to gauge whether improvements had been made in the family functioning and consequently the Review Team is of the view that the decision to deregister was premature.

During the period from January to May 1993, Social Workers made thirteen home visits; obtained a place for SPT 81 on the Extern Project and attempted to secure his attendance and that of his mother at the Creggan Day Centre. Social Services were also involved in obtaining an assessment and report from an Educational Psychologist and referred SPT 81 to the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Unit.

In effect while various arrangements had been made to meet the needs of SPT 81 and his mother during this period only the Extern arrangement was implemented and this did not begin until April 1993.

The Social Workers were acting as the co-ordinators in relation to these arrangements and also providing social work help to the family. In relation to the latter this appears to have been of an advisory nature and there is little evidence of therapeutic work.

The Review Team is consequently of the opinion that SPT 81 and his mother did not receive a satisfactory level of service during this period.

The Child Protection Policy and Procedures were fully implemented during this period apart from delays in the minutes of the Case Conferences being typed and available for distribution.

The Review Team was concerned at the length of the delay which amounted to around three months for both Case Conferences. Such a delay could have serious implications and would have placed a considerable onus on the Social Worker to communicate the decisions verbally and promptly in her co-ordinator role with the various agencies and individuals involved. These delays continued during the period under review.

An application was made by the Board on the 1st March 1993 to have the children discharged from wardship and this was granted by the High Court. The Review Team is of the view that this application was appropriate as all the children were allowed to be in the care of their mother and the reason for granting the wardship back in June 1992 no longer applied as the children had returned to the Northern Ireland jurisdiction.

Given the need for continuity in this case it was unfortunately that the family had to adjust to a change of Social Worker on the 4th March 1993. However, this was unavoidable as the Social Worker went on maternity leave.

The Review Team has ascertained that the Social Worker who took over this case was employed on a temporary basis and was inexperienced. Given the complexity of this case the Review Team is concerned that it was allocated to an inexperienced Worker.

SPT 81 had transferred to a new school when his mother moved house. The Review Team was pleased to note that this school showed commitment similar to SPT 81's previous school, to liaising with Social Services staff and made arrangements for SPT 81 to be assessed by an

Educational Psychologist. The Psychologist made some helpful recommendations but there is no evidence to indicate that these were implemented.

The Review Team considered the decision to admit SPT 81 to care on a voluntary basis (Section 103 of the Children and Young Persons Act (N Ireland) 1968) on the 24 May 1993.

During this period the relationship between SPT 81 and his mother did not improve and his behaviour generally remained problematic. SPT 81 was very attached to his father and was modelling himself on his father. This was most evident in his attitude and behaviour towards his mother.

Given this situation the Review Team is of the opinion that intensive therapeutic work would have been required with SPT 81 and his mother and, as already indicated, neither had co-operated in the arrangements made for this work at the Creggan Day Centre.

This called into question the commitment of Mrs [REDACTED] to making the sustained effort which would have been required to effect change and improve the relationship not only with SPT 81 but with Mr [REDACTED] given SPT 81's attachment to his father.

SPT 81 on the other hand was torn between his mother and his father but his main attachment was to his father. When his father was around SPT 81 probably entertained hopes that his parents would get together again as this had been the pattern for most of his life.

In the absence of a reconciliation he would have preferred to live with his father but seems to have accepted that this was not possible because of his father's alcoholism and violent behaviour. However, he craved his father's attention and may well have seen admission to care as a way of achieving this given the contact which had taken place when he was in care previously.

The Review Team, for the reasons outlined, is of the opinion that SPT 81 was beyond his mother's control at this time and that the situation was likely to deteriorate further. The Team considers that a voluntary admission to care was the best course of action at this stage to give both SPT 81 and his mother some respite and allow more therapeutic work to be undertaken on improving their relationship and SPT 81's behaviour. The placement was expected to be short term.

The Review Team gave consideration to what would have been the most appropriate placement for SPT 81 at this time. Given that SPT 81 required a great deal of individual attention and did not relate well in a group situation the Team is of the opinion that a specialist foster home placement, ideally with no other children, would have been the preferred placement for SPT 81.

The Review Team has been informed that a foster care placement was considered but was not available and that the only option was residential care.

As SPT 81 had been placed in Nazareth House on his previous admission the Review Team considered whether he should have been placed in Nazareth House in preference to Harberton. The Review Team has been informed that this was considered by the social work staff at the time but a place was not available.

Care in Harberton House Children's Home

25th May 1993 - 2nd July 1993

2.39 A Primary Worker was appointed for SPT 81 following his admission. Residential Social Workers gave SPT 81 the "Living in Harberton Guide" and explained the rules of the Home as well as giving him information about life in the home. The field Social Worker discussed with the Residential Social Worker the reasons for SPT 81's admission and arranged a Post Admission Meeting for the 28th May 1993.

2.40 The Social Worker prepared a Report for the Post Admission Meeting. She recommended that SPT 81's relationship with his mother be addressed as it was a key issue in his admission to care and that work be carried out to modify his behaviour at home and at school. She reported that Mrs [REDACTED] had co-operated with Social Services and was willing to engage in work which would be of benefit to SPT 81.

2.41 A Care Plan was agreed at the Post Admission Meeting. The meeting felt there was no obligation either morally or legally to inform the father that SPT 81 was in care. However, it was agreed that any access requests from the father would be referred to the Social Worker.

The Care Plan included

- work with SPT 81 on controlling his manipulative behaviour and improving his relationship with mother.
- Follow up of the referral to the Consultant Psychiatrist of Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team as an appointment had not yet been offered.
- School to consider use of Brooke Park Education Centre
- Recruitment of volunteer from Extern to befriend SPT 81

Staff were identified to undertake specific tasks and the next Review was arranged for the 2nd July 1993.

2.42 SPT 81 appeared to settle in quickly to the Unit but after a few days began to demonstrate behaviour problems. He ignored requests, lied, bullied the younger children and was occasionally aggressive when challenged. Following staff intervention the incidents escalated due to SPT 81 not being willing or able to accept discipline or rules. As a result of staff intervention he felt that staff were picking on him. Individual work with SPT 81 progressed slowly. He had difficulty in functioning in a group situation but thrived on individual attention and related much better on a one to one basis.

SPT 81 was disruptive on the 23rd June and he felt that his Primary Worker was picking on him.

2.43 The Social Worker visited SPT 81 on 24th June 1993 to discuss the placement and his feelings towards his Primary Worker. During the discussion SPT 81 complained that his Primary Worker had grabbed him by the collar and taken him to his room. SPT 81 asked to be discharged from Harberton but was informed that he needed to change his behaviour before this could happen. The Social Worker arranged to meet with SPT 81 and his Primary Worker on the 30th June 1993 to discuss SPT 81's complaints but she arrived late and they had gone out on a car trip. There is no record of any follow-up of this matter by the Social Worker.

During this period the Social Worker carried out a visit to Mrs [REDACTED] to discuss SPT 81's care.

2.44 During SPT 81's stay in Harberton House staff frequently used time out in his bedroom in an effort to get him to control his aggression. In a four month period he was sent to his room forty six times.

2.45 A Residential Care Review was held on the 2nd July 1993. It was reported that Mr [REDACTED] and his new partner now had a baby son. SPT 81 was greatly aggrieved by this news and was ambivalent about seeing his father who had requested access.

In the period up to the Review attempts had been made to identify a befriender from Extern for SPT 81 but without success. Also although SPT 81 had been placed on the waiting list by the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team, no offer of an appointment had yet been made.

Following the review of progress the following decisions were taken:

- SPT 81 to remain in Harberton House with the aim of returning to his mother's care
- Individual work with SPT 81 to modify his behaviour.
- Individual work with Mrs [REDACTED], at the Creggan Day Centre on child/parent relationships and parenting skills.
- Referral already made to Child Psychiatric Services to be pursued as an appointment had not yet been offered.
- Contact between SPT 81 and Mother to be available at Harberton at a level suitable to both. Home visits to depend on how SPT 81 is managing this contact. Monthly supervised access to be available to Mr [REDACTED] if SPT 81 is willing to see him.
- SPT 81 to pursue contact with Extern Passport Programme in September 1993 - he had been actively involved in the programme but a befriender had not yet been identified by Extern.
- SPT 81 to return to Holy Family Primary School in September and close liaison to be maintained with teaching staff.

Next Review arranged for the 24th September 1993.

The foundation for those plans and decisions was the formal care plan -

"Looking after Children, Plans for Children and Young People", which had been completed by the appropriate Social Services staff and signed by Mrs [REDACTED] and SPT 81.

2.46 Evaluation - 25 May 1993 - 2 July 1993

There was a number of issues during this period which caused the Review Team concern.

At the Post Admission Meeting one of the decisions taken was that - 'there was no obligation either morally or legally to inform the father that SPT 81 was in care'.

The Review Team was puzzled as to what could possibly be achieved by this decision. Inevitably Mr [REDACTED] would enquire about SPT 81 at some stage and would have to be

told. His reaction was likely to be one of anger and resentment that he had not been informed about this important decision.

The Review Team is aware that Mr [REDACTED]'s contact with SPT 81 was problematic and consequently was supervised. Also the Review Team takes the view that the primary purpose of contact is for the benefit of the child not the parent. However, in the opinion of the Review Team such a decision could only have been justified if it had been decided by a Court that, because Mr [REDACTED] was such a harmful influence on SPT 81, he was not to have any contact or to be told where he was. Given SPT 81's attachment to his father and the safeguards that could be implemented regarding contact the Review Team believes that such a decision was unlikely and is of the opinion that Mr [REDACTED] should have been informed that SPT 81 had been admitted to care.

A Primary Worker was appointed to take a special interest in SPT 81 at Harberton. However, he does not appear to have been able to establish a therapeutic relationship with SPT 81 and within weeks there was a high level of confrontation between him and SPT 81 because of SPT 81's challenging behaviour.

SPT 81 made a complaint to the Social Worker about his treatment by the Primary Worker claiming that he grabbed him by the collar and took him to his bedroom for time out.

Time out was used frequently by the Primary Worker and the other Residential Social Workers in relation to SPT 81, as a means of defusing a conflict situation and getting him to control his aggression. This continued to be used throughout SPT 81's stay but was particularly frequent during the first four months. The Review Team is of the opinion that there was too much reliance on this sanction during these months and that by becoming habitual it lost its effectiveness.

The Review Team was concerned that the Primary Worker was not able to establish a therapeutic relationship with SPT 81 given that what SPT 81 needed most was individual attention from a professional who could counsel him about his feelings; build up his self esteem; reinforce his good behaviour and hopefully change his attitudes and negative perception of himself.

The Review Team considers that this would have proved particularly difficult for the Primary Worker who, although he is experienced in residential care, is not professionally qualified. In the circumstances he would have required direction, supervision and considerable support from the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader) to provide effective help to SPT 81.

The Review Team has obtained information on these matters and is satisfied that the direction, support and supervision provided by the Senior Social Worker was satisfactory. Given the level of supervision the Review Team would have expected an improvement in the relationship and in the standard and recording of the work.

There is no evidence of this in the succeeding months and given its importance is a matter which should have been resolved sooner rather than later by the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader).

The staff establishment for the Assessment Unit at Harberton is a Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader), eight full-time and one part-time Residential Social Workers for a group of ten children.

The Review Team also obtained information on the duty rotas for the Residential Social Workers at Harberton. This indicates that during the key times from mid afternoon until bedtime, there are usually three Residential Social Workers on duty.

The rota is based on a five day week with two consecutive days off in every seven. In effect, during school term, the usual contact which a Residential Social Worker would have with the children in a seven day week is around twenty seven hours.

The Review Team would question whether this is sufficient contact time to undertake the individual therapeutic work which is now necessary in residential care.

The Review Team was concerned that the Board's 'Complaints Procedure for Children in Residential Care and their Parents' was not activated by either the Social Worker or the Residential Social Worker when SPT 81 made his complaint, separately to these staff, about his Primary Worker.

The matter subsequently came to the attention of a Social Worker in the Leaving and After Care Team on the 20th September 1993 who brought it to the attention of the Assistant Principal Social Worker. He carried out an investigation and concluded that it was 'not possible to find any supporting evidence to substantiate SPT 81's complaint'.

His report was submitted to the Acting Assistant Unit General Manager who identified failures by the staff to carry out the Complaints Procedure and asked for these to be dealt with. Appropriate action was subsequently taken by the Assistant Principal Social Worker including discussing these failures with the Social Workers involved and their line managers.

The Review Team, while concerned that such failure should have occurred in the first instance, is of the opinion that the complaint was subsequently satisfactorily investigated and appropriate action taken.

Given the shortcomings identified the Review Team is of the opinion that the care which SPT 81 received was only adequate during this period. Apart from the failure to activate the Complaints Procedure the Board's policy and procedures for children in care were followed and appropriate contact was maintained by the Social Worker with Mrs [REDACTED].

3rd July 1993 - 24th September 1993

2.47 Individual work with SPT 81 continued during this period. This proved difficult for the Residential Social Workers as SPT 81 responded only to positive aspects of his behaviour and switched off once negative aspects were raised. At times he could be very verbally abusive. He enjoyed one to one contact with staff. He would at times seek out staff for their attention and could be very pleasant to have about. He enjoyed being active with hobbies such as painting and model making. He also enjoyed swimming and cricket. He was more settled in the Home and less challenging to staff. It was felt that this was linked to increased access at home, which he saw as a reward for good behaviour. Towards the middle of June SPT 81

started having telephone contacts and visits from his mother and siblings. By the middle of July SPT 81 started having visits home to his mother. In mid September his visits home extended to overnight stays. He thoroughly enjoyed these visits. Mrs [REDACTED] believed that SPT 81's needs were being met in Harberton House. She felt she needed more time and that more work needed to be done before SPT 81 could come home on a full-time basis. SPT 81 continued to want to return home to his mother.

2.48 He found it difficult to maintain ongoing relationships with other children. He sought the company of other children but soon ended up fighting with them. He continued to exhibit challenging behaviour during July and August, being verbally and physically abusive to children and threatening staff. The August monthly report by the Primary Worker indicated that he was sent to his room almost every day. A behaviour chart was introduced but SPT 81 tore it up. Mrs [REDACTED] experienced some difficulty in coping with his behaviour during access visits.

2.49 SPT 81 spent two weeks in Scotland with his grandparents. They had expressed an interest in caring for him long-term but it was felt by staff that his needs were best met in Harberton. The Social Worker contacted Ayresshire Social Services to inform them that SPT 81 would be in their area for a holiday. He also spent two periods at Killadeas Holiday Centre provided by Extern from the 3rd - 6th July 1993 and the 16th - the 19th August 1993.

2.50 Joint sessions with SPT 81 and his mother began on the 6th September 1993 involving the Primary Worker and Social Worker. It was planned that these would continue weekly. Prior to this a meeting had taken place on the 25th August 1993 between Mrs [REDACTED], her partner (who had begun to live with her at the beginning of June), the Primary Worker and Social Worker to discuss SPT 81 and Mrs SPT 81's plans for him. Mrs [REDACTED] and her partner saw SPT 81 coming home but only after certain issues were resolved.

2.51 The Review Report of the 24th September 1993 indicates that efforts had been made to encourage Mrs [REDACTED] to attend a parenting group at the Creggan Day Centre. She had however avoided this but expressed agreement to attend a Parent Management Group at the Brook Park Education Centre.

2.52 The former Social Worker returned from maternity leave and took over responsibility for the case once more in July 1993. She visited SPT 81 on five occasions at Harberton during this period and carried out three home visits to Mrs [REDACTED]. On the 21st September 1993 the Senior Social Worker from the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team telephoned to advise the Social Worker that SPT 81 was on the waiting list and that it would be October at the earliest before SPT 81 would be seen and then for consultation only. The Social Worker in her report for the Review on the 24th September indicated that assessment, and family therapy would be followed up when an appointment was forwarded from the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team. The Review meeting on the 24th September 1993 was informed that the earliest possible appointment would be for October time and for consultation only.

2.53 SPT 81 returned to Holy Family Primary School in September. His class Teacher in her report of the 23rd September 1993 indicated that his behaviour in class since returning to school had been much better than his general behaviour outside it. He seemed to have settled

in easily with his class-mates and with her. He worked very well on a one-to-one basis and responded well to praise and encouragement. However, he did not like to be corrected and gave back chat in this case. He flaunted the rules of the school and the authority of those looking after him. On occasions he had been verbally and physically aggressive to other children and troublesome in a group situation. She felt that he had a low self esteem and that he wanted this opinion of himself confirmed. She saw many worthwhile commendable qualities in SPT 81 whom she described as a very manly little boy. The September Review noted that due to his behaviour he was occasionally withdrawn from his class and provided with individual support from a class Teacher.

2.54 Mr [REDACTED] had not been in contact with the Social Worker since the 30th March 1993. He telephoned the Social Worker on the 8th July 1993 requesting renewed access and wished to know of SPT 81's whereabouts. The Social Worker informed him that SPT 81 had been received into care on the 24th May 1993 and that Mr [REDACTED] had not been informed previously as it was not seen to be in SPT 81's best interest. The Social Worker undertook to arrange access.

On the 9th July 1993 a Residential Social Worker telephoned the Social Worker to advise that someone had been in the grounds of Harberton House at 1.30 am shouting "SPT 81 it's your daddy, I've come for you". On the 16th July 1993 the Social Worker was advised by the Simon Community that Mr [REDACTED] was supposed to have tried to jump off the Foyle Bridge. During a follow up visit to Mr [REDACTED] on the 19th July 1993 the Social Worker was advised by an neighbour that he had gone to Newry. Mr [REDACTED] contacted the Acting Senior Social Worker on the 3rd August 1993 requesting access with his children. He accepted that SPT 81 did not want to see him at that stage. SPT 81 subsequently agreed to access and this took place on the 9th September 1993 along with the other children at the Creggan Day Centre and was supervised by the Social Worker.

Mr [REDACTED]'s next access which had been arranged for the 7th October 1993 was cancelled as Mr [REDACTED] was in Prison and subsequently took place on the 12th October 1993 at Creggan Day Centre.

2.55 The Residential Review took place on the 24th September 1993. The following decisions were made:

- 1 Long term aim is to facilitate a return home with appropriate support for mother.
- 2 In the interim SPT 81 will remain in Harberton House with increased level of access with home.
- 3 Family meetings to continue.
- 4 Individual work with SPT 81 to look at his behaviour and ways of improving the situation.
- 5 SPT 81 to have access with his father on a monthly supervised basis at Creggan Day Centre.
- 6 Close links are to be maintained with the school.

- 7 Pursue referral to Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team.
- 8 Involvement of SPT 81 in Extern Diversionary Programme.

Next review will be held at 10.00 on the 11th February 1994.

A Child Protection Review was held on the 24th September 1993. An update report was prepared by the Social Worker for this Review.

The following decisions were made:

- SPT 81's name to remain on the Child Protection Register as little has changed and SPT 81 is to remain in voluntary care.
- Social Services input to continue with Mrs [REDACTED].
- Contact with school to remain at the same level.
- Access to remain monthly with Mr [REDACTED] supervised at Creggan Day Centre.

2.56 Evaluation - 3 July 1993 - 24 September 1993

There were some important developments during this period.

The habitual use of 'time out' which has already been referred to continued and was not leading to any improvement in SPT 81's behaviour.

Mrs [REDACTED] continued to express ambivalence in her attitude towards SPT 81 and his return to her care. However, visits home commenced, including overnight stay, and SPT 81 thoroughly enjoyed these.

It will be recalled that Mrs [REDACTED]'s partner had begun to live with her in June. Given the circumstances of this family he should have been vetted at this time and certainly before SPT 81 was allowed to stay overnight. This does not appear to have happened and is of concern to the Review Team.

Mrs SPT 81 did not attend the Creggan Day Centre as planned at the Review on the 2nd July 1993. However, the Social Worker and Primary Worker jointly met with Mrs [REDACTED] and her partner to clarify the plans for SPT 81 and subsequently joint discussions were held with Mrs [REDACTED] and SPT 81 at Harberton. These focused on the relationship between SPT 81 and his mother and SPT 81's behaviour. This was a positive development and the initial objectives and plans are well recorded. However, the outcome is not well documented.

Mr [REDACTED] had not had contact with the Social Worker or SPT 81 since the 30th March 1993. He contacted the Social Worker on the 8th July 1993 and was informed that SPT 81 was in care. He reacted badly to this news. The Review Team has already expressed the view that Mr [REDACTED] should have been informed of SPT 81's admission to care and is of the opinion that it would have reduced the strong negative reaction.

Supervised access was subsequently arranged for SPT 81 when he changed his mind about seeing his father. The Review Team is of the opinion that this was in SPT 81's best interests and that it was appropriate for it to be supervised initially, given Mr [REDACTED]'s past behaviour and the four months gap in contact.

At the time of SPT 81's visit to his maternal grandparents in Scotland they expressed an interest in caring for him long term. The social work staff discussed this and came to the conclusion that his needs were best met in Harberton at that time as intensive work was about to begin with SPT 81 and his mother.

The Review Team is of the opinion that this was the right decision given that SPT 81 was in care short stay and the plans were for him to return to his mother following work on their relationship.

The Social Work staff had been unsuccessful in getting Mrs [REDACTED] to attend the Creggan Day Centre though she expressed an interest in attending the Parent Management Group at the Brook Park Education Centre. In the event she did not attend the latter. However, by September intensive work had started with SPT 81 and his mother at Harberton which reduced the need for the Parent Management Group.

The Review Team is concerned that an appointment had still not been offered by the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team.

During this period SPT 81's behaviour had changed little. However, the School noted some improvement in his behaviour and he appeared more contented at Harberton possibly because of his increased contact with home.

SPT 81's relationship with his Primary Worker remained problematic and there is evidence of his back up Residential Social Worker, who is female, having increasing contact with him. The Review Team is of the opinion that this was in SPT 81's best interests given the poor relationship between him and the Primary Worker.

The former Social Worker returned from maternity leave in mid July. It is unfortunate that SPT 81 had to experience a change in Social Worker once again. However, he knew this Social Worker well and she is a very experienced member of staff. In addition her replacement had been employed on a temporary basis. In these circumstances and particularly given the complexity of the case the Review Team is of the opinion that it was in SPT 81's best interest for her to take over the case again.

This was a more positive period in SPT 81's Care and there now appeared to be more direction to the work and some progress. While the Review Team remains concerned about the habitual use of the 'time out' sanction at Harberton and the poor relationship with the Primary Worker the Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 and his parents received satisfactory help and support from the social work staff during this period.

25th September 1993 - 28th February 1994

2.57 On the 12th October 1993 the Senior Social Worker from the Child and Family and Psychiatric Team wrote to the Social Worker advising that a consultation meeting had been arranged for the 12th November 1993.

On the 12th November 1993 a consultation meeting took place between staff of the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team, the Social Worker and Primary Worker. The 'Information for Consultation Form' sent to the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team indicated that the Team could help by providing a service which included family therapy, counselling for SPT 81 and Mrs [REDACTED], a psychological assessment of SPT 81. At the Residential Review on the 24th September 1994 it was agreed that the referral to the Team would be pursued to seek guidance on the family work which might need to be undertaken and support for the ongoing programme. It was confirmed during an interview with the Acting Senior Social Worker that she was seeking therapeutic input and treatment for SPT 81 from the Team.

The Team indicated that it was only in a position to provide consultation and this was undertaken by the Senior Social Worker, Nurse Therapist, and Trainee Psychologist. It was decided that there was no need for a psychological assessment as one had already been carried out by the Educational Psychologist. Also there was no need for SPT 81 to have a psychiatric assessment, and his emotional and behavioural difficulties should respond to the work being jointly undertaken by his current Social Worker and Primary Worker.

The group also decided that Residential Care would not seem to be the best option for SPT 81.

2.58 SPT 81 continued to exhibit recurring behaviour problems, which he was reluctant to address or modify. He found it difficult to manage himself within Harberton House and generally moved from one confrontation to another with staff and the other residents. Mrs [REDACTED] expressed difficulty in managing SPT 81's behaviour during home visits and refused increased access.

Mr [REDACTED] had supervised access with SPT 81 on the 12th October 1993 at Creggan Day Centre. No access took place in November as Mr [REDACTED] did not contact the social worker. There appears to have been a misunderstanding about arrangements. Supervised access took place on the 6th December 1993. An extra access visit was planned for the 20th December 1993 but this was cancelled. The Social Worker saw SPT 81 on seven occasions during this period and five visits concerning SPT 81 were undertaken to Mrs [REDACTED].

On the 10th December 1993 SPT 81 disclosed a stressful incident when he was at home on access. His father called at the family house and damaged the property. Following this incident Mrs [REDACTED] obtained an Emergency Personal Protection Order and SPT 81 did not want to see his father. Mr [REDACTED]'s access planned for the 20th December 1993 was postponed until the situation was assessed. The Social Worker advised him of this in writing. SPT 81's next access visit home took place on the 17th December 1994.

SPT 81 was on holiday with his grandparents between the 22nd December 1993 and the 4th January 1994. Staff from Harberton House maintained contact with the grandparents over this period. They experienced problems in managing his behaviour and concluded that their

original idea of providing long-term care for SPT 81 was too big an undertaking for them. SPT 81 returned from Scotland on the 4th January 1994.

2.59 On the 5th January 1994 SPT 81's former Primary Worker took him home for his access visit as planned. He did not want to go as he had telephoned his mother the previous day and had been upset as she did not want him over that day. As a consequence he was questioning why he should bother going on the 5th January. His mother was not at home so he went to his aunt's house nearby. At approximately 5.30 pm his mother telephoned Harberton House requesting that SPT 81 be brought back to the Home. SPT 81 advised the Residential Social Worker who called to collect him that he was held down by the neck by Mrs [REDACTED]'s partner and punched by her a number of times. A medical examination which later took place in the Home concluded that bruising on SPT 81's neck was consistent with his allegation.

On the 6th January 1994 the Residential Social Worker telephoned the Social Worker to inform her of the alleged assault on SPT 81 at home on the 5th January 1994. She also advised that SPT 81's aunt was present when the incidents took place. The Social Worker visited SPT 81 in Harberton House and following a discussion on the incident she advised him that the Child Protection Procedures would be implemented and that she would also be speaking to his mother.

The Social Worker contacted SPT 81's aunt on the 6th January 1994 who witnessed the incident. She also reported the incident to the Police Care Unit on the 6th January 1994 and advised that a Child Protection Review was due to take place on the 12th January 1994.

During a telephone conversation with Mrs [REDACTED] on the 6th January 1994 concerning the incident, she advised that it would not be convenient for the Social Worker to visit on that day as she would not be at home. The Social Worker and Primary Worker, carried out a joint visit on the 7th January 1994. Mrs [REDACTED] admitted that the incident took place and gave permission for SPT 81 to be interviewed by the Police Care Unit and to having a medical if necessary. The Social Worker advised Mrs [REDACTED] that she had reported the incident to the Police, that Child Protection Procedures would be implemented and that the Child Protection Review would take place as already scheduled on the 12th January 1994. SPT 81 was jointly interviewed by a Police Officer and Residential Social Worker on the 7th January 1994 as planned.

2.60 The Review Child Protection Case Conference took place in Harberton House on the 12th January 1994 as planned. The meeting reviewed SPT 81's progress and considered a report from the Social Worker on the incident that took place on the 5th January 1994 at home.

The meeting considered allegations that SPT 81 made about the care of the other children. The Social Worker undertook to investigate these.

SPT 81 advised the meeting that he did not want to see his mother and father at present and that he was happy in Harberton House. He accepted his placement at home would not work if his mother's partner was present.

The Conference agreed that SPT 81's name should be removed from the Child Protection Register. This decision was taken solely on the basis that SPT 81 would not return home and would remain in long-term care. It was accepted that SPT 81 would be at risk if he were to return home.

1. It was further agreed that the Social Worker and Primary Worker would continue to work with SPT 81.
2. Social Worker will make a referral to fostering unit.
3. Social Worker to liaise with Central Services Agency regarding SPT 81's legal status.
4. Social Worker to attempt to get a befriender for SPT 81.

No need for further review in Child Protection context.

2.61 Arising from this incident and his grandparents reaction to his behaviour SPT 81 felt hurt, angry and rejected. He had no visit from any member of his family on his birthday, on the 22nd January. His mother sent him a card. He told the Social Worker on the 9th February that he felt his family were unable to care for him and that he would like to be fostered. He had no contact with his mother since the incident on the 5th January until the 20th February when arrangements for his confirmation were discussed. He told the Social Worker on the 25th February 1994 that he did not want to go home as long as his mother's partner was in the home. He was still considering foster care. SPT 81 met his mother on Thursday, the 28th February 1994 for the first time since the 5th January 1994. This was to do with preparation for confirmation. Following this meeting he stated that he would like to go home.

Up to February SPT 81 continued to have problem managing his behaviour while at school. In terms of academic ability he was creative at English and had a vivid imagination, good recall and good reasoning skills. Individual work with SPT 81 continued during this period focusing on feelings, family relationships and work on managing behaviour. SPT 81's Primary Worker at Harberton House was changed in November 1993. The Social Worker discussed with the Foster Care Unit on the 24th February 1994 the possibility of recruiting foster parents for SPT 81 and with Extern on the 25th February 1994 the possibility of recruiting a befriender for SPT 81. Up to December 1993 family work sessions were planned on a weekly basis. Mrs [REDACTED] cancelled some of the sessions which placed in doubt her commitment to some of this work.

2.62 The Residential Care Review took place on the 28th February 1994. Mr [REDACTED] was invited to attend but the meeting was informed by Mrs [REDACTED] that she believed he was at present on remand in Magilligan Prison.

Decisions made at the Review included the following:-

It was agreed that plans reached at the Child Protection Conference in January should be followed -

- SPT 81 to remain in Harberton House for the foreseeable future.
- The Fostering Unit will be asked to identify suitable long-term placement for SPT 81.
- Access between SPT 81, his siblings and mother will be arranged jointly by field work and residential staff.
- There will be no access to his father at present.
- The next Review will be held on the 3rd June 1994.

A detailed report was prepared by residential staff for this Review.

2.63 Evaluation - 25th September 1993 - 28th February 1994

The Review Team has already expressed concern about the delay in an appointment being arranged by the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team.

An appointment was arranged for the 12th November 1993, six months after the initial request for one. At the meeting, which took place on the date arranged, it was decided that there was no need for a psychological or psychiatric assessment and that the joint work being undertaken by the Social Worker and Primary Worker was appropriate.

The Review Team is concerned at the level of psychological input to this important meeting and that no arrangements were made for a structured input from a psychologist to the work being undertaken with SPT 81 and his mother, given the behaviour he was exhibiting and its long-term nature.

Following the stressful incident which was witnessed by SPT 81 when Mr [REDACTED] damaged the family home the Social Work staff took appropriate action and postponed Mr [REDACTED]'s access and SPT 81's access home until the situation was assessed.

The problems which SPT 81's grandparents experienced with him over the Christmas period led them to the conclusion that they could not cope with him long term. This reinforced the soundness of the original decision taken by the social work staff in the summer when this was first raised.

The Review Team has ascertained that as SPT 81's mother was not at home when he was brought home for access on the 5th January the Residential Social Worker checked that SPT 81's aunt was at home and able to look after him until his mother returned, before leaving SPT 81.

The Review Team is of the opinion that the assault by Mrs [REDACTED] and her partner on SPT 81 on the 5th January 1994 frightened him considerably and had damaging consequences for the relationship between SPT 81 and his mother.

It also changed the care plans for SPT 81 in that it was decided that he would now remain in care on a long-term basis and as a consequence his name was removed from the Child Protection Register. Also it was decided to ask the Fostering Unit to identify suitable long-term foster carers for SPT 81.

The Review Team is of the opinion that in the circumstances these were appropriate decisions in relation to SPT 81's care. However, the Team is surprised given SPT 81's needs and behaviour that specialist fostering was not requested at this stage and is concerned that a report was not forwarded to the Fostering Unit until April 1994. This report provided a good account of SPT 81's behaviour and needs. There is no section on the Report Form to ascertain whether the child requires specialist fostering.

The Team has already referred to the ambivalent feeling which Mrs [REDACTED] had about SPT 81 and it would appear that these feelings increased following the assault. In addition

Mrs [REDACTED]'s primary loyalty appeared to be her partner and SPT 81 was blamed for causing the assault.

The physical assault was investigated jointly by the Social Work staff and the police. However the Review Team has identified a number of short comings in this investigation as follows:

There is no record that the referral to the police was confirmed in writing using the standard form for this purpose.

There is no record of any formal strategy discussion to plan the investigation.

The joint interview of SPT 81 was carried out by a Police Officer and a Residential Social Worker neither of whom had been trained in the process. In addition, the Residential Social Worker was not professionally qualified and therefore was not in a position to discharge statutory functions in relation to child protection.

There is no record of the joint interview.

The Police did not interview Mrs [REDACTED]'s partner about the alleged offence until the 17th May 1994, some four months after it had occurred. Apparently there was some difficulty locating him.

The Police did not keep the social work staff informed about the outcome of their interviews with the perpetrators

There was no written confirmation from the police of the outcome of the criminal investigation and no record on the social work files of the notification by telephone which the police say was made.

The Review Team is concerned about these shortcomings in the investigation of a serious matter such as this.

The Review Team has ascertained that a report was not forwarded to the Director of Public Prosecutions by the Police. Instead, towards the end of June 1994 a Police Officer warned Mrs [REDACTED] and her partner about their behaviour. The Team found this surprising given that this was an offence against a child; the medical evidence; Mrs [REDACTED]'s admission and the fact that SPT 81's aunt witnessed the assault.

The question arises as to whether SPT 81 would have been entitled to compensation for the injuries he sustained including the emotional trauma. The Review Team is concerned that this matter does not appear to have been pursued by the social work staff.

At this time SPT 81 alleged that his siblings had been abused on occasions by his mother's partner, by having their heads put down the toilet. Even if he had not made such an allegation, physical abuse of the other children was a possibility, following the assault on SPT 81, which would have to have been investigated. The Social Worker interviewed the other children who stated that on occasions Mrs [REDACTED]'s partner made this threat but did not carry it out.

The Review Team considered whether these allegations warranted a joint investigation but is of the opinion that the follow up action taken by the Social Worker was satisfactory, in the circumstances.

It was ascertained by the Review Team that Mrs [REDACTED]'s partner had not been vetted by the social work staff. The Team has ascertained that he has a criminal record but not for assault.

The Review Team has already commented on the poor relationship between the Primary Worker and SPT 81 and was concerned to note that a change in Primary Worker did not take place until November 1993. Five months is a lengthy period of time in the life of a ten year old and in fact it will be recalled that SPT 81 was only expected to be in care for six months.

The Review Team is strongly of the view that any problems in the relationship between a Primary Worker and the child must be dealt with immediately as it is fundamental to the care being provided and the therapeutic work being undertaken with the child.

It will be recalled that joint discussions had been arranged by the Social Worker and Primary Worker with Mrs [REDACTED] and SPT 81. In the event it was the back up Residential Social Worker for SPT 81 rather than the Primary Worker who was involved in most of these discussions. There were problems in relation to Mrs [REDACTED]'s commitment to this work. It stopped in December 1993 and was not reinstated in 1994 mainly, it would seem, because of the physical assault on SPT 81 and the further damage this did to the relationship between SPT 81 and his mother. In its absence there was no therapeutic work being undertaken to improve the relationship and without this it was highly unlikely that SPT 81 could be successfully rehabilitated with his mother.

The Review Team notes with regret that SPT 81 had no visit from any member of his family on his birthday on the 22nd January 1994. His father was in prison at this time.

The Review Team is of the opinion that the Board's policy and procedures in relation to child protection were not fully implemented. The shortcomings, which relate to the investigation of the physical assault on SPT 81, have already been outlined.

The Board's policy and procedures for children in care were fully implemented.

During the period October - December 1993 there were five joint work sessions with SPT 81 and his mother. These did not continue in 1994 probably because of the assault in January 1994.

The Primary Worker changed and a better relationship was established with SPT 81. She was involved in four of the joint work sessions and during the rest of the period had individual discussions with SPT 81 which were of a therapeutic nature.

The Social Worker was involved in most of the joint work sessions and also visited Mrs [REDACTED] at home on five occasions. Although there were shortcomings during this period overall the care which SPT 81 received improved and the Review Team is of the opinion that it was satisfactory as was the help and support Mrs [REDACTED] received from the social work staff.

1st March 1994 to 27th May 1994

2.64 During March 1994 SPT 81 was more settled in the home. He had re-established contact with his mother and had regular visits from her and his siblings every Sunday at Harberton House. SPT 81, however, superficially scratched his wrist on the 4th March 1994.

Individual work continued and focused on his behaviour, family relationships and possibility of placement with foster parents. The Social Worker completed the fostering profile. Although SPT 81's behaviour was still challenging during April, he began to respond to the individual work with him. He expressed his feelings and emotions about the problems his family were experiencing, his position within the family, his father's intention of going to England and being in care.

2.65 On the 21st March 1994 at approximately 8.30 am SPT 81 and another male resident went missing from the Unit. The local area and grounds were searched. The School, Social Workers and Police and his mother, were informed. Both boys were returned to the Unit at 12.00 noon by a part-time member of staff at Harberton who had found them walking along the Ardrough Road. Staff established that the reason for running away was no more than a prank.

2.66 On the 11th April 1994 Mrs [redacted] advised the Primary Worker, when shopping for SPT 81's confirmation outfit, that Mr [redacted] would be leaving the country when he was released from prison as he had got to 'get out of town'. Also on that date the Social Worker received a letter from Mr [redacted] who was in Crumlin Road Prison, Belfast, asking her to convey his love and concern to his children and asking for arrangements to be made for them to visit him in prison. The appropriate parts of this letter were discussed with SPT 81 who indicated he was not surprised that his father was in prison and indicated he did not want any contact. The Social Worker also discussed the letter with Mrs [redacted] on the 15th April 1994 who agreed that the children could visit their father on the 23rd April 1994. This proposed visit was postponed as Mr [redacted] was transferred to Magilligan Prison. Both Mrs [redacted] and her partner encouraged SPT 81 to go on this visit but he declined. SPT 81 made his confirmation on the 18th April 1994. However, when the prison visits were rearranged for the 11th May 1994 and the 24th May 1994 SPT 81 and his siblings attended accompanied by the Social Worker. During the visit on the 11th May 1993 the Social Worker advised Mr [redacted] that SPT 81 had been involved in a serious incident at Harberton House. SPT 81 and two other residents had sexually assaulted a ten year old female resident.

2.67 On the 25th April 1994 the Primary Worker advised the Social Worker that SPT 81 and another male resident during the week-end had exposed themselves to each other in the other male resident bedroom. During the course of interviews of the boys by Residential Social Workers regarding this incident, information concerning a more serious incidents was disclosed. This involved sexual activity with a ten year old female resident in another unit of the Home.

During interviews with the female resident she disclosed that she was sexually involved with three boys from the Home. These incidents took place in the grounds of the Home. Her description of the incidents indicated that three boys sexually assaulted her on at least three occasions. They used force, blackmail and threats against her. Staff at Harberton House

reported this incident to the Police Care Unit on the 25th April 1994 in accordance with the Child Protection Procedures and a Strategy Meeting was held on the 27th April 1994. Plans had already been made to prevent a re-occurrence of this activity and it was agreed to investigate jointly with the Police the alleged sexual assaults.

All parents were informed by relevant social work staff.

During a home visit on the 28th April 1994 the Social Worker advised Mrs [REDACTED] of the incident and that SPT 81 would be interviewed jointly by a Police Officer and Social Worker and that a case conference would take place.

On the 3rd May the Police advised that in view of a possible link between SPT 81's involvement in this incident and the Creggan Organised Abuse Investigation an officer from that Enquiry Team would undertake the joint interview.

The Social Worker visited SPT 81 on the 3rd May 1994 to discuss the joint investigation and case conference; contact with his father and the proposed visit to him in prison on the 11th May 1994.

The Joint Interview took place on the 5th May 1994 in accordance with the agreed protocol. The Social Worker visited Mrs [REDACTED] again on the 4th May 1994 to inform her about the progress of the investigation and discuss other matters relevant to SPT 81's care.

The Child Protection Case Conference concerning SPT 81 took place on the 6th May 1994. In view of the investigation into organised abuse that was ongoing in the Creggan it had been decided that an officer from the specifically established Police Enquiry Team would also investigate this incident involving SPT 81 to establish whether he had any knowledge of the Creggan incidents. An officer from that Enquiry Team attended the case conference. Mrs [REDACTED] was invited but did not attend. It was felt that given the seriousness of the incidents and the lack of knowledge regarding where this behaviour emanated from it was possible that SPT 81 could have been abused at some stage in the past. Because of this possibility it was felt that SPT 81 could be vulnerable to further abuse himself and that he could be a risk to other children in the Unit given his behaviour and his reluctance to accept responsibility for it.

The Case Conference made the following decisions:

1 Risk factors

- SPT 81 could be vulnerable to possible sexual abuse
- SPT 81 is a risk to other children within the Unit

2 Registration

- SPT 81 name to be placed on the Child Protection Register

Members of core group identified

Protection Plan

- 1 Social Worker to continue to work with SPT 81 to obtain more information about the recent incident and to see if there are any underlying reasons for his behaviour.
- 2 Primary Worker to work along similar lines and to make him aware that if similar incidents continue then his place in Harberton House will be in jeopardy.
- 3 Harberton House to continue to closely supervise SPT 81's movements both inside and outside the home
- 4 School to continue to monitor SPT 81 - the Vice Principal will discuss this with his class teacher
- 5 Harberton House - staff to continue to closely supervise SPT 81's movements both inside and outside the home.
- 6 Next review will be held on 16 September 1994.

The Social Work Report indicates that SPT 81 was jointly interviewed by the Social Worker and a Police Officer on the 5th May 1994. It also indicated that Mrs [REDACTED] had given consent for the matter to be fully investigated and co-operated with all the arrangements to date. The Police Officer from the Creggan Enquiry Team indicated that SPT 81 needed to be interviewed in a police station about the events involving himself and the ten year old female resident.

A letter dated 12th May 1994 was sent to Mrs [REDACTED] advising her of the decisions reached at the Case Conference.

2.68 SPT 81 spent two days at Killadeas Centre from the 6th-8th May 1994. On the evening of the 8th May, following his return from Harberton, he lost some of his privileges for misbehaving and was hostile towards staff. He damaged his room and became upset, scratched his arm with a piece of glass and said "I wish I was dead" and "if this doesn't work the Foyle will". The Primary Worker spent some time with him talking about his problems.

The following day the 9th May the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader) discussed his behaviour with him and explained that admission to training school was an option to be considered. A Residential Social Worker expressed concern to the Social Worker on the 12th May 1994 about the suitability of his present placement and that his bullying of other residents had become worrying. This concern was again raised on the 17th May 1994 by the Primary Worker, she advised that SPT 81 refused to take responsibility for his actions and was bullying, and intimidating the ten year old female resident.

Around this time three residents made complaints that SPT 81 had bullied them. These were investigated by the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader) and were substantiated.

2.69 Mr [REDACTED]'s brother contacted the Social Worker on his behalf regarding the assault on SPT 81 by Mrs [REDACTED]'s Partner. The Social Worker advised that this matter had been discussed directly by her with Mr [REDACTED].

2.70 SPT 81 was interviewed at the Police Station on the 27th May 1994 in relation to his alleged sexual assault on the ten year old female resident. The Social Worker had arranged for SPT 81 to be legally represented and a solicitor was present at the interview. SPT 81 did not want the Social Worker to sit in on the interview and his mother did not wish to attend. The Social Worker was advised by the Acting Senior Social Worker that, provided the solicitor was present, the interview could take place without her. Later that day the Social Worker was advised by the Care Unit that the Police had decided that it was a case of unlawful carnal knowledge and that the case file would be forwarded to the Director of Public Prosecutions.

2.71 The Social Worker and Primary Worker prepared a report for the Review on the 27th May 1994.

This report indicated that:

- i *The Fostering Unit have not yet identified a suitable long term foster home for SPT 81.*
- ii *SPT 81 has access with his mother and siblings on Sunday afternoons at Harberton House.*
- iii *SPT 81 has had access with his father on two occasions at Magilligan Prison.*
- iv *On one of these Mr [REDACTED] raised the possibility of SPT 81 being fostered with friends of the family.*
- v *Mrs [REDACTED] wished SPT 81 to remain in care.*
- vi *His progress at school was satisfactory on the whole and that he made his confirmation in April 1994. He attended Mass regularly.*
- vii *He related well on a one to one basis with staff but still had problems in the group setting because of his attention seeking behaviour.*
- viii *His bullying had increased and became more subtle. Due to his behaviour SPT 81 is no longer allowed to go swimming with the other children.*
- ix *Due to SPT 81's behaviour the suitability of his current placement needs to be reconsidered. If the Review decided that the current placement was not suitable and SPT 81 needed time out in Training School then a Place of Safety Order would be needed.*
- x *SPT 81 did not want to stay in Harberton but did not want to go to Training School. He would like to go home but realises that this is an unlikely option at the moment.*
- xi *Because of the risk to other children from SPT 81's behaviour, staff felt unable to offer other children a safe environment and they had come to the conclusion that Harberton might no longer be a suitable placement for SPT 81.*

- xii SPT 81 should remain in care but his placement should be discussed because of his behaviour and attitude.
- xiii Attempts should continue to obtain a specialist foster long stay care placement.
- xiv In the short term, St Patrick's Training School should be considered for time out.
- xv The possibility of obtaining treatment for SPT 81 as an abuser should be investigated.
- xvi Access should continue with his mother and siblings and that access with his father should be arranged through the Social Worker.
- xvii The Social Worker had concerns about SPT 81 going to Training School due to his age but accepts the fact that due to the lack of anything suitable it is an option.

The Social Worker when completing this Report with the Primary Worker expressed the view that resources were not available within the Board's area to meet SPT 81's needs.

The Primary Worker submitted a supplementary report to the Review Group emphasising SPT 81's difficult behaviour and the risks he posed to the other children.

The Residential Review took place on the 27th May 1994. Mrs [REDACTED] attended the Review and was fully involved in the discussion. SPT 81 was interviewed by the Police about the sexual assault on the ten year old female resident on the same day as the Review and consequently could not attend. He did, however, complete the child's residential form for consideration by the Review Group. In it he stated that he was worried about going to St Patrick's Training School; that sometimes he wished he could kill himself; that he wished to attend the Review to have his say and know what was decided and wished the Review to consider when he would be fostered.

The Review Group considered all these issues and made the following decision.

- Given SPT 81's continued risk to other children and his inability or unwillingness to take on his responsibility for this it was agreed that a place in St Patrick's Training School would be sought for a limited time as part of an agreed programme of work with SPT 81.
- Ongoing work will continue to address issues relating to SPT 81's behaviour and his relationship with his family and other adults and children.
- Recognition that SPT 81 as an abuser requires to be involved in a programme which would address this including exploring where this abusive behaviour came from.
- Social Work staff to liaise with St. Patrick's Training School with a view to seeking a place for SPT 81.
- SPT 81's case will be reviewed at Harberton on the 23 September 1994.

2.72 Evaluation - 1st March 1994 - 27th May 1994

On the 21st March 1994 SPT 81 and another male resident absconded from the Home. The residential social work staff took appropriate action to find the boys and notified the Social Worker, School and Police. His mother could not be contacted that morning but was

informed of the incident in the afternoon. The boys were found by an off duty member of staff and brought them back to the Home where they were interviewed by the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader) who pointed out the risks and the dangers of this behaviour to the boys. The off-duty member of staff deserves credit for the way she dealt with this matter. It would appear that SPT 81 did not want to go to school that morning and had been difficult resulting in him being told that he would not be allowed to go to the swimming pool that evening. When children abscond it is important that every effort is made immediately to find them and that all the appropriate people are informed. This is a clear demonstration to children that staff care very much about what happens to them.

The Review Team is of the opinions that the residential social work staff dealt with this matter in a competent and caring manner.

SPT 81's former Primary Worker discovered SPT 81 and another male resident in the latter's bedroom. The other male resident was in the act of hastily pulling up his underpants. He was concerned and along with other residential social workers interviewed both boys who disclosed that they had been involved as a group in sexual activity on other occasions, with another male and female resident. The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81's former Primary Worker is to be commended for his alertness and bringing this matter to light.

This matter was properly investigated in accordance with the Board's policy and procedures for Child Protection and the Joint Investigation Protocol.

As there was the possibility that SPT 81 might have been a victim in the Creggan organised abuse it was decided that one of the Police Officers dealing with this should interview SPT 81 about the sexual assault on the female resident. The Review Team doubts the appropriateness of linking SPT 81 to this investigation at this time.

In relation to the Police interview the Police and Criminal Evidence Procedures were not followed to the letter but it would appear that the solicitor in this case undertook the role of the 'appropriate adult'. It was not considered advisable to override SPT 81's wishes and have the Social Worker present in this role as would normally be the case. While the agreed procedures were not followed to the letter, the Review Team is of the opinion that the arrangement for a solicitor to be present provided a satisfactory safeguard for SPT 81.

While the sexual assault on the ten year old female resident was properly investigated there were some shortcomings in the implementation of the Procedures.

The referral to the Police was not confirmed in writing using the standard form

The record of the joint interview and the subsequent Police interviews of SPT 81 is not available in the social work records

The Police did not inform the social work staff of the outcome of the investigation. The Review Team has ascertained that a report went to the Director of Public Prosecutions and he directed no prosecution because of the age of the boys.

The Review Team is concerned about these shortcomings in the liaison between the social work staff and the Police. While the main failings lie with the Police, there is no evidence that

the social work staff made any attempt to obtain the information when nothing was forthcoming from the Police.

There were at least three sexual assaults on the ten year old female resident over a period of months. This raises a question about the level of supervision of the children by the Residential Social Workers. By all accounts the assaults took some time as all three boys are alleged by the female resident to have had sexual intercourse with her with two boys holding her down each time. This was not detected by the staff at the time. In addition after the assaults came to light SPT 81 was able to go to the Unit in which the girl was resident and intimidate her despite the plans which had been made to prevent this.

The Review Team is consequently of the opinion that there were periods when the level of supervision of the children was not adequate.

During May 1994 contact recommenced between Mr [REDACTED] who was in prison, and his children. At first SPT 81 did not want any contact but he subsequently changed his mind and visited along with his siblings on the 11th and the 24th May 1994. On one of these visits Mr [REDACTED] raised the possibility of SPT 81 being fostered with friends of the family. It will be recalled that these friends had decided that they could not care for SPT 81 at the time of his admission to Harberton. There is no evidence that this was pursued as a possible option by the social work staff. While the Review Team is of the opinion that this should have been investigated we take the view that as SPT 81's behaviour had not improved such an arrangement was unlikely to be successful unless these friends had the skills and knowledge to undertake special fostering.

Following his return from the Killadeas Centre on the 8th May 1994 SPT 81 expressed a wish to be dead and made reference to the Foyle as a means of achieving this. His Primary Worker spent some time counselling him. This was a worrying statement from a ten year old but it could be that he was repeating what he had heard in the past from adults. The incident was considered to be more of an attention seeking than life threatening nature and the Review Team agrees with this assessment of the incident as SPT 81's feeling of depression were episodic and appeared to be a reaction to specific circumstances.

During this period an important report was completed by the Social Worker and Primary Worker for the Residential Care Review on the 25th May 1994. This report is detailed in section 2.71 pages 34 and 35 of this Report. Most of the suggestions, including a limited time in St Patrick's Training School as part of an agreed programme of work with SPT 81, made by the Social Worker and Primary Worker were incorporated in the decisions taken at the Residential Care Review which took place on the 27th May 1994.

One important omission is the suggestion that attempts should be made to obtain a specialist long term foster care placement for SPT 81. The Review Team finds this omission surprising.

The staff at the Review were all residential social work staff with the exception of the Social Worker. Mrs [REDACTED] attended and was fully involved in the discussion and it is recorded that she agreed with the decisions taken. SPT 81 wished to attend the Review but was unable to as he was being interviewed by the Police about his part in the sexual assault on the female resident. He did complete the standard form in which he stated that he was worried about going to St Patrick's and wanted to be fostered. Mr [REDACTED] was due to be released from

prison on the 26th May 1994. There is no evidence that he was invited to the Review or that his views were sought.

The Review Team is concerned that given the important matters which were to be discussed at this Review, the Acting Senior Social Worker and Vice-Principal of SPT 81's school were not present and that SPT 81 and his father did not have the opportunity to participate.

The Review Team is of the opinion that the date of either the Review or the Police interview should have been changed to allow SPT 81 to attend and that Mr [REDACTED] should have been invited. In addition all the relevant staff involved with SPT 81 should have been present. A new care placement for a child, even if it is to be of short duration, is a most important matter and unless emergency action has to be taken, warrants the widest possible consultation and detailed consideration.

It was evident by this stage that the Social Worker and the Primary Worker and other Residential Social Workers at Harberton were not able to effect any sustained improvement in SPT 81's behaviour.

In addition his relationship with his mother had deteriorated following the physical assault and never fully recovered. Her lack of commitment continued to be apparent in that she did not always visit on a weekly basis as arranged, for example during April she failed to visit for over three weeks. SPT 81 was sensitive to his mother's ambivalence and the relationship was not helped by the fact that SPT 81 tended to blame her for the break-up with his father.

On the other hand SPT 81's father had become a transient figure, who was absent for long periods and who when he was present, made unrealistic promises which he was unable to keep because of his own personal problems. Although SPT 81 tended to idealise his father he felt continually let down when his father did not keep his promises and came to realise that his father would not be able to provide a home for him.

SPT 81's behaviour in Harberton alienated the other children who began to avoid him and in addition he was withdrawn from group outings to the swimming pool.

Cumulatively, his experiences must have reinforced the perception that he had of himself as being bad and beyond redemption.

The Review Team is of the opinion that it should have been apparent by this stage that SPT 81 could not function satisfactorily in a group living situation as he had few, if any, internal controls and was so insecure and attention seeking that he viewed other children as competitors for attention.

It would seem the SPT 81 had not had his needs for love and security met in early childhood and consequently his emotional development was well below what would be expected of a ten year old.

He needed undivided attention and continuity of care from adults who could understand the reasons for his behaviour and cope with his testing of controls and commitment. In addition he needed to be in a setting where he did not have to compete with children around his own age or younger than himself.

The Review Team is consequently of the opinion that at this time SPT 81's needs could not be fully met in residential care and were most likely to be met in a specialist foster care placement. It follows that placement in another residential setting would not, in the opinion of the Team have been a preferable alternative to Harberton as far as SPT 81's needs were concerned.

The Review Team is consequently of the view that the only justifications for moving SPT 81 at this time to St Patrick's was that he posed a considerable threat to the other children.

SPT 81's physical aggression is well documented and appears to have escalated during April and May 1994 to the extent that other residents began to express a fear of him. Three residents, two of whom were female, made formal complaints against him during these months because he was threatening them and on occasions hitting them. These complaints were investigated in accordance with the Board's Complaints Procedures and were found to be substantiated.

He had been involved in a serious sexual assault on a ten year old female resident and continued to threaten this girl despite increased supervision by staff. In addition his bullying had become more subtle and staff began to express concern about their ability to adequately protect the other children. Given his sexual knowledge and behaviour staff were also concerned that he might become a sex abuser and were exploring the possibilities of work being done with him on this particular aspect.

On the basis of this information the Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 posed a threat to the physical and emotional well being of the other children and as this was escalating the threat was considerable.

At this time the options available were limited. Given his behaviour SPT 81 could not have been moved to another Children's Home as this would merely have transferred the risk and it is unlikely that they would have been any better placed to cope than Harberton. Special fostering was not available even if it had been requested and it had not been, at this stage.

The Social Worker when she completed the Report for the Review stated that she had concerns about SPT 81 going to Training School due to his age but accepted the fact that due to the lack of another suitable placement it was an option. It would consequently appear that there was considerable debate about the advisability of placing SPT 81 in Training School.

The Review Team is of the opinion that in effect, it was the only option given our analysis of the circumstances and the unavailability of a specialist foster care placement. St Patrick's Training School is a specialist regional centre and along with other such centres, has care facilities which are geared to dealing with the most problematic and challenging boys in the Province. In the opinion of the Review Team St Patrick's was the most appropriate establishment to deal with the risks SPT 81 presented.

Prior to SPT 81's admission Social Work staff would not appear to have been knowledgeable about the level of absconding from the Training School and the Care Unit in particular. There is no record of any discussion about this.

It will be recalled that while in Nazareth House and Harberton SPT 81 had run away on two occasions in the company of another boy but the risk of him absconding were not considered to be high, by the social work staff. In these circumstances the Review Team does not regard it as concerning that this matter was not discussed prior to SPT 81's admission to St Patrick's Training School.

There were periods during the three months to the end of May 1994 when the level of supervision of SPT 81 was not adequate but given the problems he was presenting the Review Team is of the opinion that generally he received satisfactory care at Harberton. The Team is also of the opinion that, with the exception of arrangements not being made for SPT 81 and his father to participate in the Care Review, SPT 81 and his parents received satisfactory social work support and help during this period and that the Board's Policy and Procedures for Children in Care were fully implemented.

28th May 1994 - 15th August 1994

2.73 During June Mr [REDACTED] had contact with, residential and fieldwork staff following his release from prison on the 26th May 1994. He called at Harberton on the 31st May 1994 accompanied by SPT 81's uncle and two of his cousins. This was an unplanned visit. He told SPT 81 that he would have him out of Harberton within a week.

Mr [REDACTED] called at the Social Care Office on two occasions on the 1st June 1994 seeking unsupervised access with SPT 81 and requested that he be allowed to take SPT 81 to Knock the following Sunday. He was seen by the intake worker and an appointment was made for him to call and see the appropriate staff on the 7th June 1994. The Social Worker discussed these issues with the Acting Locality Manager. It was agreed that it would not be appropriate for SPT 81 to go to Knock with his father at present and that access would be reviewed.

During the interview with Mr [REDACTED] at the Riverview Social Care Office on the 7th June 1994 the Social Worker advised him that SPT 81's name was on the waiting list for St Patrick's Training School and explained the reasons for such a planned short-term move. He was unhappy with St Patrick's as a placement for SPT 81 but accepted the need for SPT 81 to address issues in his life at that time. On the 10th June 1994 Mr [REDACTED] expressed concern to the Acting Locality Manager about the decision made at the residential review on the 27th May 1994 regarding SPT 81's placement in Training School. The Acting Locality Manager explained why the decision was taken and of the difficulties that SPT 81 presented for both staff and residents in Harberton House. He also undertook to arrange a meeting between Mr [REDACTED] and the residential care staff to discuss these concerns in more detail. On the 15th June 1994 Mr [REDACTED] met with the Acting Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader) at Harberton House and Residential Social Worker to discuss his access with SPT 81 and to explain to him the background to the decision about future plans for SPT 81. Mr [REDACTED] stated that he had been in St Patrick's himself and that it had been a bad experience for him. Staff shared with him that SPT 81 would be admitted to the care side of St Patrick's and there had been changes since he was there. She also discussed with Mr [REDACTED] arrangements for unsupervised access.

The Social Worker discussed access with Mrs [REDACTED] during a telephone conversation on the 7th June 1994 and a home visit on the 10th June 1994. She agreed to unsupervised access

on a monthly basis at Harberton House for all four children as a family unit and telephone calls to be restricted to weekly. Following discussions with the Acting Locality Manager on the 7th June 1994 and the Primary Worker, the Social Worker advised the Primary Worker on the 8th June 1994 that access for Mr [REDACTED] could be unsupervised on a monthly basis at Harberton House and should be for all four children. Telephone contact would be restricted to weekly. It was further agreed that both the Social Worker and Primary Worker would meet with Mr [REDACTED] on the 29th June 1994. Due to leave arrangements no earlier date was suitable. The meeting planned with Mr [REDACTED] by the Social Worker and Primary Worker was cancelled due to Mr [REDACTED] being an inpatient in Gransha Hospital. Mr [REDACTED] was to contact the Social Worker when he was discharged.

Unsupervised access took place between Mr [REDACTED] and all four children on the evening of the 15th June 1994 at Harberton House. On the 23rd June 1994 staff at Harberton House received a letter from Mr [REDACTED]'s Solicitor requesting an increase in access. A detailed report concerning access was sent by the Social Worker to the Legal Department of the Central Services Agency to enable them to reply to Mr [REDACTED]'s Solicitor. The Central Services Agency replied on the 22nd July 1994 suggesting that Mr [REDACTED] should contact either the Social Worker or Harberton House about this matter.

2.74 On the 21st June 1994 the Social Worker received a telephone call from the Acting Senior Social Worker (Residential Team) advising that SPT 81 had been involved in another sexual incident on 20th June 1994 along with another male resident. This involved tampon applicators which they took from one of the female residents bedrooms. Six of these applicators were found by domestic staff and had Vaseline on them. Two had excrement. SPT 81 and another boy were interviewed about this. The other boy initially denied any involvement but SPT 81 disclosed they had inserted these in their back passages. He said that the other boy had suggested this but the other boy blamed him and said that all he had done was to use them to talk through. The residential staff completed an untoward incident report on the incident. The Social Worker discussed it with the Acting Senior Social Worker and Acting Locality Manager. It was decided to discuss these incidents at a case discussion on the 27th June 1994. However, there is no record of any discussions or follow-up on this matter.

The Acting Senior Social Worker (Residential Team) also advised that Mr [REDACTED] said that SPT 81 told him that he saw two boys abused by Mr X when SPT 81 lived in the Creggan area. SPT 81 said he was not involved. Residential staff attempted to discuss this with William but he refused to talk about it..

2.75 A case discussion took place on the 27th June 1994 and the following decisions were made:

- i *It continued to be valid to seek a place for SPT 81 at Training School.*
- ii *The Case Discussion Chairman to discuss with the Assistant Principal Social Worker (Residential Services) the difficulties SPT 81's placement in Harberton is placing on the staff in the home.*
- iii *Residential staff feel that an individual worker is required to specifically work with SPT 81.*

iv *Contact to be made with the following agencies*

- *Extern to explore the possibility of a befriender and possibly time out at Killadeas.*
- *Probation to explore the work that could be carried out with SPT 81 regarding his sexualised behaviour.*
- *St Patrick's Training School to outline the difficulties that SPT 81 is displaying in Harberton House.*
- *The Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team to explore any avenues that they may feel have not already been covered.*

2.76 During this period the Social Worker met with Mr [REDACTED] on four occasions and the Acting Locality Manager met with him on two occasions. She carried out two home visits and was in contact with the Probation Service to make enquiries about support programmes for young abusers and with Extern concerning time out for SPT 81 at Killadeas and a befriender. The Befriender Scheme was not available during the summer. She also contacted SPT 81's grandfather to explore the possibility of a holiday for SPT 81 in Scotland. His grandfather had no plans for SPT 81 to go on holiday to Scotland. Both he and his wife were concerned at Mrs [REDACTED]'s lack of interest in SPT 81 during his last holiday with them.

On the 1st July the Social Worker took SPT 81 out for lunch. He then said that he did not believe that he would ever go home or that his dad would ever be able to come for him.

The Social Worker carried out a home visit on the 4th and the 5th July 1994 to Mrs [REDACTED]. She reported that Mr [REDACTED] had called at the family home under the influence of alcohol on the 30th June 1994. Mrs [REDACTED] stated then she did not want the children to have access with their father. She obtained an Exclusion Order and advised Mr [REDACTED] that access needed to be settled in Court. Mrs [REDACTED] advised that her father and step mother would be on holiday from Scotland in the near future.

The Social Worker carried out a home visit on the 14th July 1994 concerning the offer of a place at St. Patrick's Training School on the 22nd July 1994. She discussed again with Mrs [REDACTED] the reason for this placement and plans to return SPT 81 to Harberton.

On the 15th July the Social Worker discussed with the Acting Locality Manager the possibility of SPT 81's transfer to St. Patrick's on the 22nd July 1994. As she would be on leave when the case came to court he arranged for another social worker to take the Place of Safety Order.

On the 21st July 1994 the Social Worker wrote to Mr [REDACTED] to advise him that a place had been made available in St Patrick's Training School for SPT 81 and that he would be transferred on the 22nd July 1994. She advised him that this placement would be used as a 'Time-out Break' for SPT 81.

2.77 On the 22nd July 1994 SPT 81 was transported to St Patrick's Training School by his own Social Worker. Mrs [REDACTED] decided not to accompany him to the Training School and requested that he telephone her. On admission a case discussion was arranged for the 26th July 1994.

2.78 Following receipt of the letter of 21st July 1994 Mr [REDACTED] called the Social Work Office Riverview on the 26 July 1994 to see the Acting Locality Manager. Mr [REDACTED] was upset and under the influence of alcohol. This interview lasted two and three quarter hours. The Acting Locality Manager attempted to explain to Mr [REDACTED] that decisions taken were in the belief that they were in the best interest of SPT 81. He reassured Mr [REDACTED] that Social Services were not adopting a position of deliberately excluding him from his child's life.

2.79 On the 25th July 1994 the Social Worker carried out a home visit to discuss SPT 81's placement at St Patrick's. SPT 81 had telephoned his mother over the weekend and she agreed to attend the admission meeting on the 26th July 1994.

The initial Informational Referral Form to St. Patrick's identified reasons for admission as

Bullying and aggressive behaviour towards residents in Harberton.
Sexualised behaviour.

At the Initial Case Review at St Patrick's Training School on the 26th July 1994 it was decided that -

1. *An Interim Order of Detention to Place of Safety to be requested at Derry Juvenile Court.*
2. *Residential Social Worker at St Patrick's to make a referral to Adolescent Psychology and Research Unit for psychological assessment.*
3. *Residential Social Worker to provide a report supporting Social Services in their request for an Interim Order of Detention to facilitate both a behavioural and psychological assessment.*
4. *Next Case Review to be arranged following confirmation of the impending court date at Derry Juvenile Court.*
5. *In the event of St. Patrick's personnel attending court on the same date SPT 81 will be transported by St. Patrick's staff. In the event of St. Patrick's not being in attendance at that court, the Social Worker shall have to transport SPT 81*

2.80 Following SPT 81's admission the Social Worker was in contact with Residential Social Worker at St Patrick's on 2nd August 1994 concerning the completion of a report for court and clarified that the Primary Worker from Harberton would visit SPT 81 on the 5th August 1994. Due to annual leave the Social Worker was not able to attend court and arrangements were made for his Primary Worker from Harberton and Acting Assistant Principal Social Worker (Residential Services) to attend.

She contacted the Residential Social Worker and Psychologist at St Patrick's on the 4th August concerning assessment for SPT 81. The Residential Social Worker reported that she had noted an improvement in SPT 81's behaviour and reported that he had settled.

The Psychologist had her first session with SPT 81 at that stage and agreed to meet with the Primary Worker from Harberton on 5 August 1994 to discuss a further work plan.

The Social Worker also spoke with SPT 81 on the telephone on the 4th August 1994. He indicated that he was well and looked forward to a visit on the 5th August 1994 from Primary Worker from Harberton House and that he expected his mother to visit over the following weekend. Other issues discussed included the forthcoming court hearing and his hopes that he would be able to attend Templemore Secondary School.

She confirmed with the Residential Social Worker at St Patrick's on the 5th August 1994 that the court hearing would take place on the 16th August 1994 in response to the Place of Safety Order and following the court appearance, SPT 81 would spend that night (16th August 1994) in Harberton for an overnight visit. Arrangements were made for staff from St Patrick's to collect him on the 17th August 1994. Arrangements were also made for the case review to take place at St Patrick's on the 19th August 1994.

The Primary Worker from Harberton phoned SPT 81 on the 4th August 1994 and visited him on the 5th August 1994 and the 11th August 1994.

She made a further telephone call to SPT 81 on the 13th August 1994. The report indicates that he was in good form and looking forward to his overnight stay in Harberton on Tuesday the 16th August 1994 when he was in Londonderry for the court case.

SPT 81 absconded from St Patrick's Training School with other boys and was tragically killed on the 15th August 1994 in an accident involving a car stolen by some of the boys. This is the subject of an inquiry by St Patrick's Training School Management Committee.

2.81 Evaluation - 28th May 1994 - 15th August 1994

It will be recalled that Mr [REDACTED] had not had the opportunity to attend the Care Review. He subsequently met with the Social Worker and the Acting Locality Manager in June and expressed his concern about the decision for SPT 81 to go to St Patrick's. His views were coloured by the fact that it had been a bad experience for him personally. Despite the meeting with the Acting Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader), arranged to inform him about the changes at St Patrick's and to explain the reasons for the decision in more detail, he appears to have remained opposed to the decision.

On the 1st June 1994 Mr [REDACTED] requested unsupervised access. This request was considered by the social work staff and discussed with Mrs [REDACTED]. It was decided that Mr [REDACTED] could have unsupervised access to all four children on a monthly basis at Harberton and the first of these contracts took place on the 15th June 1994.

Mr [REDACTED]'s Solicitor wrote to Harberton on the 23rd June regarding increased access but it is not clear whether he was aware of the new arrangements at this time. In any event this letter was responded to and Mr [REDACTED] was asked to contact either the Social Worker or Harberton House.

The Review Team is of the opinion that the request for unsupervised access was properly dealt with by the social work staff. It was important that it should be as Mr [REDACTED] harboured the idea that staff were trying to deliberately exclude him from SPT 81's life and this had been

reinforced to some extent by the decisions not to inform him when SPT 81 was admitted to Harberton in May 1993.

During his access with SPT 81 on the 15th June Mr [REDACTED] alleged that SPT 81 told him that he had seen two boys being abused when he lived in the Creggan Area. A record of Mr [REDACTED]'s account of this conversation is on file and includes the names of the two boys. In addition a third boy who allegedly was with SPT 81 is named. SPT 81 stated that he had not been abused.

Staff attempted to get SPT 81 to discuss this but he refused. However he did not deny that he had said this to his father. There is no record that these allegations were referred to the Police. The Review Team is of the opinion that they should have been. The Review Team have subsequently learned that two of the boys named have been interviewed as part of the Creggan Investigation.

A serious sexual incident in which SPT 81 and another boy were involved took place on the 20th June. This incident was brought to light the following day by the domestic staff and they are to be commended for this.

An untoward Incident Report was completed and the incident was to be discussed at the Case Discussion on the 27th June. There is no record that it was but senior staff who were present recall it being discussed. However there does not appear to have been any follow up of this matter and it was not reported to the Police.

The Review Team is of the opinion that it is not possible on the information available to come to a conclusion as to which boy initiated the behaviour. However it displays a knowledge of homosexual activity and as such should have been reported to the Police and jointly investigated by the social work staff and the Police regarding the possibility in the past of the boys having been sexually abused.

In addition there is no record of this incident having been reported to the boys' parents. This should have been discussed with them as part of the joint investigation process.

Also concerning is the fact that the activity, including the theft of the applicators and Vaseline from an older girls bedroom, must have taken some time, yet it was not detected. This raises again the standard of the supervision of the Children at Harberton and the Review Team is of the opinion that, at the very least, the supervision was not adequate during the 20th June when this incident took place.

SPT 81 was admitted to St Patrick's Training school on the 22nd July 1994 on a Place of Safety Order. The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81's mother was properly informed about the admission but is concerned that Mr [REDACTED] was not written to until the 21st July and was highly unlikely to receive the letter until after [REDACTED] had been admitted. This was again likely to lead to Mr [REDACTED] feeling excluded.. It is unfortunate that because of leave arrangements another Social Worker had to be involved in the process but this Social Worker had dealt with the family initially in 1991 and SPT 81's usual Social Worker interrupted her leave to take SPT 81 to St Patrick's. Mrs [REDACTED] did not wish to accompany SPT 81.

The Review Team considered the use of a Place of Safety Order to admit SPT 81 to St Patrick's Training School. As SPT 81 was in care on a voluntary basis it would not have been possible to take a Place of Safety Order without first discharging him to the care of his mother. This would have been a purely technical arrangement to ensure that the use of a Place of Safety Order was legally valid. The Review Team could find no record of SPT 81 having been discharged from care or of this having been discussed with the Legal Department of the Central Services Agency.

An alternative to the Place of Safety Order would have been to have SPT 81 made a Ward of Court. The Review Team is concerned that in the circumstances SPT 81's retention in Training School could have been the subject of legal challenge.

The liaison with St Patrick's following SPT 81's admission included telephone contact between SPT 81 and Staff, visits and an Initial Case Review on the 26th July which Mrs [redacted] attended along with the social work staff.

It is worth noting that SPT 81 had to be admitted to the Secure Unit at St Patrick's only twenty four hours after his admission to the Care Unit as he was so disruptive. He was returned to the Care Unit the next day and appeared to be more settled after that.

At the Case Review on the 26th July the issue of boys absconding was discussed and the arrangements which St Patrick's had to deal with this were outlined, as the group in the care unit was unsettled. This was discussed in the context of whether SPT 81 was likely to abscond and staff expressed the view that this was unlikely. This is consistent with the staff's perception that it was not a high risk in SPT 81's case.

Mrs [redacted] has indicated to the Review Team that she was concerned about the possibility of SPT 81 absconding when she visited him on the 26th July 1994 as he had told her that he was 'always being asked to run away' by the other boys. This conversation took place following the Care Review and Mrs [redacted] has stated that she raised this with SPT 81's Primary Worker at St Patrick's. The Primary Worker has no recollection of this conversation. The Review Team is unable to reconcile these different views.

It was decided at this Case Review to refer SPT 81 for a psychological assessment and in order to have sufficient time for this to be carried out to apply for an Interim Order of Detention to follow the Place of Safety Order.

It would seem that staff were still hopeful that SPT 81's behaviour could be modified and that he could be returned to Harberton. In the opinion of the Review Team this was unlikely to be successful while SPT 81 continued living in a residential group setting.

Tragically, SPT 81 absconded from St Patrick's with other boys and was killed on the 15th August in an accident involving a car stolen by some of the boys. This is the subject of an enquiry by St Patrick's Training School Management Committee.

In relation to the liaison with St Patrick's Training School the Review Team is of the opinion that this was satisfactory and that the social work staff and St Patrick's staff co-operated fully in SPT 81's interests.

There was at least one occasion during this period when the level of supervision of SPT 81 was not adequate but given that by this stage he was the most difficult child Harberton had to cope with the Review Team is of the opinion that generally he received satisfactory care.

Apart from the failure to notify Mr [REDACTED] in time about SPT 81's admission to St Patrick's the Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 and his parents received satisfactory social work support and help during this period.

The Board's Policy and Procedures for Children in Care were fully implemented. However its Child Protection Policy and Procedures were not fully implemented.

3 GENERAL OVERVIEW

- 3.1 The Review Team regards this case as one of the most demanding that staff were dealing with at this time. The problems identified included child abuse; parental separation; generalised violence; serious difficulties in parent-child relationships; mother-children separations; general child management difficulties; extended family relationship difficulties; alcoholism; new partner relationship; behaviour problems with SPT 81; alternative care for SPT 81 and sexual assaults in a children's home.
- 3.2 There were approximately sixteen agencies and teams involved with the family over the three year period and SPT 81 would have had to relate to around thirty eight staff. In addition he experienced three changes in Social Worker; a change in Primary Worker; three residential homes, two schools; a new adult male in the family and had relate to about sixty new children. This number of people he had to relate to and the amount of change would have taxed the coping ability of a mature adult never mind that of an insecure ten year old.
- 3.3 There was significant difficulties relating to the continuity of staff in the Riverview Family and Child Care Social Work Team for various reasons. This was exacerbated by the fact that four managers in line up to and including the Unit Director of Social Care were in an acting capacity for most of the period on the Review.
- 3.4 The impression is given that staff were under considerable pressure and consequently were reacting to problems as they arose. As a result a comprehensive strategy was not developed to try to achieve a holistic and proactive approach.
- 3.5 The inter-agency co-ordination appeared to be left almost entirely to the Social Worker and this was a formidable task given the number of agencies involved.

In cases such as this the Social Worker is the Key Worker and has to maintain a high level of communication with the other practitioners. Inevitably the role also involves some co-ordination. However the main inter-agency co-ordinator should be undertaken at a more senior level and the Social Worker should have sufficient time to undertake social work practice with children and families. The impression is given that a great deal of the Social Worker's time was taken up with case co-ordination.

- 3.6 Staff are to be commended for implementing with one exception, the Board's policies and procedures within the required timescales for example Care Reviews every quarter.

However key people such as the Acting Senior Social Worker were missing from most of the Case Conferences and Case Reviews and in addition the Chairmanship of these changed regularly. This meant that there was a lack of continuity and consequently the approach to meeting this family's needs could not be described as fully integrated.

The General Medical Practitioner did not attend any of the case conferences or care reviews and the Police were usually not represented at a sufficiently senior level. The Review Team took a decision not to recommend measures to improve the involvement of General Practitioners as this matter has already been given considerable attention.

3.7 There was clear evidence of commitment by both of the schools SPT 81 attended to meeting his needs and working closely with the social work staff. The Senior Staff in these school and SPT 81's teachers are to be commended for this.

3.8 The recording in all the case files is poor. The Review Team is aware that this tends to be the first casualty when staff are under pressure. However it made the task of the Review Team more difficult and time consuming than it would otherwise have been and meant that staff had to be contacted on many occasions to clarify important issues.

In the three year period under review the team was able to identify only one occasion where there was a record of the therapeutic work undertaken. As a consequence of this poor recording there is no substantial written evidence of the nature or outcomes of the work undertaken.

3.9 Staff made considerable efforts to develop and maintain a partnership approach with Mrs [redacted] and SPT 81. This is reflected in the involvement of Mrs [redacted] and SPT 81 in the decision making and particularly in their participation in Case Conferences and Care Reviews.

Attempts were also made to involve Mr [redacted] in the decision making but these were less successful due to his long periods of absence and his unpredictability related to his personal problems. Mr [redacted] was at times a very disruptive influence. However it is unfortunate that some of the decisions in relation to his involvement reinforced his perception that he was being excluded from decisions about SPT 81's care.

3.10 During the last few months of the Board's care of SPT 81 a major investigation began in Creggan into organised abuse which placed unprecedented demands on all the staff involved in child protection work. This has involved interviewing over one hundred children to date and consequently the staff at Riverview had to be supplemented by staff from outside their locality office, some of whom were inexperienced. Staff are to be commended for coping with such a large scale investigation with limited resources.

3.11 It is inevitable that a Case Management Review which involves undertaking a detailed examination and evaluation of practice and management will identify some shortcomings. It is also difficult to gauge whether a case is representative of the standard of work generally. However on balance the Review Team feels that there are sufficient grounds to warrant a review of the discharge of the Board's statutory child care responsibilities in the Foyle Community Unit.

3.12 The review team wishes to emphasise that it found no lack of care, concern or commitment from any of the staff who dealt with SPT 81 and his family.

4 SUMMARY OF CONCLUSIONS

4.1 The Review Team was concerned at the lack of a thorough assessment of this case when Social Work involvement recommenced on the 23rd October 1991. There was no evidence that the risks were assessed and a programme of care developed to address the problems and promote the Children's Welfare.

4.2 The Review Team is of the opinion that the case should not have been closed around the 6th November 1991.

4.3 The Review Team is concerned at the way the allegations on the 16th December 1991 by [REDACTED] and SPT 81, that they had been physically abused by their mother were dealt with and is of the opinions that the social work staff involved did not fully implement the Board's Child Protection Policy and Procedures.

There is no record of the outcome of the Area Clinical Psychologist's assessment being communicated to the Social Worker or of any liaison between him and the Social Worker. The Review Team wishes to place on record its concern at this unsatisfactory outcome of the referral to the Area Clinical Psychologist.

4.4 The Review Team is of the opinion that the help the family received from Social Services during the period following the Initial Case Conference (17-2-92) and up to SPT 81's admission to Nazareth House Children's Home on the 29th June 1992 was satisfactory and that the correct approach had now been adopted.

4.5 If the Social Work staff decided to place SPT 81 with his father then this decision is questionable given that Mr [REDACTED] had not been able to care for SPT 81 in the past and his circumstances had not improved.

4.6 The Review Team is of the opinion that the Social Work Staff did not fully discharge the statutory responsibilities of the Board in relation to the placement of [REDACTED] and SPT 81 by Mr [REDACTED] with family friends.

4.7 The Review Team is of the opinion that the Board needed legal control of SPT 81 at the time of his admission to Nazareth House on the 29th June 1992 and that the use of compulsory measures was appropriate.

4.8 The Review Team is of the opinion that any preference between foster care and residential care, in relation to the initial placement of SPT 81 on the 29th June 1992 would not have been significant.

4.9 The Review Team is of the opinion that the discharge of SPT 81, from Nazareth House to his mother's care was properly planned and appropriate given the help and support they were to receive and that both wanted to be reunited albeit that SPT 81 was influenced by the fact that this was the only alternative to remaining in care.

4.10 The Review Team was concerned that the Board's statutory responsibilities were not fully discharged during the period 3rd September 1992 to the 12th January 1993, nor its policy and procedures in relation to child protection fully implemented. While the

Review Team is appreciative of the pressures which staff were under we are of the opinion that this case was not accorded sufficient priority during this period.

- 4.11 The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 received satisfactory care at Nazareth House Children's Home but was concerned that he rarely did his homework. This should have been addressed by staff at Nazareth House and the Social Work Staff.
- 4.12 The Review Team would wish to acknowledge the commitment of the Holy Child School to liaising with Social Services regarding SPT 81.
- 4.13 The Review Team is concerned that the working arrangement placed considerable pressure on the Acting Senior Social Worker (Team Leader) and would have made it very difficult for her to discharge her management responsibilities to a satisfactory standard and provide the level of support and supervision required by the Social Work Staff in her team.
- 4.14 The Review Team was concerned that there was no planned social work support for Mrs [REDACTED] and SPT 81 from his return to his mother on the 27th November 1992 until the 20th January 1993.
- 4.15 The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81's discharge from Nazareth House was properly planned but is concerned that SPT 81 and his mother did not attend the Day Centre and that this was not immediately followed up by the Social Work Staff.
- 4.16 Given that there had been no planned social work undertaken with the family for the two months prior to the Case Conference on the 20th January 1993 and no opportunity to gauge whether any improvements had been made the Review Team is of the view that the decision to de-register all of the Children except SPT 81 was premature.
- 4.17 The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 and his mother did not receive a satisfactory level of service during the period the 27th November 1992 until the 24th May 1993.
- 4.18 The Child Protection Policy and Procedures were fully implemented during this period apart from delays in the minutes of the Case Conferences being typed and available for distribution.
- The Review Team was concerned at the length of the delay which amounted to around three months and could have had serious implications.
- 4.19 The Review Team is of the view that the application to have the children discharged from wardship was appropriate.
- 4.20 The Review Team is concerned that when a change of Social Worker took place, because of maternity leave the Case was allocated to an inexperienced worker.
- 4.21 The Review Team was pleased to note that SPT 81's new school, the Holy Family School showed similar commitment to his previous one.

- 4.22 There is no evidence to indicate that the helpful recommendations of the Educational Psychologist were implemented.
- 4.23 Given the relationship difficulties the Review Team is of the opinion that intensive therapeutic work would have been required with SPT 81 and his mother and neither had co-operated in the arrangements made for this.
- 4.24 The Review Team, for the reasons outlined, is of the opinion that SPT 81 was beyond his mother's control at the time of his admission to care on the 26th May and that the situation was likely to deteriorate further. The Team considers that a voluntary admission to care was the best course of action.
- 4.25 The Review Team is of the opinion that a specialist foster home placement, ideally with no other children, would have been the preferred placement for SPT 81.
- A foster care placement was considered at this time as was Nazareth House Children's Home but neither was available.
- 4.26 The Review Team is of the opinion that Mr [REDACTED] should have been informed that SPT 81 had been admitted to care.
- 4.27 The Review Team is of the opinion that there was too much reliance on 'time out' as a sanction during the period June - September 1993 and that by becoming habitual it lost its effectiveness.
- 4.28 The Review Team was concerned that the Primary Worker was not able to establish a therapeutic relationship with SPT 81.
- 4.29 The Review Team is satisfied that the direction, support and supervision provided by the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader) to the Primary Worker was satisfactory.
- 4.30 There is no evidence in the succeeding months that the relationship between SPT 81 and his Primary Worker improved. Given its importance this is a matter which should have been resolved sooner rather than later by the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader).
- 4.31 The Review Team would question whether there is sufficient contact time between staff and children at Harberton House Children's Home to undertake the individual therapeutic work which is now necessary in residential care.
- 4.32 The Review Team was concerned that the Board's 'Complaints Procedures for Children in Residential Care and their Parents' was not activated by either the Social Worker or Residential Social Worker when SPT 81 made his complaints about his Primary Worker.
- 4.33 The Social Worker in the Leaving and After Care team brought this complaint to light and the Acting Assistant Unit General Manager identified failures by the staff to convey out the Complaints Procedures and arranged for appropriate action to be taken in relation to these failures.

- 4.34 The Review Team while concerned that such failures should have occurred in the first instance, is of the opinion that the complaints were subsequently satisfactorily investigated by the Assistant Principal Social Worker and appropriate action taken.
- 4.35 Given the shortcomings identified the Review Team is of the opinion that the care which SPT 81 received during this period to the beginning of July 1993 was only adequate.
- Apart from the failure to activate the Complaint's Procedure the Board's policy and procedures for children in care were followed and appropriate contact was maintained by the Social Worker with Mrs [REDACTED].
- 4.36 Mrs [REDACTED]'s partner had begun to live with her in June 1993. He should have been vetted at this time and certainly before SPT 81 was allowed to stay overnight. This does not appear to have happened and is of concern to the Review Team.
- 4.37 The joint work sessions with SPT 81 and his mother which were conducted by the Social Worker and Primary Worker during the period August - December 1993 were a positive development.
- 4.38 Mr [REDACTED] reacted badly when he learned on the 8th July 1993 that SPT 81 had been admitted to care. The Review Team has already expressed the view that Mr [REDACTED] should have been informed of SPT 81's admission to care and is of the opinion that it would have reduced the strong negative reaction.
- 4.39 The Review Team is of the opinion that the arrangements for Mr [REDACTED] to have supervised access was in SPT 81's best interests and that it was appropriate for it to be supervised initially.
- 4.40 The Review Team is of the opinion that it was right not to agree to SPT 81 going to his grandparents on a long term basis given that he was in care short stay and the plans were for him to return to his mother following work on their relationship. The Review Team was concerned that by September 1993 an appointment had still not been offered by the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team.
- 4.41 The Review Team is of the opinion that it was in SPT 81's best interests to have increasing contact with his back up Residential Social worker given the poor relationship between him and his Primary Worker.
- 4.42 SPT 81's former Social Worker returned from maternity leave. Given the complexity of the care the Review Team is of the opinion that it was in SPT 81's best interest for her to take over the case again.
- 4.43 This was a more positive period in SPT 81's care and there now appeared to be more direction to the work and some progress. The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 and his parents received satisfactory help and support from the Social Work Staff during this period though we remained concerned about the habitual use of 'time out' and the poor relationship with the Primary Worker.

- 4.44 The Review Team was concerned at the level of the Psychological input to the meeting with the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team, which took place on the 12th November 1993 and that no arrangements were made for a structured input from a psychologist to the work being undertaken with SPT 81 and his mother, given the behaviour he was exhibiting and its long term nature.
- 4.45 Following Mr [REDACTED]'s damage to the family home the Social Work Staff took appropriate action and postponed SPT 81's access until the situation was assessed.
- 4.46 The Review Team is of the opinion that the assault by Mrs [REDACTED] and her partner on SPT 81 on the 5th January 1994 frightened him considerably and had damaging consequences for the relationship between SPT 81 and his mother.
- 4.47 The Review Team is of the opinion that in the circumstances it was appropriate to decide that SPT 81 should remain in care on a long term basis and as a consequence to remove his name from the Child Protection Register.
- However the Team is surprised that specialist fostering was not requested at this stage and that a report was not forwarded to the Fostering Unit until April 1994.
- 4.48 The Review Team was concerned about the shortcomings in the investigation of the physical assault on SPT 81 which by any standards was a serious matter.
- 4.49 The Review Team found it surprising that a report was not forwarded by the Police to the Director of Public Prosecutions given that this was an offence against a child; the medical evidence; Mrs [REDACTED]'s admission and the fact that SPT 81's aunt witnessed the assault.
- 4.50 the Review Team was concerned that the question of compensation for SPT 81 does not appear to have been pursued by the Social Work Staff.
- 4.51 The Review Team is of the opinion that the follow up action taken by the Social Worker following allegations by SPT 81 that his siblings were being abused, was satisfactory in the circumstances.
- 4.52 The Review Team is strongly of the view that any problems in the relationship between a Primary Worker and the child must be dealt with immediately as it is fundamental to the care being provided and the therapeutic work being undertaken with the child.
- 4.53 After December 1993 there was no therapeutic work being undertaken to improve the relationship between SPT 81 and his mother and without this it was highly unlikely that SPT 81 could be successfully rehabilitated with his mother.
- 4.54 The Review Team is of the opinion that the Board's policy and procedures in relation to child protection were not fully implemented. The shortcomings relate to the investigation of the physical assault on SPT 81.
- 4.55 The Board's policy and procedures for children in care were fully implemented.

- 4.56 Although there were shortcomings during the period from September 1993 - February 1994, overall, the care which SPT 81 received improved and the Review Team is of the opinion that it was satisfactory as was the help and support Mrs [REDACTED] received from the social Work Staff.
- 4.57 The Review Team is of the opinion that the residential Social work staff dealt with SPT 81's absconding from Harberton in a competent and caring manner. The off-duty member of staff who found the boys deserves credit for the way she dealt with this matter.
- 4.58 The Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81's former Primary Worker is to be commended for his alertness in discovering the boys exposing themselves and in helping to bring the sexual assaults on the female resident to light.
- 4.59 this matter was properly investigated in accordance with the board's Policy and Procedures for Child Protection and the Joint Investigation Protocol.
- 4.60 The Review Team doubts the appropriateness of linking SPT 81 to the Creggan Organised Abuse Investigation at this time.
- 4.61 While the Police and Criminal Evidence Procedures were not followed to the letter, the Review Team is of the opinion that the arrangement for a solicitor to be present provided a satisfactory safeguard for SPT 81.
- 4.62 While the sexual assaults on the ten year old female resident were properly investigated the Review Team was concerned about some shortcomings in the liaison between the Social Work Staff and the Police. The main failings lay with the Police.
- 4.63 Arising from the sexual assaults the Review Team is of the opinion that there were periods when the level of supervision of the children was not adequate.
- 4.64 The Review Team is of the opinion that the family friends should have been interviewed as possible foster parents for SPT 81 as suggested by Mr [REDACTED] but take the view that such an arrangements were unlikely to be successful unless these friends had the skills and knowledge to undertake special fostering.
- 4.65 SPT 81's statements on the 8th May 1994 were considered to be more of an attention seeking than life threatening nature and the Review team agrees with this assessment.
- 4.66 The Review Team finds the omission of a specialist long term foster care placement for SPT 81, from the Residential Care Review decisions on the 27th May 1994 surprising.
- 4.67 The Review Team was concerned that given the important matters which were to be discussed at the Residential Care Review, the Acting Senior Social Worker and Vice-Principal of SPT 81's school were not present and that SPT 81 and his father did not have the opportunity to participate.

The Review Team is of the opinion that the date of either the Review or the Police interview should have been changed to allow SPT 81 to attend and that Mr [REDACTED] should have been invited.

- 4.68 The Review Team is of the opinion that it should have been apparent by this stage that SPT 81 could not function satisfactorily in a group living situation as he had few, if any, internal controls and was so insecure and attention seeking that he viewed other children's as competitors for attention.
- 4.69 The Review Team is of the opinion that at this time SPT 81's needs could not be fully met in residential care and were most likely to be met in a specialist foster care placement. It follows that placement in another residential setting would not, in the opinion of the Team have been a preferable alternative to Harberton as far as SPT 81's needs were concerned.
- 4.70 The Review Team is of the view that only justification for moving SPT 81 at this time to St Patrick's was that he posed a considerable threat to the other children.
- 4.71 On the basis of the information available the Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 posed a threat to the physical and emotional well being of the other children and as this was escalating the threat was considerable.
- 4.72 The Review Team is of the opinion that Training School was the only option given our analysis of the circumstances and the unavailability of a specialist foster Foster care placement.
- 4.73 Mrs [REDACTED] accepted the need for SPT 81 to be placed in St Patrick's Training School but it would appear that Mr [REDACTED] remained opposed to this, SPT 81 did not wish to go to St Patrick's.
- 4.74 The Social Work Staff did not regard the risk of SPT 81 absconding as being high. In these circumstances the Review Team does not regard it as concerning that this matter was not discussed prior to SPT 81's admission to St Patrick's Training School.
- 4.75 There were periods during the three months to the end of May 1994 when the level of supervision of SPT 81 was not adequate but given the problems he was presenting the Review Team is of the opinion that generally he received satisfactory care at Harberton. The Team is also of the opinion that, with the exception of arrangements not being made for SPT 81 and his father to participate in the Care Review, SPT 81 and his parents received satisfactory social Work Support and help during this period and that the Board's Policy and Procedures for Children in Care were fully implemented.
- 4.76 The Review Team is of the opinion that Mr [REDACTED] request for unsupervised access was properly dealt with by the Social Work Staff.
- 4.77 The Review Team is of the opinion that the allegations SPT 81 is said by Mr [REDACTED] to have made to him about witnessing abuse of boys in the Creggan should have been referred to the Police.

The Review Team has subsequently learned that two of the boys named have been interviewed as part of the Creggan Investigation.

- 4.78 The domestic staff at Harberton are to be commended for bringing a serious sexual incident between SPT 81 and another male resident to light on the 20th June 1994.
- 4.79 The Review Team is of the opinion that it is not possible on the information available to come to a conclusion as to which boy initiated the behaviour. However it displays a knowledge of homosexual activity and as such should have been reported to the Police and jointly investigated by the Social Work staff and the Police regarding the possibility in the past of the boys having been sexually abused. The incident should also have been discussed with the boys' parents as part of the joint investigation process.
- 4.80 This incident raised once again a question about the standard of the supervision of the Children at Harberton. The Review Team is of the opinion that, at the very least, the supervision was not adequate during the 20th June when this incident took place.
- 4.81 The Review Team was concerned that Mr [REDACTED] was not written to until the 21st July informing him that SPT 81 was to be admitted to St Patrick's on the 22nd July. This was again likely to lead to Mr [REDACTED] feeling excluded from decisions about SPT 81's care.
- 4.82 The Review Team could find no record of SPT 81 having been discharged from care prior to the Place of Safety Order being out or of it being discussed with the Legal Department of the Central Services Agency.
- The Review Team was concerned that in the circumstances SPT 81's retention in Training School could have been the subject of legal challenge.
- 4.83 The issue of whether SPT 81 was likely to abscond was discussed at the Care Review at St Patrick's on the 26th July 1994 and was considered to be unlikely. This is consistent with the staff's perception that it was not a high risk in SPT 81's case. The Review Team is unable to reconcile the different views expressed by Mrs [REDACTED] and the Primary Worker at St Patrick's regarding the concern the former had about SPT 81 absconding.
- 4.84 It would seem that staff were still hopeful that SPT 81's behaviour could be modified and that he could be returned to Harberton. In the opinion of the Review Team this was unlikely to be successful while SPT 81 continued living in a residential group setting.
- 4.85 The Review Team is of the opinion that the liaison with St Patrick's Training School was satisfactory and that the Social Work Staff and St Patrick's Staff co-operated fully in SPT 81's interests.
- 4.86 There was at least one occasion during this period when the level of supervision of SPT 81 was not adequate but given that by this stage, he was the most difficult child Harberton had to cope with the Review Team is of the opinion that generally he received satisfactory care.

- 4.87 Apart from the failure to notify Mr [REDACTED] in time about SPT 81's admission to St Patrick's the Review Team is of the opinion that SPT 81 and his parents received satisfactory social work support and help during this period.
- 4.88 The Board's Policy and Procedures for Children in Care were fully implemented. However its Child Protection Policy and Procedures were not fully implemented.
- 4.89 The Review Team regards this case as one of the most demanding that staff were dealing with at this time.
- 4.90 The number of people SPT 81 had to relate to and the amount of change would have taxed the coping ability of a mature adult never mind that of an insecure ten year old.
- 4.91 The impression is given that staff were under considerable pressure and consequently were reacting to problems as they arose. As a result a comprehensive strategy was not developed to try to achieve an holistic and proactive approach.
- 4.92 The inter-agency co-ordination appeared to be left almost entirely to the Social Worker and this was a formidable task given the number of agencies involved. Also the impression is given that a great deal of the Social Worker's time was taken up with individual case co-ordination .
- 4.93 Staff are to be commended for implementing, with one exception, the Board's policies and procedures within the required timescales. However there was a lack of continuity at Case Conference and Care Reviews and some key people were missing from most of these important forums.
- 4.94 The senior staff and teachers in SPT 81's two schools are to be commended for their commitment to meeting his needs and liaising with the social work staff.
- 4.95 The recording in all the case files is poor.
- 4.96 During the last few months of the Board's care of SPT 81 a major investigation began into the organised sexual abuse of children in the Creggan area. Staff are to be commended for coping with such a large scale investigation with limited resources.
- 4.97 Staff made considerable efforts to maintain a partnership approach with Mr [REDACTED] and SPT 81. Attempts were also made to involve Mr [REDACTED] in the decision making but were less successful and it is unfortunate that on some occasions staff reinforced his perception that he was being excluded from decisions about SPT 81's care.
- 4.98 On balance the Review Team feels that there are sufficient ground to warrant a review of the discharge of the Board's statutory child care responsibilities in the Foyle Community Unit.
- 4.99 The Review Team found no lack of care, concerns or commitment from any of the staff who dealt with SPT 81 and his family.

REVIEW OF THE CIRCUMSTANCES SURROUNDING

THE DEATH OF

SPT 81

ON 14TH AUGUST 1994

CONTENTS

SECTION	PAGE
1. Introduction	1
2. The history of the case of [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED] and the events leading to and the circumstances surrounding his absconding on 14 August 1994	2
3. The reasons for [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED]'s transfer from Harberton House to St Patrick's Training School	13
4. The adequacy of information about [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED]'s background and behaviour provided to the training school by the Board	16
5. The arrangements for [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED]'s care and supervision in St Patrick's Training School	18
6. Lessons to be learnt from the case particularly in areas such as the transfer of children to training schools, the supervision with challenging behaviours and absconding	28
7. Recommendations	31
8. Appendix A - Terms of Reference	

REVIEW OF THE CIRCUMSTANCES SURROUNDING THE DEATH OF SPT 81

1. INTRODUCTION

- 1.1 SPT 81 was an eleven year old boy who had been in the care of the Western Health and Social Services Board but had been transferred to St Patrick's Training School under the provisions of a Place of Safety Order. After being at Aisling House, the St Patrick's assessment unit, for approximately three weeks SPT 81 absconded from the school in the company of four other boys on 14th August 1994. Tragically, SPT 81 was killed in a road accident in the early hours of the following morning.
- 1.2 Subsequently The Western Health and Social Services Board commissioned a review of its care for SPT 81 and the Board of Management of St. Patrick's prepared a report for the Northern Ireland Office on the incident. There were, however, a number of matters not fully covered by these two reports and in March 1995 the Ministers responsible for the Criminal Justice Services Division of the Northern Ireland Office and the Department of the Health and Social Services jointly commissioned the Social Services Inspectorate to undertake a review of the reasons for the transfer of SPT 81 to St Patrick's, the care and supervision he received while there and the events leading to the absconding from the training school. A copy of the full terms of reference is reproduced at Appendix A.
- 1.3 The review was undertaken by Mr Victor McElfattrick and Mr Chris Walker of SSI who were assisted by Mr Robert Mitchell of the NIO. They interviewed the Western Board staff who were involved with SPT 81's case, the senior management of St Patrick's and the staff of Aisling House. Assistance was given by the RUC in clarifying the events that occurred immediately before and after SPT 81's death as well as Police procedures for dealing with reported absconding. The Inspectors also read the two reports already prepared as well as case and other records relevant to the care that SPT 81 received.
- 1.4 The Inspectors are aware that many of the staff were closely involved in SPT 81's care and that his death had shocked them deeply. Furthermore the staff had already provided information for the two earlier inquiries. In this light the Inspectors wish to record their appreciation of the open and honest way their questions were answered and other information readily and willingly provided.

2. THE HISTORY OF THE CASE OF SPT 81 AND THE EVENTS LEADING TO AND THE CIRCUMSTANCES SURROUNDING HIS ABSCONDING ON 14 AUGUST 1994

- 2.1 Mr and Mrs [REDACTED] had four children whose dates of birth ranged from 1980 to 1990. SPT 81, who was born on 22nd January 1983 was the second oldest. Mr and Mrs [REDACTED] separated in November 1991 and Mrs [REDACTED] was awarded custody of the children in February 1992. In June 1992 Mrs [REDACTED] is alleged to have assaulted SPT 81 after which he was placed in his father's care. This arrangement broke down after a few days and he was admitted to the care of the Western Health and Social Services Board and placed in Nazareth House Children's Home in Londonderry.
- 2.2 In Nazareth House SPT 81 proved difficult for staff to manage and required close supervision because of his aggressive behaviour. It was, however, recorded that he interacted well on a one to one level. In September 1992 SPT 81 absconded with another boy. Both of them were found at SPT 81's grandmother's home the following morning and returned to the children's home.
- 2.3 During the Autumn the relationship between SPT 81 and his mother is reported to have improved and it was decided that he should return home to her care on 27th November 1992. Because of sick leave and other staff shortages there was no fieldwork input from the Board during this period either to help prepare SPT 81 for his return home or to support Mrs [REDACTED] in the early stages of her attempt to take on his care.
- 2.4 In February 1993 SPT 81 refused to return home from school, alleging that his mother had beaten him. He requested to be received into care but the social worker arranged for him to be looked after by an aunt. After two nights he agreed to return home.
- 2.5 In April and May 1993 Mrs [REDACTED] reported that she was continuing to have problems coping with SPT 81's behaviour. On 12th May she contacted the out of hours emergency social work service to request that he be received into care again. Admission was deferred and a referral was made to the Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Team who agreed to provide a consultation service. A few days later Mrs [REDACTED] again requested that SPT 81 be received into care because of the difficulties that she was experiencing in controlling his behaviour. SPT 81 was subsequently received into care under the provisions of Section 103 of the Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1968 on 24th May.
- 2.6 SPT 81 was admitted to Harberton House Children's Home. Initially he appeared to settle quickly in the unit but within a few days he began to demonstrate behaviour problems including lying, bullying and aggression to staff when they challenged him. Separation from the rest of the group, or

"time out", as it was called, in his bedroom was the normal response to this behaviour but it appears to have been largely ineffective in that he was sent there on forty six occasions in a four month period. The reports on the case file indicate that he had difficulty functioning in a group but, as in Nazareth House, he thrived on individual attention and related much better on a one to one basis.

- 2.7 Over the Summer work with SPT 81 continued. On the one hand it was reported to be difficult for the residential social workers since he only responded to comment on the positive aspects of his behaviour and "switched off" when the negatives were raised. He also found it difficult to maintain relationships with other children. He sought their company but soon ended up fighting with them.
- 2.8 On the other hand it was reported that he would seek out staff for their attention and could be very pleasant to have about. He enjoyed various activities appropriate to his age group such as model making and painting and it was again noted that he enjoyed one to one contact with staff.
- 2.9 During this period he became more settled in the home and less challenging to the staff. They attributed this improvement in behaviour to increased contacts, including overnight stays, with his home and mother which he saw as a reward for good behaviour.
- 2.10 In September SPT 81 returned to school and his teacher subsequently reported that his behaviour in class was much better. She said that he settled in easily with his class-mates and with her. Again she commented that he worked well on a one to one basis and responded well to encouragement and praise. His negative behaviour was also mentioned. It included a dislike for correction, flaunting the school rules as well as a degree of aggression towards other children but she saw many commendable qualities in SPT 81, whom she described as "a very manly little boy".
- 2.11 On 21st September 1993 the Senior Social Worker from the Child and Adolescent Psychiatry Team contacted SPT 81's Social Worker to advise her that SPT 81 was on their waiting list. However, she was told that he would not be seen by the team before October at the earliest and even then they would not be able to undertake any direct work with him. The Information for Consultation Form sent to the psychiatric team by SPT 81's social worker indicated that she was asking them to provide family therapy, counselling for SPT 81 and Mrs [REDACTED] and a psychological assessment of SPT 81. The report also contained the comment that "[REDACTED] appears to have a very 'distorted' attitude towards women, particularly women who are in authority...". The meeting between the social worker and the psychiatric team was, in fact, not held until 12th November 1993.

- 2.12 As mentioned above the team indicated that it would only be in a position to provide consultation and this was undertaken by the Senior Social Worker, Nurse Therapist and Trainee Psychologist. It was decided that there was no need for a psychological assessment as one had been carried out previously by an Educational Psychologist. It was also considered unnecessary for SPT 81 to have a psychiatric assessment and that his emotional and behavioural problems should be susceptible to the work being undertaken by his field and residential social workers. Nevertheless, it was also recorded that residential care did not appear to be the best placement option for SPT 81.
- 2.13 On 5th January 1994 SPT 81 returned to Harberton House after a visit to his mother's home and alleged that he had been physically abused by her and her cohabitee. A child protection case conference was already scheduled to be held on 12th January and this took place as planned. SPT 81 attended part of the meeting and expressed his view that he was happy at Harberton House, he did not wish to see either his father or mother and that his return to his mother's care would not work if her partner was present in the house. At this case conference it was agreed that SPT 81 would remain in care on a long term basis and that he would be referred to the fostering unit. However, it was not until the end of April that the referral report was forwarded to the unit.
- 2.14 By March 1994 SPT 81 was reported to be more settled in the home. He had re-established contact with his mother and had visits from her and his brother and sisters every Sunday. However, on 4th March SPT 81 superficially scratched one of his wrists and on 21st March SPT 81 and another boy went missing from the home. They were returned about three hours later by a member of staff who found them walking along a road. Staff considered this latter incident to be a prank.
- 2.15 During April it was reported that while SPT 81's behaviour was still challenging he had begun to respond to the one to one work being carried out with him by his primary worker. However towards the end of the month staff had cause to talk to SPT 81 and another boy who had exposed themselves to each other in one of the bedrooms. During the interview about this incident it emerged that three boys, including SPT 81, had earlier been involved in sexual assaults against a girl resident on three occasions.
- 2.16 These incidents were reported to the Police on 25th April and in accordance with the child protection procedures a strategy discussion was held two days later when it was agreed that they would be jointly investigated by Board staff and the RUC. On 5th May SPT 81 was jointly interviewed by his social worker and a police officer. A child protection case conference was held on 6th May and it was decided also to involve a police officer from the team investigating allegations of organised abuse in the Creggan area. Following this investigation the Police forwarded a

report to the Director of Public Prosecutions. He decided that no action would be taken against any of the children.

- 2.17 Subsequently SPT 81's behaviour deteriorated. After returning from two days at Extern's Killadeas Centre on 8th May he lost some privileges for misbehaving and was hostile towards staff. He damaged his room and became upset. Apparently, more seriously, he cut his wrist for a second time, albeit very superficially, with a piece of glass and made statements including one that "he wanted to be in his box" and "if this doesn't work the Foyle will".
- 2.18 During the next few days the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader) discussed SPT 81's behaviour with him and the possibility of a transfer to training school was raised. Other residential staff also expressed concern about the suitability of his placement in Harberton House to the field worker on more than one occasion.
- 2.19 Before the residential review that was held on 27th May the field social worker and the primary worker jointly prepared a report that made 17 points. The most relevant ones are:-
- "i. The fostering unit have not yet identified a suitable long term foster home for SPT 81.
 - "v. Mrs [REDACTED] wished SPT 81 to remain in care.
 - "vii. He related well on a one to one basis with staff but still had problems in a group setting because of his attention seeking behaviour.
 - "viii. His bullying had increased and become more subtle. Due to his behaviour SPT 81 is no longer allowed to go swimming with the other children.
 - "x. SPT 81 did not want to stay at Harberton but did not want to go training school.
 - "xi. Because of the risk to other children from SPT 81's behaviour, staff felt unable to offer other children a safe environment and they had come to the conclusion that Harberton might no longer be a suitable placement for SPT 81.
 - "xiii. Attempts should continue to obtain a specialist long stay foster care placement.
 - "xiv. In the short term, St Patrick's Training School should be considered for time out.

"xvii. The Social Worker had concerns about SPT 81 going to training school due to his age but accepts the fact that due to the lack of anything suitable it is an option."

2.20 The review took place on 27th May and the following decisions were made:-

- "1. Given SPT 81's continued risk to other children, and his inability or unwillingness to take on his responsibility for this, it was agreed that a place in St.Patrick's Training School would be sought for a limited time as part of an agreed programme of work with SPT 81.
- "2. Ongoing work will continue to address issues relating to SPT 81's behaviour and his relationship with his family and other adults and children.
- "3. Recognition that SPT 81, as an abuser, requires to be involved in a programme which will address this, including where this abusive behaviour came from.
- "4. Social Work staff to liaise with St Patrick's with a view to seeking a place for SPT 81.
- "5. SPT 81's case will be reviewed at Harberton House on 23rd September 1994."

2.21 Given that SPT 81 was in the Western Board's care on a voluntary basis it was particularly appropriate that Mrs [REDACTED] was present at this review. It was recorded that she was fully involved in the discussion but it was not recorded whether she was in agreement with the decisions made, in particular the one to refer him to a training school.

2.22 On 31st May the Senior Social Worker (Residential Team Leader) telephoned St.Patrick's and spoke to the Intake Social Worker. There were no vacancies in Aisling House (the St Patrick's assessment unit) at that time but he agreed to place SPT 81's name on the waiting list. He also recorded the conversation on the Initial Referral Form. The presenting problems were recorded as being as:-

"Sexual assault on 10 year old female
Sexualised language and behaviour
Threatening behaviour to 10 year old girl and others."

Although the Inspectors were told by St Patrick's management that expectations for the placement were discussed during this and subsequent telephone conversations, they were not recorded on the initial referral form and no written information was sent to St.Patrick's by the Western Board until after SPT 81's admission more than seven weeks later.

- 2.23 A case discussion was held at Harberton House on 27th June 1994 when, among other things, it was confirmed that attempts to secure a place for SPT 81 at St Patrick's would continue. In the middle of the following month the Western Board's staff were informed that he could be admitted there on 22nd July as a place had become available.
- 2.24 The Western Board were granted a Place of Safety Order on 22nd July and SPT 81 was transported to St Patrick's by his own social worker. When he was admitted to Aisling no written information about SPT 81 was provided for the training school staff. However, it was arranged that an initial case review would be held four days later on 26th July.
- 2.25 Following SPT 81's admission a woman member of the Aisling House staff was appointed as his key worker and she helped to settle him into the unit. He was reported as being "quite cocky and attempted to have the last word". At bedtime SPT 81 was found sticking a compass spike into his door lock and the senior residential social worker removed it from him and warned him about his behaviour.
- 2.26 SPT 81's behaviour caused problems the following evening as well. The night supervisor recorded that both SPT 81 and another boy were very badly behaved and that he had to contact the Senior Residential Social Worker at 11.20 pm. SPT 81 had demanded that his bedroom light be left on and called the night supervisor "a variety of choice names" including "queer" and others that were "more spicy". As a result the Senior Residential Social Worker removed him to Slemish House which is St Patrick's close supervision unit. It provides secure accommodation for "care" boys on the campus.
- 2.27 SPT 81 was returned to Aisling at about 8.45pm on the evening of 24th July, but the night supervisor again recorded that SPT 81 and the other boy were "very cheeky and high". After lights out they continued to disturb the other boys, one of whom complained about their behaviour and asked the supervisor to keep them quiet. However, he noted that this was "an impossible feat" for him.
- 2.28 After that the number of references to SPT 81 in the night book decline rapidly. On 27th July it was noted that SPT 81 and SPT 81 in bed by 9.10pm after attempting to abscond at 9pm" (there is no further information about this attempted absconding in any of the other records) and on 31st SPT 81 had his radio on at 7.45am. A little cheeky when asked to turn it off".
- 2.29 The case file also suggests that SPT 81 was beginning to settle quite rapidly after his first week at Aisling. There are fewer comments about bad behaviour and more about him playing with his toys (apparently a rare activity for boys in St Patrick's), his interest in helicopters, being "competitive in a positive way" and responding co-operatively to a request

that would, according to a residential social worker from Harberton House who was visiting at the time, have created a serious adverse reaction if it had occurred during his stay there. However, he was placed in one of Aisling House's "quiet rooms", which are actually locked secure rooms, for 8 minutes on 3rd August after he threatened to hit another boy with a pool cue and had been verbally abusive to staff and boys.

- 2.30 Reverting to the earlier stages of SPT 81's stay in Aisling, the initial case review was held at St. Patrick's on 26th July. It was chaired by the Intake Senior Social Worker and attended by SPT 81's key worker, three staff from the Western Board and Mrs [REDACTED]. It was the first occasion that any significant amount of information was shared about SPT 81's history and the reasons for his referral to St. Patrick's or the expectations of what the placement was intended to achieve were discussed. It appears that the Western Board staff were talking in terms of "time out" for SPT 81 but that they did not give a clear indication of what they expected St. Patrick's to be able to do to help him that would not have been possible in Harberton House. The Inspectors' discussions later with the Western Board staff indicated that the phrase "time out" only meant that it was envisaged that he would return to Harberton House at a later date.
- 2.31 The chairman of the meeting tried to clarify the expectations of the placement. SPT 81's social worker requested that he should be referred to the Adolescent Psychology and Research Unit (APRU) for a full psychological assessment. It was indicated that such an assessment could not be completed within the time available in a Place of Safety Order and that it would be necessary to seek an Interim Order for SPT 81's detention, possibly followed by another one, making it likely that he would spend up to fifteen weeks in the training school. The Basic Information Form, which was completed after the meeting, indicates that in addition to the psychological assessment the placement was expected to provide:-

"Time out; behaviour modification, target areas - looking at taking responsibility and consequences of his actions".

- 2.32 Following the meeting the Western Board staff returned an Initial Information Form to St. Patrick's. It indicates the reasons for the admission to training school were:-

"Bullying and aggressive behaviour towards residents in Harberton.

"Involvement in sexual assault of a female resident in the unit."

It also mentioned that SPT 81 had caused superficial injuries to himself in the past and threatened to have a plan which would mean that no one would have to bother with him anymore.

- 2.33 As a result of the decisions made at the initial case review an application was made to Londonderry Juvenile Court for an Interim Order of Detention. It was due to be heard on 16th August 1994. The key worker also passed on the referral for assessment to APRU.
- 2.34 The psychologist subsequently saw SPT 81 twice, on 4th and 9th August. She envisaged seeing him once a week during his placement. Ideally she would have liked to have seen him twice a week which would have speeded up the whole process but her workload precluded this. The first session was largely devoted to building up a relationship with SPT 81 but she also began exploring some of the issues. They included his superficial self injuries and his threats to kill himself. SPT 81 told her that he threatened to harm himself as a way of "winding up" the staff at Harberton and annoying them. The psychologist did not consider these threats to be serious. She also talked to him about his bullying which he saw in a similar light of annoying people.
- 2.35 During the second session the psychologist administered a Family Relations Test to which SPT 81 was very resistant and tried hard to deny his negative feelings towards almost all the members of his family. Subsequently she discussed SPT 81 with his key worker at Harberton House. She told the Inspector that this conversation led her to feel that the social workers had been concentrating too much on SPT 81's bullying and anger which were the symptoms of his problems rather than tackling the underlying causes of them which probably lay in SPT 81's experiences in his family.
- 2.36 During the second week of August SPT 81 was reported to be quiet and settled. One member of staff described him to the Inspectors as being "totally controllable - almost polite" during this period and questioned why he needed to be placed in a training school. SPT 81's key worker was on duty almost continuously from Thursday 11th August until the afternoon of Sunday 14th. She reported on his case file in detail over this period and almost without exception the comments were positive.
- 2.37 On Sunday 14th August - the day that SPT 81 absconded with four other boys - Aisling House was due to be staffed by SPT 81's keyworker during the morning and early afternoon and another Aisling House residential social worker during the afternoon and evening. In addition a residential social worker from Saul House (one of the long term care units) was expected to be on duty in Aisling all day. In practice events did not work out quite like that. The Saul House RSW had been on duty in his own house from 9am to 9pm on Saturday 13th August in sole charge of four or five boys. At 9pm he had gone off duty leaving the night supervisor in charge.
- 2.38 On the following day Saul should have been staffed by two people but one of them had reported sick and the other one had gone to Galway to retrieve

an absconder and did not return to Belfast until after midnight. The RSW told the Inspectors that he had told one of the school's senior management team on Saturday morning and again after Mass on Saturday evening that there did not appear to be anyone available to cover Saul House on the Sunday. As far as he was aware no plans were made to cover this. Consequently when he awoke on the Sunday morning he telephoned the night supervisor in Saul and found that no one had reported for duty. He came to St. Patrick's and telephoned SPT 81's keyworker who was on duty in Aisling and advised her of the problem. She told him that all the boys were still asleep and that she could manage without his help. As a result he decided to let the night supervisor go home and phoned the staff member who had gone to Galway. He agreed to shower and come in to work. The RSW decided that he would cover Saul until he was relieved.

- 2.39 When the RSW was relieved by his colleague he went to Aisling. By that time it had been reported that the weekend leave arrangements of two Aisling boys had broken down and their parents had requested that they be returned to the school. As a result SPT 81's key worker left to collect them accompanied by another RSW who worked in Chalet 1. This arrangement left Aisling, Saul and Chalet 1 with only one member of staff on duty in each.
- 2.40 The RSW was left in Aisling supervising four boys (SPT 81, [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]). SPT 81 and [REDACTED] were playing with a football, [REDACTED] was playing with a frisbee on the other side of the building and the RSW was talking to [REDACTED].
- 2.41 SPT 81's key worker and the RSW from Chalet 1 returned with the first boy ([REDACTED]) at about 12.45pm and he went into the house. They then left again to collect the other ([REDACTED]), returning at about 2.50pm after which the key worker went off duty having been relieved by another residential social worker who had come on duty at 2.30. For the first time that day there were two members of staff in Aisling House. They both felt that the group was becoming increasingly unsettled and decided to take them out in the minibus. At that stage four of the boys (SPT 81, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED]) were outside playing football and [REDACTED] was still playing with his frisbee. The Saul House RSW arranged to get the keys for the minibus from the brothers' house. He suggested that the four boys who were playing football should accompany him but they did not want to. He then left his colleague with the six boys. This RSW entered the house apparently wanting to check on the whereabouts of the boy [REDACTED], although in fact he was still outside playing with his frisbee where he had been for some time. While they were thus unsupervised the five boys absconded. This was at 3.30pm.
- 2.42 When the Saul RSW returned his colleague told him that "all" the boys had gone although one of them, [REDACTED], turned out still to be there. When asked, he said that he did not know where the others had gone. The two RSWs

then searched the school grounds and, having found no sign of them, one of them took the minibus intending to tour the area to see if they could be found. He returned at about 4.30pm whereupon their absence was reported to the police, the boys parents and the children's homes from whence they had come. One of the RSWs also phoned acquaintances in the community to ask them look out for the boys.

- 2.43 According to the statements that the four surviving boys subsequently made to the staff of the school the absconding was, to at least some extent, planned in advance in that SPT 81 had hidden a bag of clothes and food in the bushes alongside Hookers Lane, which leads from Aisling to the Mona by-pass and is a route favoured by boys leaving the school illicitly, between the times that [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were returned to the school. After the boys left they made their way right across the city to the Antrim Road area. During the evening they passed some time in Dunville Park and the Waterworks before returning to the Falls Road area in the early hours of the following morning.
- 2.44 In the early hours of the morning the boys broke into one car but were unable to drive it because of a chain attached to the steering wheel. At about 3.30am they did succeed in "bump-starting" another car. On the first attempt two boys ([REDACTED] & [REDACTED]) got into the car but it stalled and had to be push started again. On this occasion a third boy ([REDACTED]) also got in, leaving SPT 81 and [REDACTED] in the road. According to [REDACTED], SPT 81 lay in the road crying because he could not get into the car. The Police confirmed that a lady in the street had heard a boy crying at this time.
- 2.45 The three boys in the car drove around a block and were seen from an army observation post in Divis Street. Initially the soldiers did not pay much attention to it because it was only being driven slowly. However, their attention was drawn by the rear lights which were flashing on and off. They radioed their suspicions that it might have been stolen to Grosvenor Road RUC Station where it was arranged that a patrol would be sent to investigate.
- 2.46 SPT 81 and [REDACTED] moved to the corner of Albert Street and Ross Street where the soldiers view of them was obscured by buildings. However, according to the boys' statements each time the car was driven around the block SPT 81 stood in front of it in an attempt to get the driver to stop but managed to jump aside to avoid being hit. On the first two occasions he jumped out of its path in one direction and the driver swerved the other way avoiding him. On the third occasion SPT 81 is said to have jumped the other way, was hit by the car, run over and killed.
- 2.47 The car stopped a short distance down the road where it was again seen from the army observation post. It was abandoned by the boys who made their way through an alley way into the Falls Road. Their movements were reported to the Police by the Army until they lost sight of them but a

short time later they were picked up by security cameras in the Springfield Road. Within a few minutes the Police arrived and all the boys were arrested.

3. THE REASONS FOR SPT 81'S TRANSFER FROM
HARBERTON HOUSE TO ST.PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

- 3.1 The above history of SPT 81's case indicates that he was a boy with a very troubled history which resulted in him displaying marked behavioural problems to his parents and other carers. He had been rejected by both his parents who had either deserted him or abused him and he had been received into care twice in circumstances that must have caused him great distress.
- 3.2 Reports from Nazareth House, the first children's home in which SPT 81 was placed, his primary school and Harberton House all comment on the difficulties that SPT 81 experienced functioning in groups in which he felt the need to be competitive, aggressive and demanding. In contrast he was reported to relate well within one to one contacts with teachers and children's home staff. In this light the Western Board staff's view that residential care was not a suitable placement for SPT 81 and the decision to seek a foster home for him appears to have been the correct course of action. It is then disappointing to note that although this decision was reached at a case conference held on 12th January 1994 the referral to the fostering unit was not made until the end of April. The delay was explained to the Inspectors by a senior manager as having been caused by the staffs' lack of confidence in the fostering unit's ability to find a placement for SPT 81 since it had not proved possible in the past to find homes for other children who were either younger or displaying less disturbed behaviour. Although the recruitment of foster parents is not a matter specifically within the terms of reference of this review the Inspectors consider that reference should be made to it. If a suitable foster home had been available it is unlikely that a place in a training school would have been sought for SPT 81. **It is recommended that the Western Board should commission a review of its fostering services with a view to achieving an improved level of availability.**
- 3.3 The reports suggest that early in 1994 SPT 81 was making some progress in Harberton House, particularly since the appointment of a new keyworker. There was no mention of a move to training school until after the allegation that SPT 81 had been involved, together with other boys, in a sexual assault on a girl in the home. Within a short time the residential team leader told SPT 81 that admission to training school was an option and other staff were casting doubts, in their reports, on the suitability of the current placement. Possibly as a result of the stress created by the investigation of the allegations and the suggestion that he might be moved to training school SPT 81's behaviour rapidly deteriorated. He scratched his wrist and made threats about his own life. Other residents complained of his bullying.
- 3.4 The earlier decision on the unsuitability of residential care for SPT 81 appears to have become overlooked and the fostering option was not

mentioned in the decisions made at the case review on 27th May. Instead it was agreed that a place would be sought at St.Patrick's. The Western Board's staff who were interviewed by the Inspectors appeared to have limited knowledge of the services offered by the training school or what could be achieved there that was not possible in Harberton House which actually has better staffing ratios. **In this light the Inspectors recommend that St.Patrick's staff should prepare an information leaflet and distribute it to potential users giving details of the services that they can offer, their expertise in providing them and the types of children and young people that they consider can be suitably placed in the school.**

- 3.5 The justification for the decision to move **SPT 81** appears to be based on the threat that he posed to other children in Harberton House. Nevertheless, it is not entirely clear to the Inspectors why a placement in a residential setting in a training school was considered suitable when one in a children's home was not and the more general question of the suitability of the training schools for such pre-teen children remains.
- 3.6 It is a matter of concern that training schools continue to be used by Boards for the placement of young children on care grounds. It was brought to the attention of the General Managers of the Boards at a meeting with the Chief Executive of the Management Executive in June 1992 and there was agreement that such use would diminish other than in exceptional circumstances such as those when secure accommodation could be justified. However, there does not appear to have been much progress. Between January and July 1994 twenty two children under the age of 13 years were admitted to training schools and on 31 July there were 18 in them. Ten of them were in St.Patrick's. In the Western Board there is no policy directive to alert staff to the undesirability of using the training schools for young children although the subject was raised by the Chief Social Work Adviser at a meeting of the Board's Senior Professional Advisory Group shortly after the meeting mentioned above.
- 3.7 The Inspectors understand that child care managers are reluctant to use the training schools for young children without careful consideration but **they recommend that the board should establish explicit policy guidance for their staff on this matter. It is suggested that it should include a procedure that decisions to seek training school places for young children should be taken at a more senior level than other placement decisions.** Furthermore the Inspectors also consider that boards and trusts should establish monitoring arrangements to ensure that the intentions of their policies are being achieved.
- 3.8 When **SPT 81** was transferred to St.Patrick's on 22nd July 1994, it was done under the provisions of a Place of Safety Order. This legal mechanism has grown up in Northern Ireland over the years and is now an established practice. It does, however, ignore questions of how a child can

be removed from one place of safety to another under such an order or the implication that children's homes are not places of safety. In any event these questions will become irrelevant with the implementation of the Children (NI) Order 1995 since no legal processes will be required to move children in care to the facilities currently provided for them in the training school system.

- 3.9 Nevertheless, the Inspectors are concerned about the appropriateness of the use of a Place of Safety Order in SPT 81's case. In recent times there has been a significant increase in demand for training school places by boards. On occasions this has led to the admission units of the schools being full and the young person's name being placed on a waiting list. In SPT 81's case his name was on such a list for almost two months. A Place of Safety Order is intended to be an emergency provision to provide protection for children who need to be moved from situations in which they are considered to be in such danger that they cannot safely remain until a court hearing can be arranged. They are "ex parte" proceedings in which neither the child nor his parents be heard or represented. In the Inspectors' view it would be more appropriate to bring the child before the court as being in need of care, protection or control and ask for an Interim Order for Detention to be granted. This would enable all aspects of the case to be argued. **It is recommended that Place of Safety Orders should not be used to transfer children to training schools except in emergencies when the school is in a position and willing to admit them immediately.**

4. **THE ADEQUACY OF INFORMATION ABOUT SPT 81'S BACKGROUND AND BEHAVIOUR PROVIDED TO THE TRAINING SCHOOL BY THE BOARD.**

- 4.1 As mentioned in paragraph 2.22 SPT 81 was referred to St. Patrick's by the Residential Team Leader on 31st May 1994 by way of telephone call. The conversation was recorded briefly on the Initial Referral Form by the Intake Social Worker. Over the next few weeks staff at Harberton House phoned Aisling on a number of occasions and notes on these calls were added to the form. They suggest that these discussions centred on when a vacancy might be available for SPT 81 although the Western Board staff told the Inspectors that they also used them to keep the training school informed about his behaviour. In line with their normal practice the training school staff did not ask for written reports and none was volunteered by the Western Board. Consequently there could not be any detailed planning of the placement until after SPT 81's admission.
- 4.2 SPT 81 was admitted to St Patrick's on 22nd July and the Inspectors were told that no written information was provided at that time either. However, following the initial case review on 26th July a form was completed and, together with various other reports, it was forwarded to the school. These reports included the form sent to the Child and Adolescent Psychiatry Team, a report prepared for the previous residential care review and some other recent reports from Harberton House. Between them, they provided adequate information for the staff of the Training School to begin their assessment.
- 4.3 The Inspectors are, however, concerned about the lack of use of the period between SPT 81's referral and his admission to Aisling to provide information and plan the placement. The constructive use of this time could have enabled the St Patrick's staff to consider in more detail whether they thought the placement to be appropriate and, if so, the way to make the best use of it. For example, the Boards' request for SPT 81 to be referred to APRU for a psychological assessment was not made until 26th July. It is not clear why this referral was necessary since the Board's own team had concluded that there was no need; one having already been undertaken by an educational psychologist. However, assuming that the referral for psychological assessment was justified, the delay in requesting one until after SPT 81's admission resulted in an immediate decision that it would be necessary to apply for an interim order for detention, with the possibility of a second such order being required. This was justified by the workload of the psychologists which meant that the assessment could not be completed more quickly. If the need for a psychological assessment had been established earlier it might have been possible to arrange for SPT 81 to be admitted at a time when the psychologists would have been able to complete their work in less than 15 weeks.

- 4.4 Similarly, the Board's records contained other information that may have been helpful to the training school in planning its work. For example, it was noted that SPT 81 had a very "distorted" attitude to women, especially those in authority. Such information may, or may not, have influenced the decision to allocate a woman as SPT 81's keyworker at Aisling but it would certainly have been relevant for the staff there to be aware of it.
- 4.5 The Inspectors were told by the Intake Social Worker that, in the past, all admissions were made in emergencies using Place of Safety Orders, therefore there was no opportunity for pre placement planning. **However, it is recommended that when transfers from Board accommodation to training schools are not made in emergencies the time prior to admission should be used to provide the school with adequate information about the child's history and behaviour and to make firm plans about how the placement will be used to achieve identified objectives.**

5. THE ARRANGEMENTS FOR **SPT 81**'S CARE AND SUPERVISION IN ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

Physical Care

- 5.1 When **SPT 81** was transferred to St Patrick's he was placed in Aisling House, the reception and assessment unit. It is a new building which was opened in May 1994 to accommodate 11 boys referred from the care system. It is pleasant with a fairly domestic atmosphere. The facilities include a recreation room, dining room, kitchen and single bedrooms for all the boys. In addition there is a general office for all the staff, plus separate ones for the Team Leader and Intake Social Worker, interviews and meetings.
- 5.2 Aisling is an open unit and although there is a considerable emphasis on locking and unlocking doors it tends to be to prevent the boys gaining access to some rooms rather than to stop them leaving the building. In fact, it has five external doors which would be difficult for staff to supervise if any of the residents did show a tendency to want to leave by them. The Inspectors did have some concern about the two fire exits which are a considerable distance from most of the activities going on in the house. They were assured that they are not currently used for absconding but if it does become a problem **the Inspectors suggest that consideration should be given to fitting the doors with alarms so that staff would be aware whenever they are opened.**
- 5.3 Although this review did not include an examination of all the arrangements for the care of the boys they appeared to be well dressed and cared for. The food provided was ample and nourishing.

The Assessment Process

- 5.4 Aisling House is described by St.Patrick's as its assessment unit for "care" children. All the boys admitted to it are the subjects of Place of Safety Orders or Interim Orders for Detention. Place of Safety Orders last for a maximum of 35 days and, if it is deemed necessary to keep a boy in the unit for longer than this period, the Board or Trust that arranged for him to be admitted under the Place of Safety Order must apply to the court for an Interim Order. Each Interim Order lasts for a maximum of 35 days and up to two consecutive ones can be granted. In this way a boy can be held in Aisling for up to 15 weeks. In order for a boy to remain in the training school for longer than 15 weeks an application must be made to the court for a Training School Order and at this point he will be transferred to a long stay unit.

- 5.5 During 1994 thirty boys were admitted to St Patrick's for assessment. The numbers of boys and their various ages are shown below:

3 boys of 11 years of age at the time of admission
5 boys of 12 years of age at the time of admission
7 boys of 13 years of age at the time of admission
5 boys of 14 years of age at the time of admission
6 boys of 15 years of age at the time of admission
4 boys of 16 years of age at the time of admission.

Eight boys representing over a quarter of admissions were of pre-teen children but if this group of younger boys is extended to include the 13 year olds, who are also legally categorised as children rather than young people, it represents half of all admissions.

- 5.6 When a boy is admitted to Aisling House he is allocated a key worker. In SPT 81's case this was a woman with a Certificate in the Residential Care of Children and Young People and long experience of residential work with children. Unless there are particular reasons otherwise, the choice of keyworker is usually based on providing an equitable distribution of work among the staff.
- 5.7 The keyworker takes a particular interest in the boy during his stay. These responsibilities include basic tasks such as checking that he has adequate clothing and ensuring that he has an adult in whom he can confide. In these aspects SPT 81 was undoubtedly well looked after. The keyworker role also entails taking the lead in the assessment process. The keyworker attempts to get to know the child both as a member of the group and during one to one sessions which are held once a week. In SPT 81's case his keyworker had three such sessions with him during his stay. Brief reports were written on these sessions which show that after the first few days he began to settle in the unit.
- 5.8 Following SPT 81's admission the Aisling House staff encouraged the Western Board staff to continue to maintain an active interest in him and they responded to this. The day after SPT 81's admission to Aisling his key worker there telephoned the Harberton keyworker and SPT 81 also had an opportunity to speak to her. Two days later the keyworker again contacted Harberton House and arranged for the staff there to keep in contact with SPT 81 every few days. Subsequently his Board keyworker telephoned SPT 81 once and wrote to him on another occasion. Contact with Mrs [REDACTED] was also encouraged.
- 5.9 The Aisling House staff and particularly SPT 81's key worker provided a number of other benefits for him during his stay. His threats to injure himself were specifically mentioned to the APRU psychologist who explored them with him and advised that they did not appear to be particularly significant. He was encouraged to behave in a manner

appropriate to his age by playing with the toys that he had brought from Harberton House and apparently this had benefits for some of the other boys who then felt able to play in such a manner. His interest in helicopters was also encouraged through material sent by the Irish Air Corps and visits to the Model Shop in Belfast. There were also other outings to Jungle Jims, to play football, to Derry to collect another boy and to Ballycastle to go fishing, all of which he appears to have enjoyed and increasingly responded well to. The reports suggest that he settled more rapidly than would be expected from the reports about him emanating from Harberton House and he was building positive relationships with the staff.

- 5.10 The move from Londonderry inevitably meant some disruption in SPT 81's education. He had been at a school that showed a large measure of tolerance for his bad behaviour but the placement in training school at least meant that his educational needs would receive attention from the teaching staff on the campus. Similarly the school was able to provide for his spiritual needs and comment is made in the records of the satisfaction that he gained from being able to act as a server at Mass.
- 5.11 The Aisling House staff kept a case file on SPT 81. When it was read by the Inspectors it was orderly and up to date but most of the entries tended to be limited to description of events that occurred and few conclusions were drawn from them. It did not sufficiently demonstrate what the residential social workers were doing, the progress that was being made in the assessment or the achievement of other objectives.
- 5.12 The use of a more structured approach to the assessment such as the Problem Profile Analysis that is in use in another training school might provide the assessment process with a greater focus. At present it is not always possible to determine the basis on which the recommendations have been made to the courts and referring agencies during and at the end of the assessment. **The Inspectors recommend that consideration should be given to providing a more structured approach to the assessment process.**
- 5.13 From the other end the Western Board continued to show a commitment to SPT 81. Three members of its staff attended the initial case review and brought Mrs [REDACTED] with them. Two weeks later one of the residential social workers from the children's home visited SPT 81 in St. Patrick's. There is no evidence to suggest that the Board interest in him would have diminished if the placement had continued as planned or that they would not have fully co-operated in any plans to return him to their care if such a course of action had been recommended.

Control and Discipline

- 5.14 The Inspectors were told that the preferred sanctions for misbehaviour in Aisling House are small deductions of pocket money or the loss of

privileges such as trips out of the school. However, the low staffing levels sometimes mean that when a child has lost such a privilege he has to be taken anyway because there are insufficient people on duty to supervise both the group going out and anyone being made to remain behind.

- 5.15 Aisling House has two rooms, known as "quiet rooms". They are in fact secure accommodation in that they are used to lock up a child so that his liberty is restricted. The furniture is limited to a mattress on the floor and a soft upholstered cube. The records show that between the time that Aisling House was opened and the Inspectors' visit these rooms were used 92 times, on occasions as a response to quite minor misbehaviour. **SPT 81** was only placed in a quiet room once for eight minutes when he threatened to hit another boy with a pool cue and was verbally abusive to members of staff. In the Inspectors' view the use of locked rooms is an unacceptable response to misbehaviour by disturbed children who may be as young as ten years of age. If a child needs to be removed from the group either for his own protection or the protection of others he should be taken to his bedroom by a member of staff who should remain with him.
- 5.16 Reference to paragraph 2.26 shows that **SPT 81** was removed to Slemish House on his second night at St Patrick's. The records show that he had been demanding to have his light left on and that he had used "spicy" language to the night supervisor. This behaviour does not appear to justify the use of secure accommodation. **Consequently it is recommended that the use of such accommodation as a response to misbehaviour should be reviewed.**
- 5.17 Currently there is no legislation in force on the use of secure accommodation in Northern Ireland. However, Article 44 of the new Children (NI) Order 1995, which will be implemented within the next two years states that a child may not be placed in secure accommodation unless it appears that:
- "(i) he has a history of absconding and is likely to abscond from any other description of accommodation; and
- "(ii) if he absconds he is likely to suffer significant harm; or
- "that if he is kept in any other description of accommodation he is likely to injure himself or other persons."
- 5.18 In addition it is anticipated that when the Order is implemented it will be accompanied by Regulations similar to those emanating from the English Children Act 1989 which further restrict the use of secure accommodation. In the Inspectors' view many of the situations in which the quiet rooms and Slemish House are currently being used will not be possible under the new legislation and are not desirable as good practice today.

- 5.19 Nevertheless, in the Inspectors' view the lack of any regulations or guidance on such a sensitive topic as the use of secure accommodation for children is too serious an omission to remain until the implementation of the new legislation. **They recommend that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools as soon as possible and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff.**

Absconding

- 5.20 **SPT 81** had absconded twice while he was in the Western Board's area. On the first occasion he left Nazareth House and was found the following morning at his grandmother's home. On the second he went missing from Harberton House with another boy and they were both found a few hours later by a member of staff. It appears that the two boys were "mitching" school for the morning. In themselves these two incidents were not regarded as being very serious.
- 5.21 At the time that **SPT 81** was admitted to Aisling House, there had been a spate of abscondings which were brought to the attention of the Western Board's staff only at the initial case review, four days later. In the two months prior to 14th August there had been twenty eight abscondings from the unit. Eighteen of them involved the four boys who later absconded with **SPT 81**. One of them had left the school on seven separate occasions; a second boy on five occasions and the other two had each left three times without permission. A culture of absconding appears to have been established with incidents involving small groups of boys occurring every five or six days on average. In the whole of St Patrick's there were 353 abscondings from the school in the first six months of 1994.
- 5.22 In the Inspectors' view it should have been a matter of concern that a new boy to the unit, especially one as young as **SPT 81**, would be at real risk of being influenced by others to become involved in their absconding activities. The staff who had worked with him, however, felt that he was unlikely to abscond and told the Inspectors that they were surprised when they were told that he had become involved in the incident on 14th August.
- 5.23 With the benefit of hindsight this proved to be an incorrect assessment and it is now clear that **SPT 81** was subject to the influence of a group of persistent absconders to the point where he collected and hid the food and clothes that they needed. The staff involved were aware that **SPT 81** was easily influenced by others and in the Inspectors' view more cognisance of the dangers of his becoming involved in absconding should have been taken at the time of his admission. **It is recommended that more consideration should be given to the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour if they are placed in a group containing persistent absconders.**

- 5.24 Some of the records in Aisling House examined by the Inspectors suggest that absconding from the school is not always treated as seriously as it might be. For example a number of the reports on case files do not suggest that the dangers of an eleven or twelve year old boy being missing for several days are fully recognised. Some of them are written in style which suggests that they may not be treated with the seriousness they deserve. Furthermore there is little indication that the reasons for the absconding are followed up or discussed with the boy following his return. Staff appear to take the view that, since it is an open unit, there is little that they can do to stop absconding if the boys are determined to go whereas experience elsewhere shows that a considerable amount can be done to reduce the risks by identifying them systematically and providing additional direct supervision when necessary.
- 5.25 Absconding is a serious issue and steps need to be taken to address the problem as a matter of urgency if the current levels are to be reduced. There are obvious dangers when children as young as eleven remain out of adult supervision and care overnight or for even longer periods, particularly during a period of civil unrest as is amply demonstrated by SPT 81's tragic death. However, there are also risks that the young people can become involved in delinquent activities. It can instil a sense of failure among staff and seriously damage the reputation of the school.
- 5.26 A review of the literature on absconding suggests that there is likely to be more absconding by young people in short term care units, particularly when they are uncertain about their futures. It is also more likely to occur when there are high occupancy levels. All these factors apply in Aisling House which would suggest that the risk of absconding may be higher there than in other units on the St.Patrick's campus.
- 5.27 The incidence of absconding from the other large training school in Northern Ireland has also been high. As a result of public concern about it a special study was undertaken by APRU in 1991. This study helped the school's management to identify a pattern of absconding in terms of the type of young people most likely to abscond, the times of the day and even the season of the year at which they were most likely to leave, the house units with the highest levels of absconding and the types of supervision which gave the highest and lowest levels of risk. Having identified the risk factors management were able to develop a fifteen point strategy to tackle the problem. It is significant that when the situation was reviewed a year later the levels of absconding in the school had been significantly reduced. The Inspectors were concerned to be told that the lessons learnt in the exercise were not shared with the staff of St.Patrick's. **It is recommended that at least the conclusions and recommendations should be made available and that a similar exercise should be conducted in St.Patrick's.**

- 5.28 Incidents of absconding from Aisling House are recorded in a book and on the child's file. The information, together with similar data from the other house units is collected centrally and is forwarded to the NIO. However, it is not analysed and returned to St Patrick's in a form that would enable the senior staff to determine any remedial action that might be appropriate. One of the outcomes of the study in the other training school was the introduction of a more detailed information system to allow the problem to be monitored. In the Inspectors' view similar information should be readily available to staff in St.Patrick's. It could be done by analysing the information currently forwarded to the Northern Ireland Office so that the management staff can adopt a strategic approach to tackling the problem. **It is recommended that an information system should be developed to enable staff to monitor absconding and enable them to adopt a strategic approach to tackling the problem.**
- 5.29 Where absconding has become established in an institution, as appears to be the case in St.Patrick's, there needs to be a fundamental review of the care arrangements. To some extent this was done in the other training school with beneficial results. A similar exercise should be undertaken at St.Patrick's and the results kept under review. In this way it should be possible to reduce the level of absconding. Failure to take such action would leave the school open to the charge that it had not taken sufficient steps to address what is seen to be a serious problem. **It is recommended that a fundamental review of the care arrangements should be conducted to identify ways of reducing the level of absconding.**
- 5.30 Nevertheless, since the events covered by this review took place some beneficial changes have occurred. For example, in paragraph 2.42 it is mentioned that an hour elapsed between the time it was noticed that the boys were missing and their disappearance was reported to the police. The staff used this time to search the surrounding area. Since then the staff have been instructed to notify the RUC as soon as a boy's absence is noticed. **It is, however, recommended that this change in procedures should be incorporated into a revised manual of guidance for staff.**

Staffing

- 5.31 The Northern Ireland Office funds St.Patrick's to staff the school according to the Castle Priory formula. At the time of SPT 81's placement the calculations were based on an assumption that there was a waking week of 80 hours in all the units but the ratio of staff to bed spaces varied between them. In Slemish the ratio was 1:2; in Aisling, 1:3.5 and in the long stay units, 1:4. In the case of Aisling NIO allowed for 7.5 staff including the Team Leader. In fact only 6 staff were employed within the unit for 11 boys, which compares poorly with Harberton House's 9.5 for 10 children. **It is recommended that St Patrick's management should ensure that Aisling House is at least staffed to the levels allowed for in the funding provided by the Northern Ireland Office**

- 5.32 The 80 hour working week assumes that house units are not staffed during school hours. This is probably a reasonable assumption in long stay units particularly if the boys remain in school for their lunches. However, in an assessment unit there is a considerable amount of work to be done in addition to the direct care of the boys as a group. The process requires one-to-one work, report writing, attendance at intake and case reviews and liaison with the staff of Boards and Trusts. In the past the school has argued that the waking week is in excess of 100 hours per week. There is some validity in this argument although, in the Inspectors' view, it is probably not necessary to have three people on duty during the time that the boys are school. It would, however, be justified during the school holidays. If the argument for a 100 hour waking week is accepted it would bring Aisling's staffing needs to over 11 people, almost double the current six. **It is recommended that the funding made available by the Northern Ireland Office for staffing Aisling House should be reviewed.** This would, however, need to be tied to an increased staffing level generally.
- 5.33 It appears, then, that Aisling is significantly understaffed both in terms of the needs currently accepted by the NIO and considerably more in terms of the waking week that the school argues is justified. Possibly partly because of this level of understaffing there are some aspects of the cover provided in Aisling which cause the Inspectors some concern. The staff of the unit are divided into two teams of three, one of which includes the Team Leader. This arrangement means that he is only regularly on duty with half his team which must create difficulties for his supervision of the other half. Reports in other parts of the United Kingdom have also highlighted the dangers of small closed groups of staff working together. **The Inspectors recommend that the Team Leader be removed from the duty rota to enable him to devote his time to the management of his staff.**
- 5.34 The present staffing complement of six barely allows for the normal number of hours in a week to be covered without taking into account additional demands created by sickness and leave commitments. Possibly because of this a considerable number of "additional hours" are worked. These are hours in addition to the normal 37 hour week that staff work. Reference to paragraphs 2.37 to 2.39 shows that one of the members of staff on duty the day that **SPT 81** and the other four boys absconded was actually based in Saul but worked additional hours in Aisling. He told the Inspectors that in the past he has worked as many as 100 hours per month in addition to his normal hours. In the Inspectors' view the practice of moving staff between units in this way significantly undermines the benefits of accommodating children in small house units rather than in a large school setting. **It is recommended that each house should be staffed to provide adequate cover without having to rely on the assistance of others.**

- 5.35 The events of that weekend also raise a number of other staffing issues that the Inspectors think need attention. The member of staff mentioned above was planning to work four shifts in a weekend. Reference to the staffing cover for that week shows that **SPT 81**'s key worker was on duty for the following hours in the days before the absconding:-

Thursday 11th August	2pm - 11pm (9 hours)
Friday 12th August	8am - 10pm (14 hours)
Saturday 13th August	8am - 10pm (14 hours)
Sunday 14th August	8am - 3pm (7 hours)

The Inspectors were also told that the normal duty rota entails staff working on two weekends during a four week cycle. It is intended that they should work one shift on the Saturday followed by another on the Sunday. However, it has apparently become common practice for members of staff to arrange between themselves for one of them to cover the whole of Saturday and the other to cover the whole of Sunday. Staff cannot remain fresh and capable of responding adequately to the demands of difficult and disturbed young people if they are working such long hours. These arrangements may suit the staff in giving them either additional payments or days when they do not need to come to work but they are not in the interests of the boys. **It is recommended that double shifts and other long periods of duty should cease.**

- 5.36 Given the inadequacy of the present staffing levels the Inspectors were surprised to note that almost every day at least one person is on what is termed "mid duty", that is they work from about 10.30am to 2.15pm; times when the children should be in school. They were told that these hours are worked in order to make up the 37 hour week. **It is recommended that the staff hours used in "mid duty" shifts should be used to provide better staff coverage at weekends.**
- 5.37 On the morning of 14th August at least three of the house units in St. Patrick's had only one member of staff on duty in each. Such a level of staffing is not adequate to ensure safety in simply supervising the children and certainly does not allow for any individual work to be undertaken with them. **The Inspectors recommend that at least two people should be on duty in each house at all times when children are present irrespective of the number of them.** It would be preferable if staffing were so arranged that there were three staff present at times when children are in the unit.
- 5.38 There are also two matters relating to management that require attention. The first is that the problems over finding adequate cover for Saul on Sunday 14th August appear to have been left to the residential social worker on duty to resolve in spite of the fact that he maintains that he informed a member of the senior management team of the difficulty. Ensuring that there is adequate staff cover is, of course, a primary

responsibility of management and should not be left to RSW staff to resolve. **It is recommended that management should take responsibility for ensuring that house units are adequately staffed**

- 5.39 The second is that there does not appear to be an adequate system of providing senior staff cover in the event of difficulties. The Inspectors were told that if staff on duty need to contact a member of the senior management team they are expected to dial an extension number and then wait until someone gets back to them. They were also told that there is sometimes a delay of up to 20 minutes before anyone responds and, on occasions there has been no response at all and additional time has been spent in seeking assistance from the brothers' house. This arrangement is unacceptable. **It is recommended that a member of the Senior Management Team should always be available on the campus and that staff should have a means of gaining direct and immediate access to him.**

6. LESSONS TO BE LEARNT FROM THE CASE PARTICULARLY IN AREAS SUCH AS THE TRANSFER OF CHILDREN TO TRAINING SCHOOLS, SUPERVISION OF YOUNG PEOPLE WITH CHALLENGING BEHAVIOURS AND ABSCONDING.
- 6.1 The circumstances of SPT 81's reception into the care of the Western Health and Social Services Board, his behaviour in Nazareth Lodge and Harberton House, the reasons and the arrangements for his transfer to St.Patrick's and the care and supervision that he received there have been described and commented on in the preceding sections. The recommendations that the Inspectors have made constitute the lessons that they think should be learnt from these tragic events. However, some of the broader and more important factors are summarised here.
- 6.2 Although this review has concentrated on the circumstances surrounding SPT 81's move from Harberton House to training school and the care that was provided for him there, the Inspectors think that it should be noted that if a suitable foster home had been available for him it is unlikely that any of these events would have occurred. It is in this light that they recommended that a review of the fostering service in the Board's area should be conducted.
- 6.3 In section 3 the reasons for SPT 81's transfer from Harberton House to St.Patrick's were discussed. Although it is agreed that residential care was not a suitable placement for SPT 81 he was making some progress in Harberton House in the early part of 1994 when the allegations about his involvement in a sexual assault on a girl came to light. Almost immediately the question of a transfer to training school was raised with him which he may well have perceived as yet another rejection in his life. Given the stress of the Police investigation on top of all the other problems he had been experiencing in his short life, it is not surprising that his behaviour deteriorated further. This gave further cause for consideration being given to moving him. Although the Inspectors recognise the importance of protecting other children it is possible that further consideration may have shown that the work the Western Board's staff envisaged being done during a comparatively short placement in the training school before returning SPT 81 to Harberton House could have been accomplished without the additional trauma of moving him.
- 6.4 Given the general agreement that residential care was not the most appropriate form of care for SPT 81 the reasons for his move remain rather unclear. The records show that it was referred to as a period of "time out", apparently meaning that the move was only intended to be temporary. However, the Board staff had little knowledge of the services that St Patrick's could offer or whether they could realistically be expected to significantly alter SPT 81's behaviour in a short period to justify it. There would have been a number of factors to suggest that moving him would be likely to have at least some negative effects. They include the

established evidence that any move, in itself, can be expected to have an adverse effect on a child in the care system. There would also inevitably be some dangers in moving a boy from his own home area to West Belfast particularly at a time when civil unrest was still continuing. Furthermore, while in training school he would almost certainly come under the influence of older children. All these factors, together with Aisling House's lower staffing ratios than those in Harberton House make it difficult to come to the conclusion that St Patrick's could be expected to achieve enough to more than balance the likely negative effects of the move.

- 6.5 Aisling House is described as an assessment unit and the records also show that the staff in Harberton House were asking for various aspects of SPT 81's life and his behaviour to be assessed during his stay there. However, Harberton House is also an assessment unit so it is again difficult to see what a period of assessment in the training school could achieve that could not have been achieved in the children's home. The Western Board staff did request that SPT 81 be referred to APRU for a psychological assessment (the effect of this request immediately extended the likely period of his stay to beyond the initial five weeks) but the Board's records show that he had already been referred to its own Child and Family Psychiatric team who had concluded that a further psychological assessment was unnecessary.
- 6.6 Also in Section 3 reference is made to the more general problem of the placement of pre-teen children in training schools. It refers to the agreement between the Chief Executive and the General Managers in 1992 that such use of the schools would diminish other than where secure accommodation could be justified. However, in the subsequent two years there did not appear to have been much progress. The Inspectors recommended that the Western Board should issue policy guidance to its staff on this matter including a procedure for decisions on such placements to be taken at a senior level.
- 6.7 The adequacy of the information on SPT 81's background and behaviour provided by the Board to St Patrick's are covered in Section 4 of this report. Eventually a reasonable level of information was provided but the Inspectors were concerned that during almost two months between the time he was referred and when he was admitted there was no contact between the two agencies other than telephone calls. It appears that a good opportunity to share information, make plans for the placement and discuss whether it would be the best means to achieve the desired results was therefore lost.
- 6.8 In section 5 the Inspectors have made a number of comments on the arrangements in St. Patrick's for SPT 81's care and supervision and recommendations for changes for the future. One of them concerns the inadequacy of the staffing levels. It is difficult to justify moving a difficult and disturbed boy from a children's home to a unit in a training school if

that training school unit has significantly fewer staff than the children's home. In the Inspectors' view the staffing levels currently allocated by St Patrick's management do not adequately take into account the special demands of work in an assessment unit. It was noted that the school does not even employ in Aisling House the full number of staff for whom it receives funding. Furthermore the duty rota does not make the best use of the people available and, in some respects, appears to be designed for the convenience of the staff involved rather than for the best supervisory arrangements for the children. A further concern was the apparent inadequacy of the arrangements for senior staff cover to resolve problems and difficulties. Given the additional duties associated with a short term reception and assessment unit the Inspectorate believes that there is a need for a review of the existing staffing provision in this unit. It is also necessary to review the way in which staff are deployed to ensure that it is in the best interests of the residents.

- 6.9 The assessment process in Aisling House currently appears to lack a firm focus. The Inspectors have suggested that consideration should be given to adopting a more structured approach.
- 6.10 There is considerable reliance on the use of the quiet rooms and Slemish House, both of which are forms of secure accommodation, as responses to poor behaviour. This may be because the current staffing levels are not adequate but it is not considered to be most appropriate way for a care unit to attempt to modify behaviour. Furthermore this method will probably not be legal following the implementation of the Children (NI) Order 1995.
- 6.11 Most importantly, however, is the response to absconding in the school. The records show that absconding levels are very high and it is an problem which staff find difficult to control. Whilst the Inspectors were told that both management and staff treat it seriously it is felt that a more strategic approach is needed if it is to be tackled effectively. While it is not expected that absconding will be completely eliminated the current levels are too high and they should not be treated as inevitable. Given that a considerable amount of work has been done to try to reduce absconding in another training school in Northern Ireland the lessons learnt there should be passed on to St.Patrick's. The Inspectors have made a number of suggestions which should enable the school to monitor absconding more closely and develop a strategy to reduce it.

RECOMMENDATIONS

1. It is recommended that the Western Board should commission a review of its fostering services with a view to achieving an improved level of availability. (Paragraph 3.2)
2. It is recommended that St.Patrick's Training School should prepare an information leaflet for referring agencies outlining the services that they can offer. (Paragraph 3.4)
3. It is recommended that the Western Board should prepare guidance for its staff on the admission of young children to training schools. (Paragraph 3.7)
4. It is recommended that Place of Safety Orders should not be used to transfer children to training schools other than in emergencies when the school is in a position and willing to admit them immediately. (Paragraph 3.9)
5. It is recommended that when children are transferred from Board accommodation to training schools the time prior to admission should be used to provide the school with information about the child's history and behaviour and to make firm plans about how the placement will be used to achieve identified objectives. (Paragraph 4.5)
6. If it is found that boys are absconding from Aisling House through doors that are difficult for staff to supervise consideration should be given to fitting them with alarms. (Paragraph 5.2)
7. It is recommended that consideration should be given to providing a more structured approach to the assessment process. (Paragraph 5.12)
8. The use of secure accommodation as a response to misbehaviour should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.16)
9. It is recommended that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools on the use of secure accommodation and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff. (Paragraph 5.19)
10. It is recommended that care should be taken to consider the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour by their placement in group containing persistent absconders. (Paragraph 5.23)
11. It is recommended that the conclusions and recommendations made in the study of absconding in another training school should be made available to St.Patrick's and that a similar exercise should be conducted there. Paragraph 5.27)

12. It is recommended that an information system should be developed to enable staff to monitor absconding and develop a strategic approach to tackling the problem. (Paragraph 5.28)
13. A fundamental review of the care arrangements should be conducted to identify ways of reducing the level of absconding. (Paragraph 5.29)
14. It is recommended that the recent change in the procedures whereby the Police are informed that boys are missing immediately their absence is noted should be incorporated into a revised manual of guidance for staff. (Paragraph 5.30)
15. St.Patrick's management should ensure that Aisling House is staffed to the levels allowed for in the funding provided by the Northern Ireland Office. (Paragraph 5.31)
16. It is recommended that the funding made available by the Northern Ireland Office to staff Aisling House should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.32)
17. The Team Leader should be removed from the duty rota to enable him to concentrate on the management of his staff. (Paragraph 5.33)
18. Each house should be staffed to provide adequate cover without having to draw staff from other units. (Paragraph 5.34)
19. Double shifts and other long periods of duty should cease. (Paragraph 5.35)
20. The staff hours used in "mid duty" shifts should be used to provide better coverage at weekends. (Paragraph 5.36)
21. It is recommended that at least two people should be on duty in each unit at all times when children are present. (Paragraph 5.36)
22. Management should take responsibility for ensuring that house units have adequate staff cover at all times. (Paragraph 5.37)
23. A member of the senior management team should be available on the campus at all times and staff should have a means of gaining direct access to him. (Paragraph 5.38)

- 5.19 Nevertheless, in the Inspectors' view the lack of any regulations or guidance on such a sensitive topic as the use of secure accommodation for children is too serious an omission to remain until the implementation of the new legislation. **They recommend that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools as soon as possible and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff.**

Absconding

- 5.20 **SPT 81** had absconded twice while he was in the Western Board's area. On the first occasion he left Nazareth House and was found the following morning at his grandmother's home. On the second he went missing from Harberton House with another boy and they were both found a few hours later by a member of staff. It appears that the two boys were "mitching" school for the morning. In themselves these two incidents were not regarded as being very serious.
- 5.21 At the time that **SPT 81** was admitted to Aisling House, there had been a spate of abscondings which were brought to the attention of the Western Board's staff only at the initial case review, four days later. In the two months prior to 14th August there had been twenty eight abscondings from the unit. Eighteen of them involved the four boys who later absconded with **SPT 81**. One of them had left the school on seven separate occasions; a second boy on five occasions and the other two had each left three times without permission. A culture of absconding appears to have been established with incidents involving small groups of boys occurring every five or six days on average. In the whole of St Patrick's there were 353 abscondings from the school in the first six months of 1994.
- 5.22 In the Inspectors' view it should have been a matter of concern that a new boy to the unit, especially one as young as **SPT 81**, would be at real risk of being influenced by others to become involved in their absconding activities. The staff who had worked with him, however, felt that he was unlikely to abscond and told the Inspectors that they were surprised when they were told that he had become involved in the incident on 14th August.
- 5.23 With the benefit of hindsight this proved to be an incorrect assessment and it is now clear that **SPT 81** was subject to the influence of a group of persistent absconders to the point where he collected and hid the food and clothes that they needed. The staff involved were aware that **SPT 81** was easily influenced by others and in the Inspectors' view more cognisance of the dangers of his becoming involved in absconding should have been taken at the time of his admission. **It is recommended that more consideration should be given to the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour if they are placed in a group containing persistent absconders.**

- 5.24 Some of the records in Aisling House examined by the Inspectors suggest that absconding from the school is not always treated as seriously as it might be. For example a number of the reports on case files do not suggest that the dangers of an eleven or twelve year old boy being missing for several days are fully recognised. Some of them are written in style which suggests that they may not be treated with the seriousness they deserve. Furthermore there is little indication that the reasons for the absconding are followed up or discussed with the boy following his return. Staff appear to take the view that, since it is an open unit, there is little that they can do to stop absconding if the boys are determined to go whereas experience elsewhere shows that a considerable amount can be done to reduce the risks by identifying them systematically and providing additional direct supervision when necessary.
- 5.25 Absconding is a serious issue and steps need to be taken to address the problem as a matter of urgency if the current levels are to be reduced. There are obvious dangers when children as young as eleven remain out of adult supervision and care overnight or for even longer periods, particularly during a period of civil unrest as is amply demonstrated by **SPT 81**'s tragic death. However, there are also risks that the young people can become involved in delinquent activities. It can instil a sense of failure among staff and seriously damage the reputation of the school.
- 5.26 A review of the literature on absconding suggests that there is likely to be more absconding by young people in short term care units, particularly when they are uncertain about their futures. It is also more likely to occur when there are high occupancy levels. All these factors apply in Aisling House which would suggest that the risk of absconding may be higher there than in other units on the St.Patrick's campus.
- 5.27 The incidence of absconding from the other large training school in Northern Ireland has also been high. As a result of public concern about it a special study was undertaken by APRU in 1991. This study helped the school's management to identify a pattern of absconding in terms of the type of young people most likely to abscond, the times of the day and even the season of the year at which they were most likely to leave, the house units with the highest levels of absconding and the types of supervision which gave the highest and lowest levels of risk. Having identified the risk factors management were able to develop a fifteen point strategy to tackle the problem. It is significant that when the situation was reviewed a year later the levels of absconding in the school had been significantly reduced. The Inspectors were concerned to be told that the lessons learnt in the exercise were not shared with the staff of St.Patrick's. **It is recommended that at least the conclusions and recommendations should be made available and that a similar exercise should be conducted in St.Patrick's.**

RECOMMENDATIONS

1. It is recommended that the Western Board should commission a review of its fostering services with a view to achieving an improved level of availability. (Paragraph 3.2)
2. It is recommended that St.Patrick's Training School should prepare an information leaflet for referring agencies outlining the services that they can offer. (Paragraph 3.4)
3. It is recommended that the Western Board should prepare guidance for its staff on the admission of young children to training schools. (Paragraph 3.7)
4. It is recommended that Place of Safety Orders should not be used to transfer children to training schools other than in emergencies when the school is in a position and willing to admit them immediately. (Paragraph 3.9)
5. It is recommended that when children are transferred from Board accommodation to training schools the time prior to admission should be used to provide the school with information about the child's history and behaviour and to make firm plans about how the placement will be used to achieve identified objectives. (Paragraph 4.5)
6. If it is found that boys are absconding from Aisling House through doors that are difficult for staff to supervise consideration should be given to fitting them with alarms. (Paragraph 5.2)
7. It is recommended that consideration should be given to providing a more structured approach to the assessment process. (Paragraph 5.12)
8. The use of secure accommodation as a response to misbehaviour should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.16)
9. It is recommended that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools on the use of secure accommodation and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff. (Paragraph 5.19)
10. It is recommended that care should be taken to consider the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour by their placement in group containing persistent absconders. (Paragraph 5.23)
11. It is recommended that the conclusions and recommendations made in the study of absconding in another training school should be made available to St.Patrick's and that a similar exercise should be conducted there. Paragraph 5.27)

12. It is recommended that an information system should be developed to enable staff to monitor absconding and develop a strategic approach to tackling the problem. (Paragraph 5.28)
13. A fundamental review of the care arrangements should be conducted to identify ways of reducing the level of absconding. (Paragraph 5.29)
14. It is recommended that the recent change in the procedures whereby the Police are informed that boys are missing immediately their absence is noted should be incorporated into a revised manual of guidance for staff. (Paragraph 5.30)
15. St.Patrick's management should ensure that Aisling House is staffed to the levels allowed for in the funding provided by the Northern Ireland Office. (Paragraph 5.31)
16. It is recommended that the funding made available by the Northern Ireland Office to staff Aisling House should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.32)
17. The Team Leader should be removed from the duty rota to enable him to concentrate on the management of his staff. (Paragraph 5.33)
18. Each house should be staffed to provide adequate cover without having to draw staff from other units. (Paragraph 5.34)
19. Double shifts and other long periods of duty should cease. (Paragraph 5.35)
20. The staff hours used in "mid duty" shifts should be used to provide better coverage at weekends. (Paragraph 5.36)
21. It is recommended that at least two people should be on duty in each unit at all times when children are present. (Paragraph 5.36)
22. Management should take responsibility for ensuring that house units have adequate staff cover at all times. (Paragraph 5.37)
23. A member of the senior management team should be available on the campus at all times and staff should have a means of gaining direct access to him. (Paragraph 5.38)

requirements of the Training School Regulations.

21. The Department has, however, noted that a minute dated 3 May 1995 from Mr McElfatrick (Assistant Chief Inspector, SSI) to Dr McCoy (Chief Inspector)³ regarding an SSI report into the death of a child, [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED], during his period of committal to St Patrick's Training School made reference to each school being subject to a major inspection every fourth year. Mr McElfatrick also made reference to "regulatory and unannounced visits" which were evidently a further form of monitoring and inspection of the schools undertaken by SSI. In the absence of additional documentation in relation to these arrangements, the Department is currently attempting to seek further information from former Social Services Inspectors about the agreed frequency, purpose and reporting of such visits, the stage at which these arrangements were introduced and whether they changed over time.
22. With reference to the request of the HIAI to comment on whether inspections of training schools were carried out routinely and/or adequately or at all, based on the limited information to hand, the Department believes that inspections of St Patrick's may have been routinely undertaken during the 1950s and 1960s. By today's standards, these may not have been sufficiently thorough, but were reflective of standards of the day. A more rigorous style of inspection appears to have been introduced during the 1980s, perhaps in tandem with similar developments in children's homes inspections.
23. It would appear, however, that the NIO raised the issue of the adequacy of SSI inspection arrangements in 1995 as part of its consideration of the SSI report into the death of [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED]. Mr McElfatrick's minute (referred to in paragraph 21) suggests that some strain was placed on the SSI/NIO relationship as a consequence of the findings and recommendations of the [REDACTED] SPT 81 [REDACTED] report, in respect of which Mrs Madden (Assistant Secretary, NIO) appeared to have expressed some disappointment. Mr McElfatrick undertook to review the report with the SSI inspector involved and in discussion with the Chief Inspector determine whether anything additional should be incorporated into the report. Mr McElfatrick intimated that there was a need for a review of the role of SSI in NIO work. He acknowledged that the Chief Inspector already had it in mind to raise this with Mr Daniell, an Assistant Under Secretary within NIO. It is presently not known whether a review did take place at this time.

The communication between SWAG/SSI and the NIO in relation to adverse inspection findings and follow up action

24. The Department's understanding is that SWAG/SSI reports were provided in full to the NIO. The 1988 inspection referred to above is an example to hand of the rigour with which NIO pursued inspection findings and ensured, together with SSI, that action to implement recommendations was instituted by the school. The Department has no reason to believe that the same level of communication, scrutiny and co-operation was not characteristic of the relationship between the NIO and SSI in relation to all inspections.

³ SPT 12712

From: H V McElfatrick

Date: 3 May 1995

Dr McCoy

SPT 81

REPORT

I had a rather difficult meeting with Mary Madden this afternoon regarding the **SPT 81** report. The meeting was called ostensibly to discuss my request for financial support to cover administrative backup for the criminal justice inspectors. I have given you information on NIOs proposals for dealing with the administrative support arrangements ie locating the 2 inspectors in Massey House where they would be provided with admin support. They accept that the inspectors would still have to be accountable to me, but clearly feel the need for closer ongoing contact with inspectors so that the have advice on tap as they require it.

On the **SPT 81** report they are disappointed that the report does not give them enough on the deficiencies of management in St Patrick's. It is clear Mrs Madden feels there is much that is wrong in St Patrick's and she has been looking to the **SPT 81** report to use as ammunition to criticise the management committee and the senior managers in the school. I said we would review our notes but I said we could only report on what we found and we had concentrated primarily on the circumstances surrounding **SPT 81**'s death and the care provided for him while there. Using this we had reported as faithfully as possible what we found. Our investigation did not extend to consideration of the adequacy or effectiveness of the management board. We had been critical of management where we perceived their shortcomings as they impinged on the care of **SPT 81** but could not go beyond what we had evidence to support.

Mrs Madden would also like us to have acknowledged in the report any deficiencies in the inspectorial arrangements eg is the frequency of inspections as agreed with NIO adequate to provide CJSD with the intelligence they need to assure them about the quality of care being provided? I acknowledged that our current arrangements were for each school to be subject to a major inspection every fourth year. The regulatory inspections and the unannounced visits were unlikely to pick up the level of information NIO now appeared to be expecting. If this was what was expected it would call for additional resources. There was also the question of whether it would be appropriate for SSI to be use in a constant monitoring role ie visiting the schools every week to check numbers, staff cover etc. This was more properly the responsibility of management who needed to put proper monitoring arrangements in place. SSI could then periodically check whether management was fulfilling its responsibilities.

It was left that I would review our report with Chris Walker and in discussion with you consider whether anything additional should be incorporated in the report.

1 Q. Just to say thank you for the general information that
2 you have given also about the time that you spent
3 working in St. Pat's. I am sure the Panel Members may
4 have some more things that they want to ask you. So if
5 you just stay there, please.

6 Questions from THE PANEL

7 CHAIRMAN: SPT2, can I just ask you -- you may have told us
8 and I may have missed it -- how long did you actually
9 work once you to St. Pat's in whatever
10 capacity you were there.

11 **A. I thought it was 28 years or 29 years.**

12 Q. And the impression I have is that for a great deal of
13 that time you were working Slemish unit
14 that you described?

15 **A. Ten years, ten years in Slemish.**

16 Q. Ten years. Now can I just ask you a little bit more
17 about the general physical shape of the school, its
18 layout and the way the boys were distributed? We know
19 that there was a junior school and a senior school and
20 you have explained that it was your age when you entered
21 St. Pat's that determined where you went.

22 **A. Which side you went to.**

23 Q. I think I'm right in saying that one or two people have
24 said that they were moved up to a section from the
25 junior to the senior, but, as I understand your account

1 dates, but can you remember roughly how long you acted
2 in that role, even if we're not sure about the dates?

3 **A. I couldn't actually tell you how long I was there.**

4 Q.

5

6 **A. Yes.**

7 Q. Now we've received a statement. Initially the plan for
8 the chalet that became Slemish was that it was to be
9 a pre-release -- pre-licensed pre-release unit in
10 St. Pat's, and it did operate in that way for a while or
11 did IT?

12 **A. It was -- the chalet was originally**
13 **a senior side chalet for pre-release.**

14 Q. And formed Slemish
15 House --

16 **A. Yes.**

17 Q. -- from it? Now --

18 **A. To -- into a secure unit.**

19 Q. And we were talking a little bit more about how that
20 came about, and this was

21

22 **A. Yes.**

23 Q. What was your thinking, SPT2? Why did you feel it was
24 important to have that unit there?

25 **A. I saw it was too easy to dump kids out of the school and**

- 2 -

THE ROLE OF SLEMISH HOUSE

The boy admitted to Slemish House will have demonstrated by his attitudes and behaviour that he is in need of a residential placement which will "hold" and "contain" him while some planning for his future is undertaken. "Holding" and "Containing" are used here to mean not just physical containment of a body but, perhaps as important, emotional containment, i.e. making the boy feel safe and secure in the knowledge that adults (staff) are capable of exercising control over aspects of his life which, invariably, the boy will not have been coping with either in the community or in previous placements.

Implicit in the provision of secure accommodation is the view that specialised control is an essential aspect of the care of a child that is important for his development. It is both damaging and frightening for the child who has not acquired self control to feel out of control. On occasions, the use of this unit is needed to exercise control by staff, but external control of the boys should primarily be exercised by staff and not by the building and it is important that if admission to the unit is necessary the boy should be seen as 'locked in' and not 'locked away' for his own benefit.

The removal of a very disruptive boy to the unit from the open units, where he is placing other boys and staff under extreme stress, can provide the stability needed for the open unit to continue effectively.

Those admitted to the unit will be boys from open care units who have

- 2 -

THE ROLE OF SLEMISH HOUSE

The boy admitted to Slemish House will have demonstrated by his attitudes and behaviour that he is in need of a residential placement which will "hold" and "contain" him while some planning for his future is undertaken. "Holding" and "Containing" are used here to mean not just physical containment of a body but, perhaps as important, emotional containment, i.e. making the boy feel safe and secure in the knowledge that adults (staff) are capable of exercising control over aspects of his life which, invariably, the boy will not have been coping with either in the community or in previous placements.

Implicit in the provision of secure accommodation is the view that specialised control is an essential aspect of the care of a child that is important for his development. It is both damaging and frightening for the child who has not acquired self control to feel out of control. On occasions, the use of this unit is needed to exercise control by staff, but external control of the boys should primarily be exercised by staff and not by the building and it is important that if admission to the unit is necessary the boy should be seen as 'locked in' and not 'locked away' for his own benefit.

The removal of a very disruptive boy to the unit from the open units, where he is placing other boys and staff under extreme stress, can provide the stability needed for the open unit to continue effectively.

Those admitted to the unit will be boys from open care units who have

- 2 -

THE ROLE OF SLEMISH HOUSE

The boy admitted to Slemish House will have demonstrated by his attitudes and behaviour that he is in need of a residential placement which will "hold" and "contain" him while some planning for his future is undertaken. "Holding" and "Containing" are used here to mean not just physical containment of a body but, perhaps as important, emotional containment, i.e. making the boy feel safe and secure in the knowledge that adults (staff) are capable of exercising control over aspects of his life which, invariably, the boy will not have been coping with either in the community or in previous placements.

Implicit in the provision of secure accommodation is the view that specialised control is an essential aspect of the care of a child that is important for his development. It is both damaging and frightening for the child who has not acquired self control to feel out of control. On occasions, the use of this unit is needed to exercise control by staff, but external control of the boys should primarily be exercised by staff and not by the building and it is important that if admission to the unit is necessary the boy should be seen as 'locked in' and not 'locked away' for his own benefit.

The removal of a very disruptive boy to the unit from the open units, where he is placing other boys and staff under extreme stress, can provide the stability needed for the open unit to continue effectively.

Those admitted to the unit will be boys from open care units who have

REGD. No.

A

0290

1989

Department of Health and Social Services

(Nothing should be written on this cover except as indicated by the headings and any amendments will be carried out by REGISTRY on written request)

TITLE

CHILD CARE BRANCH -
ST PATRICKS TRAINING SCHOOL

R-2004

Continuation File No. A-2398193

FORMER FILE No.....

N.B.- Transfer from an Officer, Branch or Section of a Branch to another should take place through the Registry either direct or by transit slip (EF 205). Instructions to "bring forward" the file should be initiated by the officer concerned. WHEN NOT IN ACTION, THE FILE SHOULD BE RETURNED TO THE REGISTRY. In all references to this file the number and year should be quoted as above. (ATTENTION IS DRAWN TO CIRCULARS GS81 and GS.87).

REFERRED TO	DATE	REFERRED TO	DATE	REFERRED TO	DATE
CHILD CARE	10/2/89				
MR Mayor	6/1/89				
Mr Wilson	13/11/89				
MR Mayor	16/11/89				
Mr Dannelle	20/1/89				
MR Mayor	27/1/89				
Miss Jelfen	2/3/90				
Miss Mayor	2/3/90				
Miss Mayor	4/2/91				
PA	4.3.92				
General Registry	22/10/93				
CHILD CARE	10.1.1993				
PA Registry	20/3/96				

ILS/213/49

PUBLIC RECORD OFFICE
OF NORTHERN IRELAND

CLOSED
TO
PUBLIC

PUBLIC RECORD OFFICE
OF NORTHERN IRELAND

**CLOSED
TO
PUBLIC**

Public Record Office of Northern Ireland

HSS/13/46/67

55	13	46	67
----	----	----	----

FOR "CLOSURE" ACTION ONLY

RATHGAEL PROJECT - FILE REVIEW

Please review
return to me.

Hugh

19.6.02

TO: The Reviewing Officer

FILE NO: A 290/89

SCHEDULE NO: 00010X

BRANCH: Child care unit

ADDRESS: Rm 508A Dundonald House

This file has been stored in Rathgael since 1st review. This is a final review and it is necessary that only those files, which are absolutely necessary or relevant to current departmental business be retained.

**DESTROY****RETAIN** for a further _____ years. (in multiples of 5)

If you advise retention, please give your reason(s) and state why you think the period is appropriate.

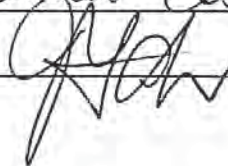
Reviewing Officer:

John Forbes

Branch:

Child Care Unit

Signature:



Date:

19.6.02

Return to:

Registrar
Departmental Records Unit
Room A3.7
Castle Buildings

R.P.3

This File is now due for First Review

To: STAFF OFFICER

File No: A 290/89 Schedule No 16V99

Branch Child Care Unit

Address _____

As file Storage is expensive please consider your decision carefully, taking into account only Departmental needs.

please tick as appropriate

- ☐ Destroy (subject to Public Record Office approval)
- ☐ Retain for a further 5 year(s). (in multiples of 5)

If you advise retention, please give your reason(s) and state why you think the period is appropriate..

This file contains information
which can be useful in the
light of forthcoming developments
in relation to training schools

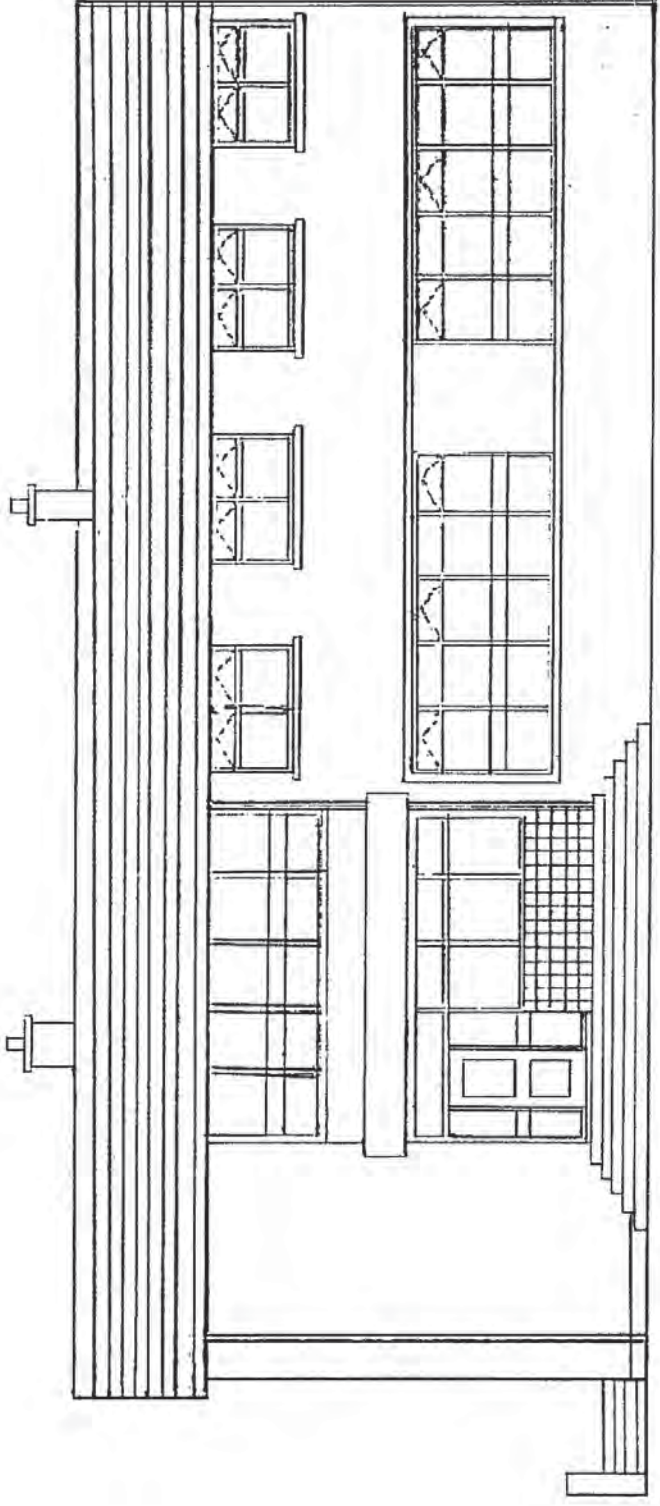
Name of Reviewing Officer J FORDE

Branch Child Care Unit

Signature [Signature] Date 18/1/99

PLEASE RETURN TO REGISTRY, ROOM E2.16, CASTLE
BUILDINGS (for enquiries ring 01232 (5)23133)

Form 3PR (Rev 3/95)



SLEMISH HOUSE - STAFF HANDBOOK AND GUIDELINES (DRAFT)

INDEX

	<u>Page</u>
INTRODUCTION	
MANAGEMENT	1
THE ROLE OF SLEMISH HOUSE	2
Guidelines relating to the use of Slemish House	4
Criteria for admission	5
Procedures for admission	5
Reviews	6
On Admission	7
Referring Units	8
STAFFING	10
Use of Psychiatrists, Psychologists and other Professional Agencies.	11
Basic Staffing	11
QUALITY OF LIFE IN SLEMISH HOUSE	12
SECURITY (PHYSICAL) AND CONTROLS	13
Use of locked single room	14
Other controls	15
Keys	16
Security-Through Supervision	17
STAFF INTERVENTION AND CHILD MANAGEMENT	20
MEETINGS	30
EDUCATION	32
MEDICAL PROVISION	33
RECORD KEEPING	33
VISITS IN AND OUT OF THE UNIT	35
DAILY ROUTINE	37
DAILY TIME-TABLE - GENERAL GUIDE TO STAFF	38
RULES FOR BOYS	43
RIGHTS OF BOYS	45

INTRODUCTION

As a Christian school, the staff of St. Patrick's attempt to establish, maintain and adhere to Christian values and ethics. These values lead us to believe that all persons are children of God and that service to anyone in need is rendered to God himself. Each boy is accepted for who he is and not for what he does or has done. This attitude reflects belief in the basic dignity of the person which leads us to a more caring society and helps us to remain responsive to the special needs of youth by a greater sensitivity of changing times.

Whatever is done in St. Patrick's is intended to help each boy grow in awareness of his own goodness and worth. Ultimately, it is this awareness which makes possible a more fulfilled, more responsible and more constructive life.

While respecting individual differences, St. Patrick's provides the young person with the secure setting needed for growth towards adulthood. This security is found, primarily within a community of caring, supportive and understanding people. Although the degree of personal involvement varies, no staff member - Caring, Teaching, Medical, Ancillary - is unimportant. Meeting needs, actualizing potentials and developing skills are essential elements in the school programme. Dealing with irresponsible behaviour must also be included. Irresponsible behaviour is damaging to the sense of self-worth and the good of others and therefore, must be opposed by all who care. Wisdom, as well as active concern,

is needed to turn occasions of irresponsibility into opportunities for personal growth and understanding.

In living this philosophy, our contribution to a young person's life is to enhance his opinion of himself and heighten his regard for others.

This paper, which is issued on behalf of the Board of Management, sets out guidelines governing the use of Slemish House (Close Supervision Unit). It is intended to be of assistance to those who are involved in the day-to-day running of the unit. It should also make a useful contribution to staff training and development. In addition it is hoped that the paper will provide useful guidance and information for Social Workers, Courts and other agencies and staff who are involved with children and their families when this type of placement has to be considered. It may also be made available, on request, to any children placed, or about to be placed, in the unit or their parents.

- 1 -

MANAGEMENT

The Board of Management has the responsibility to ensure that the arrangements made in this unit fulfil the conditions laid down by the current legislation regarding secure accommodation.

These must comply with:-

- (1) Fire Authority regulations.
- (2) Building regulations relevant to secure accommodation.

The Management will ensure that:

- (a) the unit is properly conducted.
- (b) the unit is available to the relevant imspectorate.
- (c) education is provided as per present legislation.

In addition to these specific conditions, the Management has the responsibility to ensure that a code of practice is implemented. It is unlikely that the Board will become closely involved in the day-to-day problems relating to individual children, this being the task of the staff in the unit who are immediately accountable to the Director of Care and hence to the Director of the School, who in turn will be accountable to the Board of Management.

The Board will ensure that the unit has a clear statement of its aims and objectives and these should embody the highest standards of child care. The Director and staff will ensure that the code is properly applied in the day-to-day work with children.

The Director and Deputy Director will periodically review and evaluate policy and practices within the unit. They will also consider with the staff what resources are required to maintain a high standard of

- 2 -

THE ROLE OF SLEMISH HOUSE

The boy admitted to Slemish House will have demonstrated by his attitudes and behaviour that he is in need of a residential placement which will "hold" and "contain" him while some planning for his future is undertaken. "Holding" and "Containing" are used here to mean not just physical containment of a body but, perhaps as important, emotional containment, i.e. making the boy feel safe and secure in the knowledge that adults (staff) are capable of exercising control over aspects of his life which, invariably, the boy will not have been coping with either in the community or in previous placements.

Implicit in the provision of secure accommodation is the view that specialised control is an essential aspect of the care of a child that is important for his development. It is both damaging and frightening for the child who has not acquired self control to feel out of control. On occasions, the use of this unit is needed to exercise control by staff, but external control of the boys should primarily be exercised by staff and not by the building and it is important that if admission to the unit is necessary the boy should be seen as 'locked in' and not 'locked away' for his own benefit.

The removal of a very disruptive boy to the unit from the open units, where he is placing other boys and staff under extreme stress, can provide the stability needed for the open unit to continue effectively.

Those admitted to the unit will be boys from open care units who have

- 3 -

a history of previous placements and care authority involvement and they will be mistrusting of all adults and resentful of the intrusion of more 'Carers' into their lives. They will obviously expect that this movement is of a punitive nature because of the restriction on their freedom. The aim should be to help the child to realise that the placement is intended to be constructive and the experience, although it may be initially difficult to accept, can be positive.

The unit's aim must therefore be to provide a high standard of child care within which the boy's needs are met. We would see as the primary objectives of the unit a need to show a boy that, if he cannot control himself, others are able to do so, thereby creating a greater feeling of security enabling the formation of positive personal relationships. This should allow the boy to feel safe and secure and give him the opportunity to mature through experiences and relationships which he would have otherwise denied himself. This security should be achieved mainly by the use of staff rather than a simple reliance on the building. Perimeter doors should be locked but there should be ample opportunity, with adequate staffing, for boys who have become more self secure to experience a fair degree of unrestricted movement, the only real security coming from staff/boy relationship. This in turn can create a situation which allows a gradual decrease of external controls as part of the boy's growth process and a staged return to greater freedom and in doing so help the child avoid the need for further containment in secure units over prolonged periods.

- 4 -

Nevertheless, this process will have a 'risk factor' but the length of stay in secure accommodation will invariably be determined by the willingness of all those involved to take risks and test the boy in 'open conditions'.

GUIDELINES RELATING TO THE USE OF SLEMISH HOUSE

It is recognised that some young people, for whom residential accommodation is the preferred form of care, require more intensive social work support or other professional assistance in order to help them through difficult periods. Restricting the liberty of any individual is a serious matter and therefore strict criteria for admission have been drawn up which must be satisfied before placement in this unit.

Before referring a boy to Slemish House two issues need to be considered:

- (1) Is it possible to identify alternatives or other resources which would prevent or ameliorate the boy's difficulties to a point where secure provision is not required?
- (2) What mechanisms or procedures need to be examined to ensure consistent intervention in the open setting which prevents a referral to close supervision?

A number of general principles underlie the use of Slemish House:

- (a) the use of this accommodation is not intended as a punitive measure. Its function is to provide a controlled and safe environment in which the care and treatment of those children who satisfy the admission criteria is undertaken;

- 5 -

- (b) Slemish House is seen as part of the continuum of the totality of residential child care provision;
- (c) while security is important, it does not override the requirements of good child care practice;
- (d) the use of the Close Supervision Unit for children in care is seen as a very exceptional measure and only those children who genuinely need such accommodation are placed and kept there.

CRITERIA FOR ADMISSION:

All referrals to Slemish House will come from within the school (i.e. young people will be worked with in the open setting first) and no boy may be placed or retained there unless:

- (a) he has a history of absconding and is likely to abscond from any other type of accommodation, thereby placing himself at physical, mental or moral risk and
- (b) being kept in any other type of accommodation is likely to cause self-injury or injury to other persons.

PROCEDURES FOR ADMISSION:

All admissions will be made on a planned basis and will be processed through an Admissions Panel. This will consist of:

- 6 -

(1) The Director/Deputy Director/Assistant Director.

(2) Member of Board of Management.

(3) Member of Social Work Inspectorate.

(4) Member of A.P.R.U.

(5) Member of Social Work/Community Care Team.

In attendance: The Head of Slemish House (who will also act as convenor).

The Head of Assessment/Deputy.

The Key Worker/Head of Referring Unit.

Social Worker - where appropriate.

REVIEWS:

To ensure the appropriate use of this facility, each case is reviewed at least once in every five week period by the Admissions Panel.

The Panel has responsibility for ensuring that:

(a) the criteria for keeping the child in Slemish House continues to apply, and

(b) the placement continues to be appropriate for the child.

Emergency Admissions may only be made through the Director or his Deputy and will be reviewed every 24 hours.

- 7 -

ON ADMISSION:

When the panel has decided to admit a boy, specific problems and problematic areas should be identified and a care plan and individual treatment programme should be suggested and approved. Immediate goals within this plan must be implemented prior to the next review. A key worker will be appointed on admission. All staff should be familiar with the background to each boy's case. In the case of an emergency admission, staff will be advised as soon as possible of the boy's case. On each admission a common team-work approach will be agreed on following the care plan suggested by the Admissions Panel. Senior staff should ensure that the admissions procedure has been carried out to the full and the boy who has been admitted understands the reason why he has been admitted and, where possible, his problem identified.

Administrative and procedural matters are not the only aspects of admission of children to secure accommodation. Particular and thoughtful attention should be given as to how children are actually received into secure accommodation. For the children involved, this is likely to be a very stressful and difficult experience. They are likely to experience such emotions as fear, frustration, anger and rejection. Similar feelings may be evident in the case of their parents and family and there may also be anxiety and concern on the part of those professionals who have attempted, apparently unsuccessfully, to help the children in an open setting. The staff of Slemish House should therefore seek ways of mitigating these problems in the arrangements made for reception into secure accommodation. Information booklets should be available to children

- 8 -

and parents which explain briefly and clearly the purpose of secure accommodation and the programme of care which will be provided. Careful thought should be given to the child's first experience and impressions on arrival in the unit and it is imperative that the child feels reasonably at ease within the new setting as quickly as possible. Staff will ensure that he clearly understands his responsibilities.

Referring Units:

Referring unit will supply relevant files, assessment reports and case review reports prior to admission. This should also include medical report or any other problematic areas e.g. family involvement:

who should visit;

who should be discouraged from visiting;

any other relevant information.

As it would be difficult to budget for boys on short term placement, it will be the responsibility of the referring unit to make sure that the boy is properly clothed (including change of clothing) and that he has ample gym, gear.

Contact should be maintained between the Key Worker of referring unit and the Key Worker in Slemish House, at least on a weekly basis, so that he/she is aware of the boy's progress and the possible planned phasing back to the open unit. As a matter of accountability, the outcome of these meetings will be minuted and logged.

- 9 -

Since the boy is likely to be anxious on admission to Slemish House, he should be welcomed by a member of staff already known to him who has been freed from other duties to spend sufficient time with the boy to enable him to settle in. Routines and procedures should be carefully explained to the boy and it may be useful in this process to involve selected boys from the unit. Staff from the referring unit may be required until admission procedure is completed.

- 10 -

STAFFING

"In the Secure Unit the staff are the fulcrum around which everything rotates for the child". (Hoghughi, "Troubled & Troublesome".)

Slemish House should promote a simple message in its methodology - it is as good as the people working in it! The most important resource is the staff and the process is the interaction between staff and boys and the relationships developed thereof.

The number, quality and deployment of staff very largely determines the value of the work in any residential unit and, in conditions of security, this becomes even more important as there is little or no escape from continual contact between staff and boys.

There is a very real danger that staff who have formerly worked in open conditions tend to let the physical security supervise the boys. This in turn creates lack of job satisfaction and high staff turnover. It is essential then to choose high quality staff who are supportive of each other and are fully supported by their seniors to work as a team. Differences of opinion which can occur, such as, for example, between teachers and care staff even in the open setting, become more intense under secure conditions and management skills will be constantly in demand to play down such conflicts and build up the staff team committed to the unit and boys. Adequate meetings will be provided to clear the air and alleviate staff anxieties. It must be noted that in secure conditions boys will be quick to notice staff who model any sort of anxiety and in turn they will try harder to create stress and

- 11 -

pressure. The strains imposed by working as a staff group in a restricted environment should not be under-estimated.

USE OF PSYCHIATRISTS, PSYCHOLOGISTS, AND OTHER PROFESSIONAL AGENCIES:

Given the importance of staff in Slemish House and the difficult nature of their task, all resources to help and support them should be used.

Psychologists, psychiatrists and others should provide support in terms of assessment, intervention and training on a regular basis. Training programmes should enable staff as individuals and in work groups to study and improve their day-to-day work.

BASIC STAFFING:

To calculate adequate staffing levels, it is necessary to establish how many members of staff are required to make available at least two staff per shift taking account of staff leave etc. As numbers exceed four, three staff are required as boys will be on a graded system of what they are allowed as privileges - some have to be separated from others. Some will go to 'open' education, supervised, while a back-up is required for education on premises.

At night the minimum should be one member of staff on duty (a waking presence) and one member sleeping in the building "on call". Staff will be asked to spread their holidays equally over the full year.

- 12 -

QUALITY OF LIFE IN SLEMISH HOUSE

Ensuring a good quality of life in Slemish House is not wholly dependent on procedures or the availability of physical resources. Much depends on staff insight and skills (see section on staff and staff procedures), and their ability to form sound relationships with the boys in the unit.

It is likely that a boy who has had several placements in residential care has been disadvantaged. Placement in Slemish House inevitably carries greater risks in this respect although the need for such a placement will have been identified by the admissions criteria. Staff should endeavour to enhance the quality of life in the unit and everything possible should be done to help the boys lead as normal an existence as possible, keeping in mind that security is immediate and paramount.

A lot of thought has gone into making the unit as homely and serviceable as possible but we must realise that boys referred to the unit will be the most severely disordered and frustrations of security can lead to a high level of vandalism. Therefore, close supervision and simple basic rules are necessary to ensure a better all-round quality of life. A boy who does not show due concern and consideration for staff and peers or respect for the building or furnishings, will find that sanctions imposed will obviously effect his quality of life in the unit. A boy responding to agreed programmes set out and acting in an acceptable manner will find that he will be rewarded and his quality of life enhanced considerably.

- 13 -

SECURITY (PHYSICAL) AND CONTROLS

While our emphasis is on the positive use of Slemish House accommodation as a means of caring intervention for the benefit of the boy, there may be occasions when more stringent measures of physical control are required. Intervention of this kind recognises that controlled behaviour is a pre-requisite of successful functioning of the boy in society and particularly of the formation of relationships with other children and adults. While most people during their childhood and adolescence progress in a natural way from behaviour controlled by externally imposed discipline to behaviour controlled by self discipline, many boys who find themselves in Slemish House will have had unsatisfactory early experience of discipline and will have failed to have adequate self-control. Part of the caring intervention, therefore, is to help develop inner control and enable them to achieve self respect, respect for others and personal responsibility. In that context staff are the ultimate control for boys who are unable to maintain themselves in the 'open' setting or in the community without risk to themselves or others. The control imposed by the physical structure can assist staff in helping boys to develop a degree of self control which will inevitably help them to live in open conditions.

Nevertheless, there may be exceptional circumstances where additional controls are needed and it may be necessary to consider "time-out" in a locked single room within the unit to control a severely disturbed boy. This action should be avoided unless there is no other effective alternative. If the boy's behaviour is such that it may not be safe to leave him on his own, continued staff presence is essential.

- 14 -

The locking up of a boy in the single room within the unit as a control or 'time out' measure, should only be done in relation to boys already admitted to the unit.

USE OF THE LOCKED SINGLE ROOM:

The use of this room will be guarded by the criteria and principles outlined below:

1. Placement in the single locked room is an extreme measure which should be taken only when appropriate methods of control have been tried and failed.
2. No child should be placed in a single locked room as punishment.
3. A child may be placed in a single room only if:
 - (a) he is a severe risk to himself or others; or
 - (b) his continued presence in the group is likely to have an unacceptably deleterious effect on them; and
 - (c) his behaviour is such that placement in his own room is likely to create unacceptable stress for other children or cause serious damage to property.
4. Placement of a child in a single locked room must be agreed and entered in the record by the most senior member of staff on duty at the time and the placement notified to the Director/ Deputy Director as quickly as possible.
5. A child placed in a single locked room must be observed at intervals not exceeding 15 minutes, other than when the child is asleep after the unit's normal bedtime; observation should normally involve appropriate communication with the child.

- 15 -

6. A child placed in a single locked room should be released from the room as soon as the disturbance in the child's behaviour, which led to his placement, has diminished.
7. No child should be held in a single locked room for a continuous period of more than 3 hours in any period of 24 hours, except where this period expires after the unit's normal bedtime and the child is asleep, in which case the child may be left there until he awakens the next morning.
8. A record should be maintained of all placements in the single locked room showing date and time of placement, the reasons for placement, who authorised the placement, times observed and date and time of release.
9. The use of this form of secure control needs to be constantly monitored and evaluated.

OTHER CONTROLS:

The extent to which other controls are necessary will depend largely on events and circumstances. The use of physical restraint may be the only way of defusing a crisis situation and must always be carried out in a non aggressive way. Staff who show fear of this physical restraint may be regarded by the boys as 'fair game'. The use of this physical restraint must always be recorded and the senior member of staff on duty notified.

Despite all precautions, boys 'fighting the system' will try to hide on themselves objects which may have value as currency inside the

- 16 -

unit, or as instruments to do damage to themselves, to others or the fabric of the building. Boys allowed out of the unit for visits or recreational purposes may well be under pressure to bring in prohibited articles and parents and other visitors may unwittingly or deliberately do so. Indeed, unless persuaded of the positive benefits of Slemish House by the staff, some parents and visitors may regard the unit as a challenge which they should help the boys fight against. Unobtrusive controls of visits are, therefore, a necessity. The management of the unit has taken the decision to carry out searches of boys and their rooms, rather than live with the inevitable upsets that the bringing in of prohibited articles will cause.

The manner in which these searches are carried out must be fully understood by all staff. The need for such action will be discussed openly with the boys in the hope that the establishment of mutual trust will keep the need for such action to the minimum.

All security aspects of design will be rendered ineffective if there is no sound and well understood system for admitting people into the unit and allowing them out again. Therefore, the distribution of keys must be carefully planned.

KEYS:

All staff and visitors will be admitted by the Duty Officer. The outer lobby door and inner lobby door must not be unlocked at the same time. A Duty Officer will be appointed by Senior Staff and he will be in charge of the key to all outer perimeter doors. This outer perimeter door key will be signed in and out by Duty Officer and witnessed by Senior Staff.

- 17 -

All other staff will sign for their own inside keys when reporting for duty - witnessed by Duty Officer.

Keys must be attached to staff by lead provided.

Staff are responsible for keys for which they have signed.

Any loss of keys must be reported to Senior Staff immediately.

Keys must NEVER be given to boys.

Failure to observe these rules will constitute a serious breach of discipline and will be treated as such.

SECURITY-THROUGH SUPERVISION:

Mail:

Censorship of mail is considered unacceptable. However, in the interest of security and to prevent harm to the boy or others, it is necessary to make sure that incoming mail does not contain prohibited articles. All mail must be opened in the presence of staff.

Phone:

A boy's use of the telephone will be decided at the weekly review or at the discretion of senior staff.

Smoking:

Boys under 14 years of age are not allowed to smoke. Boys under 16 years may smoke only if they have written permission from parents or guardian. Boys are allowed to smoke a maximum of 6 cigarettes per day (See 'Daily Routine')

- 18 -

Smokers must be supervised by a member of staff who will only issue cigarettes in the appropriate area. When cigarettes are smoked, staff should ensure that the 'ends' of all cigarettes issued are in the ashtrays provided. The ends should then be disposed of.

Boys must not have cigarettes or matches/lighters in their possession.

CUTLERY CHECK:

Cutlery must be counted and accounted for before boys leave the dining room area.

Cutlery will be locked away between meals.

No boy should leave the dining area during meal time.

Kitchen knives and other dangerous articles should never be available to boys. In the event of missing cutlery, appropriate action, which may include a unit search, must automatically result.

PROHIBITED/CONTROLLED ARTICLES:

Prohibited Articles:

The most innocent objects have a potential for misuse leading to self injury, attack on others or damage to property. Staff must be constantly aware of this potential.

For this reason the following may not be allowed into the unit:

Glass in any form	Plastic bags
Drugs of any sort	Metal knives of any description
Metal combs	Any spirit-based items
Metal Nail files	Blutac or similar substances
Aerosol sprays	Chewing gum

- 19 -

Controlled articles in general use:

Round-nosed scissors	Felt-tip pens
Glue	Biros
Guillotine	String
Stapler	Compasses
Hole-punch	Needles

and any other items used in the Education Department.

These articles should be listed and counted at daily intervals by staff who have introduced them into the unit. All items should be checked out before and in after use. A record should be kept of these and signed by the teacher in charge.

- 20 -

STAFF INTERVENTION AND CHILD MANAGEMENT

The extreme nature of the unit's intake often means that the boys may have had a succession of placements. Many boys will have been through the establishments at different times. Some will have been in the same establishment at the same time. This can result in the arrival of an established "culture" among boys based on their previous experiences.

Many boys, after a residential career, are lost in the expectations of peers. It is important to 'break them out' of such expectations and role conformity.

Adult or staff intervention is necessary for a positive, stable and secure culture within the unit. The often impulsive, frightened and aggressive intake can produce a negative, unstable, unsafe culture rooted in bullying, thuggery, rudeness and fear. It is essential that the staff intervene when they see the emergence of such negative influences. This intervention can be achieved by a range of management techniques which we will deal with in the following pages. However, direct action by staff, which is openly observable by the rest of the boys, can be the best strategy for overall house stability.

An essential aspect of staff intervention is to be practically aware, through file information, when boys have had previous contact and to sense when the resultant 'culture' occurs and to interrupt it. These interruptions can be achieved by various methods but, no matter which method is used, these decisions must

- 21 -

be voiced to the rest of the staff so that the group being interrupted can not accuse the one particular member of staff of "picking on them". It is essential that the staff work as a team with common agreed policies toward individuals in the group. These policies are to be clearly defined so that all staff are aware of their own responsibilities.

One method of interruption or intervention is deliberate separation of the group e.g:

- (a) Manipulating meal time seating.
- (b) Separating boys by bedroom plan.
- (c) Manipulating seating in group meetings.
- (d) Manipulating seating for T.V. small games etc.

Manipulating - "You sit there ... You sit here ... I'll sit here". Staff do not have to give reasons for this but often a simple explanation based on the facts surrounding the separations and the need to assess the individuals concerned makes sense to the boys. While there is often verbal and initial resistance to such intervention (based on role image) most children (especially those who have fallen prey to the bullying element) are relieved by the break in the culture/behaviour patterns. Repeated doses of this sort of interruption will soon establish new cultures which may need more consultation among staff. The objective of the exercise is that staff each know what other staff are doing and why they are doing it.

- 22 -

Another area of adult intervention concerns noise level and excitement. In Slemish House intake will often thrive on and seek a chaotic environment and be resistant to, or incapable of, ordered thought and daily living. Noise and extremes of excitement level can be characteristic of such boys. It is important therefore that staff limit noise level and directly calm the activity of children who are getting over-excited. The noise level of radio, tapes and T.V., is included here.

EARLY INTERVENTION:

Early intervention by staff in managing boys' behaviour is essential. While it is possible to allow unacceptable behaviour or squabbling/fighting to run their course within boundaries protected by staff, early intervention in situations can prevent the escalation of behaviour into a "serious incident" category.

Early Intervention avoids:

- (a) escalation in intensity of behaviour;
- (b) additional members of the group participating in the behaviour;
- (c) deterioration in unit atmosphere;
- (d) the need for more intense management techniques.

Early intervention is particularly appropriate where boys' behaviour patterns are well known/established and where escalation is inevitable.

CONFRONTING - NOT CONFRONTATIONS:

'Confrontations' are a frequent corollary of living with disordered children. 'Confrontations' tend to be explosive with

- 23 -

physical or verbal outbursts. They arise when child management techniques have not been employed or when they have failed. Confrontations are not always avoidable and staff should not be personally over-concerned when they do occur.

Confronting, though not 'Confrontation', is a child management technique.

Confronting, simply put, is describing/detailing to the boy his behaviour and, where necessary, the effect of the behaviour on other people in the unit.

Confronting boys with their behaviour does not mean a heated argument; neither is it a personal attack on the boy.

Ideally, confronting boys with their behaviour should be a calm descriptive exercise which can be used with individuals or in groups. It can be used after behaviour has been observed or in an analysis of a current situation.

When children realize that they are not being 'picked on' or blindly criticised they can be very receptive to this form of management which, though establishing control, reduces conflict.

ADULT PROTECTION:

There are occasions when boys are engaged in activities with other boys or staff or merely sitting on their own when other boys harass them. Adults should protect the boundaries of such activity by direct intervention.

- 24 -

LINE-UPS:

Lining up boys is a helpful group management technique. It is particularly useful before moving children from one situation to another.

The benefits are that it:

- (a) sets a tone of order before departure.
- (b) aids distribution of children to escorts.
- (c) allows staff to state expectations clearly.
- (d) aids reception of expectations by children.
- (e) aids head count.

CALLING TOGETHER:

Calling boys together at any time can defuse/resolve difficult situations.

Quite simply, if any aspects of individual or group behaviour is of concern to staff, the group can be called together and presented with this concern.

Generally speaking, boys are reassured when they know that staff are aware of emerging situations and will often compensate or self-control when given the opportunity.

'PHASE COMPLETION':

At times, by nature of the intake and resources, daily life is hectic and staff are subject to massive demands, often as a result of requests from the boys. In such a situation staff can be rushed into decisions or action. This can leave them flustered.

- 25 -

Phase completion reduces this possibility. Simply put, 'phase completion' means completing one task before embarking on the next. This particularly applies to early morning routines. The message to boys is: "When we've done this well do that".

SETTING EXPECTATIONS:

Setting expectations is simply laying down prerequisite guidelines to the boys. This can usually be employed for meal times and activities but can be central to the management of boys in any situation.

Examples might be: "I want you to sit quietly at the table". "When we return to the unit, I want people to hang their towels on the rack and sit in the lounge". "When this film finishes, I want people to tidy the lounge and go to their rooms".

INDIVIDUAL INSTRUCTION:

While there are many indirect techniques of child management, inevitably, there is the need for direct individual instruction.

This will be most noticeable at times of individual unacceptable behaviour when boys must be told directly to "STOP".

Staff should not shirk the responsibility of this direct intervention nor should they see this as the only available technique through which they establish water-tight authority.

TONE SETTING:

Tone setting is directly to do with staff image. The image and attitudes displayed by staff have a major effect on the attitudes

- 26 -

displayed by boys and the prevailing atmosphere of the unit. A graphic example could be seen at bedtime and pre-bedtime when it is necessary to settle and calm the unit. Noisy and boisterous behaviour or horseplay by staff with boys would set an inappropriate tone - a tone which might be better applied during early morning call.

Manners, the tone of voice and mode of addressing children, demeanour of staff, vitality etc., can all be consciously employed to directly affect the tone of the unit and resultant behaviour and demeanour of the children.

DIVERSION:

Diversion is a child management technique which can be used to break down boredom, suspect pairings or groups, excitement etc. It is not necessary for children to observe or understand what is happening. Diversion can be employed across the spectrum of daily living. Diversion tactics include engaging in conversation, introducing newspaper articles or an activity or asking for help with some chore.

COUNSELLING:

"Counselling" appears in social work as a term which covers many themes from a cosy chat to psychotherapy. Counselling in the Unit involves practical discussion of behaviour and difficulties presented by individual boys. It is likely to be a response to:

- (a) adjustment to placement in the Unit.
- (b) questions asked about future placement.
- (c) implications of past for future behaviour.

- 27 -

- (d) aspects of present behaviour and their effects.
- (e) avoiding confrontations.
- (f) ways of resolving confrontations.
- (g) preparation for future placement.
- (h) adjusting boy to management techniques.
- (i) aiding boy's recognition of patterns of behaviour.

The skills of counselling in this context are mechanical and deliberately simplistic in nature. Lengthy, involved discussions are likely to do little other than confuse the boy. However, if opportunity arises, listening to the boys is likely to help them begin to analyse their own history and problems. The elements of such counselling would include:

- (a) This aspect of your behaviour in this circumstance leads to this outcome.
- (b) This aspect of your behaviour, taken from this situation, will lead to this outcome.

Counselling often involves asking questions to try to establish the factors which affect the stability or circumstances of the boy.

ISOLATING OUT/COOLING OFF:

There are many "heat of the moment" situations between boys, or with boys which necessitate their being separated from each other or from the group. This isolating out action is to be used to give boys a chance to "cool off" and to regain their self control. This action should not be confused with a longer term additional measure of control nor would it automatically constitute, or be followed by, a sanction. In many instances, the ideal end result is an early return to the group.

- 28 -

Isolating out is best used with follow-up counselling before a boy is restored to the group. Situations where isolating out might be appropriate are:

- (a) after a physical confrontation between boys,
- (b) after a boy's refusal to follow an instruction or conform to other child management technique,
- (c) when boy is wanting to opt out of activities or education,
- (d) when a boy has been particularly boisterous and seems unable to self-control.

USE OF EARS AND EYES (AWARENESS):

A major aid to child management is simply staff keeping their ears and eyes open. It is possible to heighten hearing and observation skills and when boys realise that staff have high awareness ability much unacceptable behaviour can be prevented. Staff awareness is a key skill and one which the new or inexperienced staff should constantly work at. The inexperienced staff may lack confidence in pure child management techniques but he/she has eyes and ears which can provide information for more experienced staff to work with.

Staff in the Unit should liken their work to driving a car. It is very simple to drive in top gear very fast on the motorway. There is seemingly little danger in driving through town at 30 m.p.h. The good driver, however, is always looking ahead and preparing for the unexpected but predictable hazards which, experience teaches, can arise.

- 29 -

USE OF HUMOUR:

Humour and general cheerfulness can have a markedly positive effect on individual children and group. Care should be taken to use humour at appropriate times. Humour can short-circuit a limit-setting action by another staff distracting from the focus of attention on that staff, or desired tone at specific times. Inappropriate humour in terms of content should also be guarded against. Lewd jokes or jokes with an overt sexual or swearing content are not helpful to tone setting. Resist the temptation to be a 'good bloke' through such humour.

Do not ridicule children.

A FEW NECESSARY POINTERS:

Always know the whereabouts of your colleagues - if you move from one area to another, notify duty officer.

When a boy is put in his room, the door must be locked - not just pushed closed.

Finally, we know that, before staff can be experienced as helpful by young people, they require to have basic qualities of warmth, understanding and genuineness i.e. young people can quickly work out who the people really interested in them and their lives are.

Skills can be taught and learned by experience, these basic qualities cannot.

- 30 -

MEETINGS1. Daily House Meetings:

Boys and staff will meet each day after lunch where each boy's progress and failings will be pointed out and discussed. This gives the boy the opportunity to say what he thinks of life within the Unit and talk freely with staff and boys.

2. Daily Staff Meetings:

Where boys' daily progress over the past 24 hours can be passed on to oncoming staff and awareness of any problems arising or ongoing arrived at and discussed.

3. Weekly Staff Meeting: Chaired by Deputy Director/Asst. Director

To discuss individual progress and to decide any individual boy's right to have his trust extended, e.g. go to school within the open setting. The decision taken at this should be clearly defined so that staff are aware of their responsibility towards each boy e.g.

1. Who need constant supervision one-to-one?
2. Who can be let out on trust with staff?
3. Who is not allowed out at all?
4. Who can go to mainstream education?

The decision at this meeting should be adhered to unless the senior staff have considered that any individual has broken his trust.

The meeting should be used to discuss policy and practice within the Unit and to make decisions where appropriate. Authority to

- 31 -

arrange Case Reviews could be taken at the weekly meeting. Where possible, the Psychologist should attend this meeting. Staff should ensure that over-strict adherence to one particular programme does not conflict with the need of individual children. If particular philosophies are favoured, these should be based on a sound management structure and the staff's full realisation of their aims and objectives and the limitations of the programme in use. The weekly staff meeting therefore should be used to review and monitor each individual programme.

SANCTIONS:

Loss of money, cigarettes, loss of T.V. etc.

INCENTIVES:

Freedom in Unit, Extra Money, More T.V. Later bed-time, Outings, Personal Stereo in room, Personalised room.

- 32 -

EDUCATION

We would envisage having a full-time teacher in the unit who has been inducted into the ethos of the unit and committed to work with the care staff in a specialist team.

The classroom, we feel, will accommodate 3-4 boys but boys will be phased into the open education system, so we hope to have boys escorted to the main school each day. A boy will not be considered for 'open' education for at least three weeks. This will be his first opportunity to show staff in the unit that he can be trusted.

BEHAVIOURAL PROBLEMS:

Where a boy refuses to attend class, or behaves in a manner unacceptable in the classroom - with the agreement of the duty senior he should be placed in his room. As soon as he is fit to return to class, teaching and care staff should consult each other in an effort to achieve a smooth return to class. Any work missed should be given to the boy at the next available leisure period by care staff. Where a boy remains behaviourally unfit for class for some time, care and teaching staff should consult each other to establish the best way of obtaining the most satisfactory resolution. It may be necessary for the boy to remain in his room with all the loss of privileges that this entails. At the end of the school day, the boy will be allowed from his room when he has satisfactorily completed the amount of class work deemed appropriate by staff (or teachers). These guidelines do not preclude individual staff intervention - after

- 33 -

appropriate consultation. Teachers will attend daily meetings of boys and staff.

MEDICAL PROVISION:

While in Slemish House the boys will receive the same high standard of medical care but it may be necessary to administer this within the unit. There may be occasions when a boy will have to be brought to the dentist or doctor under close supervision authorised by the senior staff on duty.

The nursing staff are to be notified of all new admissions and any medication or medical treatment required.

No drugs or medication are allowed in the unit unless they are authorised by medical staff. All authorised drugs or medication are to be administered by nursing staff or by care staff under the direction of the nursing staff. All authorised drugs and medication are to be locked in the office. At no time are drugs or medication to be in any boy's possession. All medical appointments and the outcome of these appointments to be notified to the nursing staff. (Careful recording in the books provided).

RECORD KEEPING:

The information and record system should be designed to collect accurate and relevant material for immediate use in practice, as well as for monitoring and evaluating the service provided.

It is presumed that the boy's up-to-date file will be available

- 34 -

prior to admission and updated on day of arrival. A completed admission form together with a copy of minutes of Admissions Panel meeting and a Care Plan will be included.

Among the items of information to be recorded in books provided will be the following:- (on the inside cover of each book, the information required will be clearly defined).

1. boy's clothing and personal property
2. daily occurrence diary
3. medical provision
4. visiting
5. absconding
6. untoward incidents
7. use of lock-up room
8. rewards and cash book
9. unit search
10. fire drill
11. cutlery check
12. nightman's diary
13. key book (issue)
14. staff attendance record
15. weekly meeting minute book.

Each boy will have a daily occurrence clip board. These will be kept in the office and filled in at regular intervals during the day, especially at the end of each shift. These should include both the negative and positive sides of the boy's behavior and possible warning signs. Decisions and special requests or proposals at daily meetings should be recorded for consideration at weekly staff meetings, which should be carefully minuted by a selected member of staff. Key Workers will furnish an updated

- 35 -

VISITS IN AND OUT OF THE UNIT

This family contact should be considered in a planned way from the time the boy is placed in the unit and should be considered throughout the time he is in the unit and particularly in the decisions taken when the boy's case is reviewed at regular intervals. Parents especially should be encouraged (and helped if possible by welfare) to visit as often as possible. The Welfare Officer, in consultation with unit staff, should maintain contact with each boy and his parents throughout his stay in the unit. When a boy has regained self control and responds sufficiently to trust given him, he may have planned, supervised visits home. If these prove successful they will be extended considerably and used as part of his planned, phased return to the open setting or indeed the community.

Efforts should be made to help the boy and his family understand what will be required of them if the boy's reintegration into the community is to be successful. Where possible, other relevant agencies should be informed of un-supervised home visits and all help sought to monitor these. Family contact will be actively encouraged, since they are likely to alleviate the inevitable frustration of being cut off from the outside world, unless a decision is taken to the contrary at a formal review.

On admission, each boy will be given the opportunity to send two visiting cards to his family or guardians who will be asked to provide I.D. with the visiting card. Visits must be arranged in advance. On arrival, visitors will be advised of the unit's rules

- 36 -

regarding visits. They may bring confectionery, cigarettes, minerals and/or money. (No glass bottles or, indeed, prohibited or controlled articles allowed - see list). These gifts must be given to staff, in the presence of the boy, and recorded.

Visitors will be asked to hand over their lighters and matches to staff on admission to the building. These will be locked away and returned to them when they leave the building. All visits will take place in the area provided. Staff will be available at all times during each visit, to respond to enquiries or requests for assistance. Visiting cards, where appropriate, may be issued after each visit. No-one under 18 years, unless accompanied by an approved adult, may be admitted for a visit - except in exceptional circumstances. Any boy in the unit refused a visit will be told why and this will be recorded in daily log. All visits must be recorded in individual's file and the book provided, plus any issue arising, effects etc. Staff will ensure that visits from relatives or friends of the boys are not unnecessarily upsetting or disruptive.

- 37 -

DAILY ROUTINEMONDAY - FRIDAY:

- 8.15 a.m. Boys called and supervised into washroom and toilet area - return to own rooms where they will dress in day clothes and tidy their rooms. Boys will remain in their rooms until room is checked by staff. They will then be brought down to breakfast. After breakfast, boys will be given specific tasks to complete under supervision. These completed, where appropriate, cigarettes will be given out. (see unit smoking policy attached).
- 9.30 a.m. Class
- 10.45 a.m. Break - Cigarettes where appropriate
- 11.00 a.m. Class
- 1.00 p.m. Lunch
- 1.30 p.m. Daily staff and boys' meeting, then smoke break where appropriate
- 2.00 p.m. Class
- 3.30 p.m. Break and Recreation; smoke where appropriate.
- 4.45 p.m. Activities (Gym and Pool) - followed by shower
- 6.00 p.m. Tea - Cigarettes if appropriate
- 6.30 p.m. Indoor Activities
- 8.30 p.m. Supper and last cigarette
- 8.45 Up to rooms, changed and ready for bed by 9.00 p.m.

WEEKENDS:

Unit may have a "lie in" on Saturday and Sunday morning. Saturday morning extra cleaning may be a necessary and worthwhile exercise for the boys. Activities may be organised depending on the availability of staff and make-up of group and their attitudes. It may

- 38 -

DAILY TIME-TABLE - GENERAL GUIDE TO STAFF

The duty officer will be appointed at 8.00 a.m. each morning.

This does not necessarily mean a senior member of staff.

8.15 a.m. The duty officer must ensure that one member of staff co-ordinates boys' washing and cleaning.

All soap bags collected and put in the night control office.

Boys whose duty jobs are morning cleaning and breakfast are roused first for washing.

Slippers and pyjamas are worn outside bedrooms.

Only boys being washed and doing duty jobs should be outside their rooms at one time.

Dirty laundry has to be placed in the basket outside Night Control room.

Boys waiting for washing should tidy and clean their rooms in turn.

One morning a week the beds are to be stripped and linen placed in the laundry basket.

8.45 a.m. All boys come down the stairs together, with staff. Boys may request to have personal belongings locked away for them.

Personal belongings permitted in the unit may be brought down the stairs by boys.

Laundry duty boys bring down laundry basket.

- 39 -

On school days, only boys on open education exchange their slippers for trainers in the boot room before leaving the unit. Slippers are to be worn in the unit at all times.

Breakfast duty boy prepares and sets the table while the other boys sit in lounge area. They may use the T.V. with staff's permission.

Staff bring out cutlery and prepare breakfast.

8.50 a.m. When breakfast is ready, everyone must sit down together. A morning prayer or grace before meals should be said.

No T.V. or music played until everyone is finished and given permission to leave the table.

Breakfast duty boy clears the tables leaving one set up with four chairs.

Staff and breakfast duty boy wash, dry and count cutlery and record in log before locking away. No boy must leave the area (even to the toilet) until all cutlery is checked and locked away.

(See smoking rules)

9.30 a.m. On school days, boys go to school together. Boys going to the open school are escorted. Any absences or planned withdrawals to be reported to the teacher involved.

10.45 a.m. Break - Boys come down from class with teacher and class back-up staff. Boys from the open education to be escorted back to unit. Boys will be given mid-morning snack by staff.

- 40 -

- 11.00 a.m. Boys go back to class.
Open school boys to be escorted.
- 12.55 p.m. Open school boy escorted back to unit. Other boys back to unit as at 10.45.
Boy on lunch duty sets table - same procedures for breakfast apply.
After lunch other boy on cleaning duty hooovers unit and sweeps kitchen.
- 1.30 p.m. Same procedure for cutlery.
Boys remain in the unit with other staff.
- 1.35 p.m. Meeting of staff and boys. All boys and staff on duty must be present. Full attention is required from everyone. As individual comments are made, the boy concerned is encouraged to provide positive contributions. After 24 hour review and job allocations are completed, boys may introduce any other matters for general discussion. When the meeting is over, boys may request staff to collect personal items from their rooms. Boys may use the recreation area.
- 2.00 p.m. Boys back to class-same as after breakfast.
Escorts etc.
Staff changeover. All staff meet in the unit. Co-ordinator ensures smooth transfer of information to the next shift. i.e. appointments, general behaviour, 24 hour review and the nature of the atmosphere on the shift etc.

- 41 -

- 3.30 p.m. School finishes. Boys escorted back to unit etc.
Laundry duty boy to tidy boot room and laundry
before coming into the unit (lounge).
- 3.40 p.m. Break (snack provided by staff and selected boy).
Boys may use recreation area from now to 4.30.
Smoke rules apply.
- 4.30 p.m. Boy on tea duty sets table.
Usual procedure applies.
- 4.45 p.m. Prepare for activities
Staff should ensure suitable back-up for transport.
- 5.00 p.m. Activities.
- 6.00 p.m. Back to the unit and tea.
- 6.30 p.m. Tuck shop open. Boys may have access to parcels sent or
brought in to them. All unconsumed food or remainder
of parcels to be returned to office by staff. At
this stage staff should organise the evening's
activities in the unit. These may include table-tennis
small games, T.V. use of kitchen, Key Worker, counsell-
ing etc. A boy may wish to go to his room to read
or listen to music. The use of the "mini gym" will be
allowed only when there is unobtrusive supervision of
one boy. If more than one boy requests the use of this
facility there must be a member of staff supervising
at all times.
- 8.00 p.m. Boy on supper duty prepares supper, with staff
supervision. Recreation area to be tidied prior to
supper.
- 8.30 p.m. Supper and last cigarette. Supper duty boy clears up
kitchen - under supervision.

- 42 -

8.45 p.m. Boys go up stairs together with staff. Boy on laundry duty brings up clean clothing in basket. All boys go to rooms and change into pyjamas. Collect towels and wash-bags from Night Control Office. Wait in rooms until staff have wash facilities ready. Slippers to be worn outside of rooms. No more than two boys to wash at one time. Once a boy is settled in his room the door must be locked.

9.55 p.m. Last check on boys with night supervisor who now becomes the duty officer.

N.B: Each day should begin and end with a prayer. This time will also afford an opportunity for religious/moral guidance.

1 you visited.

2 **A. I took very little back with me.**

3 Q. And why was that, SPT2?

4 **A. I didn't like it.**

5 Q. What was it you didn't like about it?

6 **A. Austerity, and they used plastic seats, plastic knives**
7 **and forks. There was no comfort to the place.**

8 Q. So Slemish, and you were saying to me that
9 there were carpets. There were curtains. There was --
10 you refused to accept the plastic seating, although you
11 did say that you devised a chair -- a weighted chair so
12 that it couldn't be --

13 **A. It would have been far dearer than the furniture I would**
14 **have put into my house because of the way it was**
15 **constructed.**

16 Q. This was to ensure --

17 **A. And I was told that by the Northern Ireland Office.**

18 Q. But you fought your corner and got it nonetheless?

19 **A. Yes.**

20 Q. And you also said -- I mean, you explained that there
21 was more sofas but with covers that could be washed
22 easily and that kind of thing.

23 **A. Yes.**

24 Q. And it was not quite what you had witnessed in other
25 places. Well, I wondered how boys came to be put into

1 in there, you went in and had a conversation with him in
2 that room.

3 **A. Yes.**

4 Q. Can you just maybe elaborate a little bit on that, about
5 what kind of things you would have been saying to him?

6 **A. Well, probably trying to settle him down first, because**
7 **if they go into that room, they're in bad shape, and the**
8 **more staff around them, you know, was putting them in**
9 **worse shape, you know. So when a child was brought**
10 **down, say, by four members of staff, I hunted the staff**
11 **and many of them would have said, "Oh, will you be all**
12 **right?" and things like that. I said, "No. Just yous**
13 **go ahead".**

14 Q. You actually told me too that you had been trained in
15 the use of restraint --

16 **A. Yes.**

17 Q.

18 **A. That's right.**

19 Q. That was at the suggestion of the Northern Ireland
20 Office I believe.

21 **A. Northern Ireland Office.**

22 Q. You believe you had your training in Millisle and you
23 were trained by prison officers there?

24 **A. In the prison, prison officers.**

25 Q. Did any of the other staff members get trained in

- 4 -

Nevertheless, this process will have a 'risk factor' but the length of stay in secure accommodation will invariably be determined by the willingness of all those involved to take risks and test the boy in 'open conditions'.

GUIDELINES RELATING TO THE USE OF SLEMISH HOUSE

It is recognised that some young people, for whom residential accommodation is the preferred form of care, require more intensive social work support or other professional assistance in order to help them through difficult periods. Restricting the liberty of any individual is a serious matter and therefore strict criteria for admission have been drawn up which must be satisfied before placement in this unit.

Before referring a boy to Slemish House two issues need to be considered:

- (1) Is it possible to identify alternatives or other resources which would prevent or ameliorate the boy's difficulties to a point where secure provision is not required?
- (2) What mechanisms or procedures need to be examined to ensure consistent intervention in the open setting which prevents a referral to close supervision?

A number of general principles underlie the use of Slemish House:

- (a) the use of this accommodation is not intended as a punitive measure. Its function is to provide a controlled and safe environment in which the care and treatment of those children who satisfy the admission criteria is undertaken;

- 5 -

- (b) Slemish House is seen as part of the continuum of the totality of residential child care provision;
- (c) while security is important, it does not override the requirements of good child care practice;
- (d) the use of the Close Supervision Unit for children in care is seen as a very exceptional measure and only those children who genuinely need such accommodation are placed and kept there.

CRITERIA FOR ADMISSION:

All referrals to Slemish House will come from within the school (i.e. young people will be worked with in the open setting first) and no boy may be placed or retained there unless:

- (a) he has a history of absconding and is likely to abscond from any other type of accommodation, thereby placing himself at physical, mental or moral risk and
- (b) being kept in any other type of accommodation is likely to cause self-injury or injury to other persons.

PROCEDURES FOR ADMISSION:

All admissions will be made on a planned basis and will be processed through an Admissions Panel. This will consist of:

- 6 -

(1) The Director/Deputy Director/Assistant Director.

(2) Member of Board of Management.

(3) Member of Social Work Inspectorate.

(4) Member of A.P.R.U.

(5) Member of Social Work/Community Care Team.

In attendance: The Head of Slemish House (who will also act as convenor).

The Head of Assessment/Deputy.

The Key Worker/Head of Referring Unit.

Social Worker - where appropriate.

REVIEWS:

To ensure the appropriate use of this facility, each case is reviewed at least once in every five week period by the Admissions Panel.

The Panel has responsibility for ensuring that:

(a) the criteria for keeping the child in Slemish House continues to apply, and

(b) the placement continues to be appropriate for the child.

Emergency Admissions may only be made through the Director or his Deputy and will be reviewed every 24 hours.

- 6 -

(1) The Director/Deputy Director/Assistant Director.

(2) Member of Board of Management.

(3) Member of Social Work Inspectorate.

(4) Member of A.P.R.U.

(5) Member of Social Work/Community Care Team.

In attendance: The Head of Slemish House (who will also act as convenor).

The Head of Assessment/Deputy.

The Key Worker/Head of Referring Unit.

Social Worker - where appropriate.

REVIEWS:

To ensure the appropriate use of this facility, each case is reviewed at least once in every five week period by the Admissions Panel.

The Panel has responsibility for ensuring that:

(a) the criteria for keeping the child in Slemish House continues to apply, and

(b) the placement continues to be appropriate for the child.

Emergency Admissions may only be made through the Director or his Deputy and will be reviewed every 24 hours.

privileges such as trips out of the school. However, the low staffing levels sometimes mean that when a child has lost such a privilege he has to be taken anyway because there are insufficient people on duty to supervise both the group going out and anyone being made to remain behind.

- 5.15 Aisling House has two rooms, known as "quiet rooms". They are in fact secure accommodation in that they are used to lock up a child so that his liberty is restricted. The furniture is limited to a mattress on the floor and a soft upholstered cube. The records show that between the time that Aisling House was opened and the Inspectors' visit these rooms were used 92 times, on occasions as a response to quite minor misbehaviour. **SPT 81** was only placed in a quiet room once for eight minutes when he threatened to hit another boy with a pool cue and was verbally abusive to members of staff. In the Inspectors' view the use of locked rooms is an unacceptable response to misbehaviour by disturbed children who may be as young as ten years of age. If a child needs to be removed from the group either for his own protection or the protection of others he should be taken to his bedroom by a member of staff who should remain with him.
- 5.16 Reference to paragraph 2.26 shows that **SPT 81** was removed to Slemish House on his second night at St Patrick's. The records show that he had been demanding to have his light left on and that he had used "spicy" language to the night supervisor. This behaviour does not appear to justify the use of secure accommodation. **Consequently it is recommended that the use of such accommodation as a response to misbehaviour should be reviewed.**
- 5.17 Currently there is no legislation in force on the use of secure accommodation in Northern Ireland. However, Article 44 of the new Children (NI) Order 1995, which will be implemented within the next two years states that a child may not be placed in secure accommodation unless it appears that:
- "(i) he has a history of absconding and is likely to abscond from any other description of accommodation; and
- "(ii) if he absconds he is likely to suffer significant harm; or
- "that if he is kept in any other description of accommodation he is likely to injure himself or other persons."
- 5.18 In addition it is anticipated that when the Order is implemented it will be accompanied by Regulations similar to those emanating from the English Children Act 1989 which further restrict the use of secure accommodation. In the Inspectors' view many of the situations in which the quiet rooms and Slemish House are currently being used will not be possible under the new legislation and are not desirable as good practice today.

- 5.19 Nevertheless, in the Inspectors' view the lack of any regulations or guidance on such a sensitive topic as the use of secure accommodation for children is too serious an omission to remain until the implementation of the new legislation. **They recommend that the Northern Ireland Office should issue guidance to the training schools as soon as possible and the schools' management boards should incorporate it into revised procedures for their staff.**

Absconding

- 5.20 **SPT 81** had absconded twice while he was in the Western Board's area. On the first occasion he left Nazareth House and was found the following morning at his grandmother's home. On the second he went missing from Harberton House with another boy and they were both found a few hours later by a member of staff. It appears that the two boys were "mitching" school for the morning. In themselves these two incidents were not regarded as being very serious.
- 5.21 At the time that **SPT 81** was admitted to Aisling House, there had been a spate of abscondings which were brought to the attention of the Western Board's staff only at the initial case review, four days later. In the two months prior to 14th August there had been twenty eight abscondings from the unit. Eighteen of them involved the four boys who later absconded with **SPT 81**. One of them had left the school on seven separate occasions; a second boy on five occasions and the other two had each left three times without permission. A culture of absconding appears to have been established with incidents involving small groups of boys occurring every five or six days on average. In the whole of St Patrick's there were 353 abscondings from the school in the first six months of 1994.
- 5.22 In the Inspectors' view it should have been a matter of concern that a new boy to the unit, especially one as young as **SPT 81** would be at real risk of being influenced by others to become involved in their absconding activities. The staff who had worked with him, however, felt that he was unlikely to abscond and told the Inspectors that they were surprised when they were told that he had become involved in the incident on 14th August.
- 5.23 With the benefit of hindsight this proved to be an incorrect assessment and it is now clear that **SPT 81** was subject to the influence of a group of persistent absconders to the point where he collected and hid the food and clothes that they needed. The staff involved were aware that **SPT 81** was easily influenced by others and in the Inspectors' view more cognisance of the dangers of his becoming involved in absconding should have been taken at the time of his admission. **It is recommended that more consideration should be given to the dangers of children being drawn into absconding behaviour if they are placed in a group containing persistent absconders.**

36. Arrangements shall be made for the giving of pocket money each week subject to such conditions as may be approved by the Ministry.

37. The Manager may suspend any of the facilities mentioned in Rules 35 and 36 of these Rules if he is satisfied that they interfere with the discipline of the school ; and any such suspension shall be recorded in the Log Book.

Discipline and Punishment

38. The person in charge of the school shall ensure that generally order is maintained by his personal influence and understanding and that of his staff, aided by a system of rewards and privileges which shall be subject to the Ministry's approval, and resort to corporal punishment shall be avoided as far as possible.

39. Where correction is needed for minor acts of misbehaviour one of the following methods shall be adopted :—

- (a) Forfeiture of rewards or privileges (including pocket money).
- (b) Temporary loss of recreation in which case the offender shall be required to perform a useful task.
- (c) Alteration of meals for a period not exceeding three days : provided that any such alteration shall be within the limits of a special dietary scale drawn up by the Board of Management after consultation with the manager and the school medical officer, and approved by the Ministry.
- (d) Separation from other pupils : provided that this punishment shall only be used in exceptional cases and subject to the following conditions :—
 - (i) No boy or girl under the age of twelve shall be kept in separation.
 - (ii) The room used for the purpose shall be light and airy and kept lighted after dark.
 - (iii) Some form of occupation shall be given.
 - (iv) Means of communication with a member of the staff shall be provided.
 - (v) If the separation is to be continued for more than 24 hours, the written consent of a member of the Board of Management shall be obtained and the circumstances shall be reported immediately to the Ministry.

40.—(1) Where corporal punishment is found necessary its application shall be in accordance with the following conditions :—

- (a) It shall be inflicted only on the hands or posterior with a light cane and shall not exceed six strokes in the case of a boy or girl over 10 years of age, and 2 strokes in the case of a boy or girl over 8 and under 10 years of age.

- 5 -

- (b) Slemish House is seen as part of the continuum of the totality of residential child care provision;
- (c) while security is important, it does not override the requirements of good child care practice;
- (d) the use of the Close Supervision Unit for children in care is seen as a very exceptional measure and only those children who genuinely need such accommodation are placed and kept there.

CRITERIA FOR ADMISSION:

All referrals to Slemish House will come from within the school (i.e. young people will be worked with in the open setting first) and no boy may be placed or retained there unless:

- (a) he has a history of absconding and is likely to abscond from any other type of accommodation, thereby placing himself at physical, mental or moral risk and
- (b) being kept in any other type of accommodation is likely to cause self-injury or injury to other persons.

PROCEDURES FOR ADMISSION:

All admissions will be made on a planned basis and will be processed through an Admissions Panel. This will consist of:

- 3 -

a history of previous placements and care authority involvement and they will be mistrusting of all adults and resentful of the intrusion of more 'Carers' into their lives. They will obviously expect that this movement is of a punitive nature because of the restriction on their freedom. The aim should be to help the child to realise that the placement is intended to be constructive and the experience, although it may be initially difficult to accept, can be positive.

The unit's aim must therefore be to provide a high standard of child care within which the boy's needs are met. We would see as the primary objectives of the unit a need to show a boy that, if he cannot control himself, others are able to do so, thereby creating a greater feeling of security enabling the formation of positive personal relationships. This should allow the boy to feel safe and secure and give him the opportunity to mature through experiences and relationships which he would have otherwise denied himself. This security should be achieved mainly by the use of staff rather than a simple reliance on the building. Perimeter doors should be locked but there should be ample opportunity, with adequate staffing, for boys who have become more self secure to experience a fair degree of unrestricted movement, the only real security coming from staff/boy relationship. This in turn can create a situation which allows a gradual decrease of external controls as part of the boy's growth process and a staged return to greater freedom and in doing so help the child avoid the need for further containment in secure units over prolonged periods.

1 give us some more details about that, but it seems that
2 -- with the black exception, it seems to be like
3 a traffic light system.

4 **A. Right.**

5 Q. You worked your way up from black to green. Once you
6 got to green, what would happen? What kind of
7 privileges would you have achieved?

8 **A. What was meant to happen was that you were meant to get**
9 **more privileges outside the unit, Slemish House. Green**
10 **was an indicator that you were going to move back to the**
11 **main units, chalets or Saul House. So it's kind of like**
12 **an intermediate back to that unit, but for me I was**
13 **constant... -- once I got to amber or once I got to**
14 **green, I was knocked back down again to black or red**
15 **just for the sake of it.**

16 Q. Yes. You talk about this in paragraph --

17 **A. Can I just go to -- sorry.**

18 Q. Can I --

19 **A. Sorry. Can I just go to the bathroom, please?**

20 Q. Yes, of course.

21 **A. I need to go to the bathroom.**

22 Q. Yes, of course.

23 **A. Thank you.**

24 **(Witness withdrew)**

25 Q. Chairman, I don't know if it is necessary to rise,

1 **A. 7.45 and then to maybe 3 o'clock and the late shift**
2 **would be from 2 o'clock to 9.30.**

3 Q. And so there was that hour of overlap?

4 **A. That was to transfer any information on the boys,**
5 **anything that happened, unforeseen had happened. "Keep**
6 **an eye on this." "Do this", you know.**

7 Q. You would have had a meeting with the person --

8 **A. Yes.**

9 Q. -- who was coming on to shift after you were finishing
10 --

11 **A. Yes.**

12 Q. -- and give him that information? You were saying that
13 that happened deliberately at around 2 o'clock, because
14 the boys were in school and you were able to have --

15 **A. Yes.**

16 Q. -- that meeting at that time.

17 **A. Yes.**

18 Q. Now just a couple of things, sort of some general things
19 that the Inquiry have heard about. One of the things
20 you were saying that one of them would have been at this
21 meeting you would have talked about -- every Thursday
22 there was a meeting about marks in the school.

23 **A. Yes.**

24 Q. And decided whether children would get certain points or
25 whatever. Who would have attended that meeting on

- 9 -

Since the boy is likely to be anxious on admission to Slemish House, he should be welcomed by a member of staff already known to him who has been freed from other duties to spend sufficient time with the boy to enable him to settle in. Routines and procedures should be carefully explained to the boy and it may be useful in this process to involve selected boys from the unit. Staff from the referring unit may be required until admission procedure is completed.

- 10 -

STAFFING

"In the Secure Unit the staff are the fulcrum around which everything rotates for the child". (Hoghugh, "Troubled & Troublesome".)

Slemish House should promote a simple message in its methodology - it is as good as the people working in it! The most important resource is the staff and the process is the interaction between staff and boys and the relationships developed thereof.

The number, quality and deployment of staff very largely determines the value of the work in any residential unit and, in conditions of security, this becomes even more important as there is little or no escape from continual contact between staff and boys.

There is a very real danger that staff who have formerly worked in open conditions tend to let the physical security supervise the boys. This in turn creates lack of job satisfaction and high staff turnover. It is essential then to choose high quality staff who are supportive of each other and are fully supported by their seniors to work as a team. Differences of opinion which can occur, such as, for example, between teachers and care staff even in the open setting, become more intense under secure conditions and management skills will be constantly in demand to play down such conflicts and build up the staff team committed to the unit and boys. Adequate meetings will be provided to clear the air and alleviate staff anxieties. It must be noted that in secure conditions boys will be quick to notice staff who model any sort of anxiety and in turn they will try harder to create stress and

- 18 -

Smokers must be supervised by a member of staff who will only issue cigarettes in the appropriate area. When cigarettes are smoked, staff should ensure that the 'ends' of all cigarettes issued are in the ashtrays provided. The ends should then be disposed of.

Boys must not have cigarettes or matches/lighters in their possession.

CUTLERY CHECK:

Cutlery must be counted and accounted for before boys leave the dining room area.

Cutlery will be locked away between meals.

No boy should leave the dining area during meal time.

Kitchen knives and other dangerous articles should never be available to boys. In the event of missing cutlery, appropriate action, which may include a unit search, must automatically result.

PROHIBITED/CONTROLLED ARTICLES:

Prohibited Articles:

The most innocent objects have a potential for misuse leading to self injury, attack on others or damage to property. Staff must be constantly aware of this potential.

For this reason the following may not be allowed into the unit:

Glass in any form	Plastic bags
Drugs of any sort	Metal knives of any description
Metal combs	Any spirit-based items
Metal Nail files	Blutac or similar substances
Aerosol sprays	Chewing gum

- 19 -

Controlled articles in general use:

Round-nosed scissors	Felt-tip pens
Glue	Biros
Guillotine	String
Stapler	Compasses
Hole-punch	Needles

and any other items used in the Education Department.

These articles should be listed and counted at daily intervals by staff who have introduced them into the unit. All items should be checked out before and in after use. A record should be kept of these and signed by the teacher in charge.

- 14 -

The locking up of a boy in the single room within the unit as a control or 'time out' measure, should only be done in relation to boys already admitted to the unit.

USE OF THE LOCKED SINGLE ROOM:

The use of this room will be guarded by the criteria and principles outlined below:

1. Placement in the single locked room is an extreme measure which should be taken only when appropriate methods of control have been tried and failed.
2. No child should be placed in a single locked room as punishment.
3. A child may be placed in a single room only if:
 - (a) he is a severe risk to himself or others; or
 - (b) his continued presence in the group is likely to have an unacceptably deleterious effect on them; and
 - (c) his behaviour is such that placement in his own room is likely to create unacceptable stress for other children or cause serious damage to property.
4. Placement of a child in a single locked room must be agreed and entered in the record by the most senior member of staff on duty at the time and the placement notified to the Director/ Deputy Director as quickly as possible.
5. A child placed in a single locked room must be observed at intervals not exceeding 15 minutes, other than when the child is asleep after the unit's normal bedtime; observation should normally involve appropriate communication with the child.

- 15 -

6. A child placed in a single locked room should be released from the room as soon as the disturbance in the child's behaviour, which led to his placement, has diminished.
7. No child should be held in a single locked room for a continuous period of more than 3 hours in any period of 24 hours, except where this period expires after the unit's normal bedtime and the child is asleep, in which case the child may be left there until he awakens the next morning.
8. A record should be maintained of all placements in the single locked room showing date and time of placement, the reasons for placement, who authorised the placement, times observed and date and time of release.
9. The use of this form of secure control needs to be constantly monitored and evaluated.

OTHER CONTROLS:

The extent to which other controls are necessary will depend largely on events and circumstances. The use of physical restraint may be the only way of defusing a crisis situation and must always be carried out in a non aggressive way. Staff who show fear of this physical restraint may be regarded by the boys as 'fair game'. The use of this physical restraint must always be recorded and the senior member of staff on duty notified.

Despite all precautions, boys 'fighting the system' will try to hide on themselves objects which may have value as currency inside the

- 15 -

6. A child placed in a single locked room should be released from the room as soon as the disturbance in the child's behaviour, which led to his placement, has diminished.
7. No child should be held in a single locked room for a continuous period of more than 3 hours in any period of 24 hours, except where this period expires after the unit's normal bedtime and the child is asleep, in which case the child may be left there until he awakens the next morning.
8. A record should be maintained of all placements in the single locked room showing date and time of placement, the reasons for placement, who authorised the placement, times observed and date and time of release.
9. The use of this form of secure control needs to be constantly monitored and evaluated.

OTHER CONTROLS:

The extent to which other controls are necessary will depend largely on events and circumstances. The use of physical restraint may be the only way of defusing a crisis situation and must always be carried out in a non aggressive way. Staff who show fear of this physical restraint may be regarded by the boys as 'fair game'. The use of this physical restraint must always be recorded and the senior member of staff on duty notified.

Despite all precautions, boys 'fighting the system' will try to hide on themselves objects which may have value as currency inside the

- 20 -

STAFF INTERVENTION AND CHILD MANAGEMENT

The extreme nature of the unit's intake often means that the boys may have had a succession of placements. Many boys will have been through the establishments at different times. Some will have been in the same establishment at the same time. This can result in the arrival of an established "culture" among boys based on their previous experiences.

Many boys, after a residential career, are lost in the expectations of peers. It is important to 'break them out' of such expectations and role conformity.

Adult or staff intervention is necessary for a positive, stable and secure culture within the unit. The often impulsive, frightened and aggressive intake can produce a negative, unstable, unsafe culture rooted in bullying, thuggery, rudeness and fear. It is essential that the staff intervene when they see the emergence of such negative influences. This intervention can be achieved by a range of management techniques which we will deal with in the following pages. However, direct action by staff, which is openly observable by the rest of the boys, can be the best strategy for overall house stability.

An essential aspect of staff intervention is to be practically aware, through file information, when boys have had previous contact and to sense when the resultant 'culture' occurs and to interrupt it. These interruptions can be achieved by various methods but, no matter which method is used, these decisions must

- 16 -

unit, or as instruments to do damage to themselves, to others or the fabric of the building. Boys allowed out of the unit for visits or recreational purposes may well be under pressure to bring in prohibited articles and parents and other visitors may unwittingly or deliberately do so. Indeed, unless persuaded of the positive benefits of Slemish House by the staff, some parents and visitors may regard the unit as a challenge which they should help the boys fight against. Unobtrusive controls of visits are, therefore, a necessity. The management of the unit has taken the decision to carry out searches of boys and their rooms, rather than live with the inevitable upsets that the bringing in of prohibited articles will cause.

The manner in which these searches are carried out must be fully understood by all staff. The need for such action will be discussed openly with the boys in the hope that the establishment of mutual trust will keep the need for such action to the minimum.

All security aspects of design will be rendered ineffective if there is no sound and well understood system for admitting people into the unit and allowing them out again. Therefore, the distribution of keys must be carefully planned.

KEYS:

All staff and visitors will be admitted by the Duty Officer. The outer lobby door and inner lobby door must not be unlocked at the same time. A Duty Officer will be appointed by Senior Staff and he will be in charge of the key to all outer perimeter doors. This outer perimeter door key will be signed in and out by Duty Officer and witnessed by Senior Staff.

- 17 -

All other staff will sign for their own inside keys when reporting for duty - witnessed by Duty Officer.

Keys must be attached to staff by lead provided.

Staff are responsible for keys for which they have signed.

Any loss of keys must be reported to Senior Staff immediately.

Keys must NEVER be given to boys.

Failure to observe these rules will constitute a serious breach of discipline and will be treated as such.

SECURITY-THROUGH SUPERVISION:

Mail:

Censorship of mail is considered unacceptable. However, in the interest of security and to prevent harm to the boy or others, it is necessary to make sure that incoming mail does not contain prohibited articles. All mail must be opened in the presence of staff.

Phone:

A boy's use of the telephone will be decided at the weekly review or at the discretion of senior staff.

Smoking:

Boys under 14 years of age are not allowed to smoke. Boys under 16 years may smoke only if they have written permission from parents or guardian. Boys are allowed to smoke a maximum of 6 cigarettes per day (See 'Daily Routine')

- 18 -

Smokers must be supervised by a member of staff who will only issue cigarettes in the appropriate area. When cigarettes are smoked, staff should ensure that the 'ends' of all cigarettes issued are in the ashtrays provided. The ends should then be disposed of.

Boys must not have cigarettes or matches/lighters in their possession.

CUTLERY CHECK:

Cutlery must be counted and accounted for before boys leave the dining room area.

Cutlery will be locked away between meals.

No boy should leave the dining area during meal time.

Kitchen knives and other dangerous articles should never be available to boys. In the event of missing cutlery, appropriate action, which may include a unit search, must automatically result.

PROHIBITED/CONTROLLED ARTICLES:

Prohibited Articles:

The most innocent objects have a potential for misuse leading to self injury, attack on others or damage to property. Staff must be constantly aware of this potential.

For this reason the following may not be allowed into the unit:

Glass in any form	Plastic bags
Drugs of any sort	Metal knives of any description
Metal combs	Any spirit-based items
Metal Nail files	Blutac or similar substances
Aerosol sprays	Chewing gum

- 19 -

Controlled articles in general use:

Round-nosed scissors	Felt-tip pens
Glue	Biros
Guillotine	String
Stapler	Compasses
Hole-punch	Needles

and any other items used in the Education Department.

These articles should be listed and counted at daily intervals by staff who have introduced them into the unit. All items should be checked out before and in after use. A record should be kept of these and signed by the teacher in charge.

- 24 -

LINE-UPS:

Lining up boys is a helpful group management technique. It is particularly useful before moving children from one situation to another.

The benefits are that it:

- (a) sets a tone of order before departure.
- (b) aids distribution of children to escorts.
- (c) allows staff to state expectations clearly.
- (d) aids reception of expectations by children.
- (e) aids head count.

CALLING TOGETHER:

Calling boys together at any time can defuse/resolve difficult situations.

Quite simply, if any aspects of individual or group behaviour is of concern to staff, the group can be called together and presented with this concern.

Generally speaking, boys are reassured when they know that staff are aware of emerging situations and will often compensate or self-control when given the opportunity.

'PHASE COMPLETION':

At times, by nature of the intake and resources, daily life is hectic and staff are subject to massive demands, often as a result of requests from the boys. In such a situation staff can be rushed into decisions or action. This can leave them flustered.

- 25 -

Phase completion reduces this possibility. Simply put, 'phase completion' means completing one task before embarking on the next. This particularly applies to early morning routines. The message to boys is: "When we've done this well do that".

SETTING EXPECTATIONS:

Setting expectations is simply laying down prerequisite guidelines to the boys. This can usually be employed for meal times and activities but can be central to the management of boys in any situation.

Examples might be: "I want you to sit quietly at the table". "When we return to the unit, I want people to hang their towels on the rack and sit in the lounge". "When this film finishes, I want people to tidy the lounge and go to their rooms".

INDIVIDUAL INSTRUCTION:

While there are many indirect techniques of child management, inevitably, there is the need for direct individual instruction.

This will be most noticeable at times of individual unacceptable behaviour when boys must be told directly to "STOP".

Staff should not shirk the responsibility of this direct intervention nor should they see this as the only available technique through which they establish water-tight authority.

TONE SETTING:

Tone setting is directly to do with staff image. The image and attitudes displayed by staff have a major effect on the attitudes

- 26 -

displayed by boys and the prevailing atmosphere of the unit. A graphic example could be seen at bedtime and pre-bedtime when it is necessary to settle and calm the unit. Noisy and boisterous behaviour or horseplay by staff with boys would set an inappropriate tone - a tone which might be better applied during early morning call.

Manners, the tone of voice and mode of addressing children, demeanour of staff, vitality etc., can all be consciously employed to directly affect the tone of the unit and resultant behaviour and demeanour of the children.

DIVERSION:

Diversion is a child management technique which can be used to break down boredom, suspect pairings or groups, excitement etc. It is not necessary for children to observe or understand what is happening. Diversion can be employed across the spectrum of daily living. Diversion tactics include engaging in conversation, introducing newspaper articles or an activity or asking for help with some chore.

COUNSELLING:

"Counselling" appears in social work as a term which covers many themes from a cosy chat to psychotherapy. Counselling in the Unit involves practical discussion of behaviour and difficulties presented by individual boys. It is likely to be a response to:

- (a) adjustment to placement in the Unit.
- (b) questions asked about future-placement.
- (c) implications of past for future behaviour.

- 27 -

- (d) aspects of present behaviour and their effects.
- (e) avoiding confrontations.
- (f) ways of resolving confrontations.
- (g) preparation for future placement.
- (h) adjusting boy to management techniques.
- (i) aiding boy's recognition of patterns of behaviour.

The skills of counselling in this context are mechanical and deliberately simplistic in nature. Lengthy, involved discussions are likely to do little other than confuse the boy. However, if opportunity arises, listening to the boys is likely to help them begin to analyse their own history and problems. The elements of such counselling would include:

- (a) This aspect of your behaviour in this circumstance leads to this outcome.
- (b) This aspect of your behaviour, taken from this situation, will lead to this outcome.

Counselling often involves asking questions to try to establish the factors which affect the stability or circumstances of the boy.

ISOLATING OUT/COOLING OFF:

There are many "heat of the moment" situations between boys, or with boys which necessitate their being separated from each other or from the group. This isolating out action is to be used to give boys a chance to "cool off" and to regain their self control. This action should not be confused with a longer term additional measure of control nor would it automatically constitute, or be followed by, a sanction. In many instances, the ideal end result is an early return to the group.

- 28 -

Isolating out is best used with follow-up counselling before a boy is restored to the group. Situations where isolating out might be appropriate are:

- (a) after a physical confrontation between boys,
- (b) after a boy's refusal to follow an instruction or conform to other child management technique,
- (c) when boy is wanting to opt out of activities or education,
- (d) when a boy has been particularly boisterous and seems unable to self-control.

USE OF EARS AND EYES (AWARENESS):

A major aid to child management is simply staff keeping their ears and eyes open. It is possible to heighten hearing and observation skills and when boys realise that staff have high awareness ability much unacceptable behaviour can be prevented. Staff awareness is a key skill and one which the new or inexperienced staff should constantly work at. The inexperienced staff may lack confidence in pure child management techniques but he/she has eyes and ears which can provide information for more experienced staff to work with.

Staff in the Unit should liken their work to driving a car. It is very simple to drive in top gear very fast on the motorway. There is seemingly little danger in driving through town at 30 m.p.h. The good driver, however, is always looking ahead and preparing for the unexpected but predictable hazards which, experience teaches, can arise.

- 29 -

USE OF HUMOUR:

Humour and general cheerfulness can have a markedly positive effect on individual children and group. Care should be taken to use humour at appropriate times. Humour can short-circuit a limit-setting action by another staff distracting from the focus of attention on that staff, or desired tone at specific times. Inappropriate humour in terms of content should also be guarded against. Lewd jokes or jokes with an overt sexual or swearing content are not helpful to tone setting. Resist the temptation to be a 'good bloke' through such humour.

Do not ridicule children.

A FEW NECESSARY POINTERS:

Always know the whereabouts of your colleagues - if you move from one area to another, notify duty officer.

When a boy is put in his room, the door must be locked - not just pushed closed.

Finally, we know that, before staff can be experienced as helpful by young people, they require to have basic qualities of warmth, understanding and genuineness i.e. young people can quickly work out who the people really interested in them and their lives are.

Skills can be taught and learned by experience, these basic qualities cannot.

- 24 -

LINE-UPS:

Lining up boys is a helpful group management technique. It is particularly useful before moving children from one situation to another.

The benefits are that it:

- (a) sets a tone of order before departure.
- (b) aids distribution of children to escorts.
- (c) allows staff to state expectations clearly.
- (d) aids reception of expectations by children.
- (e) aids head count.

CALLING TOGETHER:

Calling boys together at any time can defuse/resolve difficult situations.

Quite simply, if any aspects of individual or group behaviour is of concern to staff, the group can be called together and presented with this concern.

Generally speaking, boys are reassured when they know that staff are aware of emerging situations and will often compensate or self-control when given the opportunity.

'PHASE COMPLETION':

At times, by nature of the intake and resources, daily life is hectic and staff are subject to massive demands, often as a result of requests from the boys. In such a situation staff can be rushed into decisions or action. This can leave them flustered.

- 37 -

DAILY ROUTINEMONDAY - FRIDAY:

- 8.15 a.m. Boys called and supervised into washroom and toilet area - return to own rooms where they will dress in day clothes and tidy their rooms. Boys will remain in their rooms until room is checked by staff. They will then be brought down to breakfast. After breakfast, boys will be given specific tasks to complete under supervision. These completed, where appropriate, cigarettes will be given out. (see unit smoking policy attached).
- 9.30 a.m. Class
- 10.45 a.m. Break - Cigarettes where appropriate
- 11.00 a.m. Class
- 1.00 p.m. Lunch
- 1.30 p.m. Daily staff and boys' meeting, then smoke break where appropriate
- 2.00 p.m. Class
- 3.30 p.m. Break and Recreation; smoke where appropriate.
- 4.45 p.m. Activities (Gym and Pool) - followed by shower
- 6.00 p.m. Tea - Cigarettes if appropriate
- 6.30 p.m. Indoor Activities
- 8.30 p.m. Supper and last cigarette
- 8.45 Up to rooms, changed and ready for bed by 9.00 p.m.

WEEKENDS:

Unit may have a "lie in" on Saturday and Sunday morning. Saturday morning extra cleaning may be a necessary and worthwhile exercise for the boys. Activities may be organised depending on the availability of staff and make-up of group and their attitudes. It may

- 38 -

DAILY TIME-TABLE - GENERAL GUIDE TO STAFF

The duty officer will be appointed at 8.00 a.m. each morning.

This does not necessarily mean a senior member of staff.

8.15 a.m. The duty officer must ensure that one member of staff co-ordinates boys' washing and cleaning.

All soap bags collected and put in the night control office.

Boys whose duty jobs are morning cleaning and breakfast are roused first for washing.

Slippers and pyjamas are worn outside bedrooms.

Only boys being washed and doing duty jobs should be outside their rooms at one time.

Dirty laundry has to be placed in the basket outside Night Control room.

Boys waiting for washing should tidy and clean their rooms in turn.

One morning a week the beds are to be stripped and linen placed in the laundry basket.

8.45 a.m. All boys come down the stairs together, with staff. Boys may request to have personal belongings locked away for them.

Personal belongings permitted in the unit may be brought down the stairs by boys.

Laundry duty boys bring down laundry basket.

- 39 -

On school days, only boys on open education exchange their slippers for trainers in the boot room before leaving the unit. Slippers are to be worn in the unit at all times.

Breakfast duty boy prepares and sets the table while the other boys sit in lounge area. They may use the T.V. with staff's permission.

Staff bring out cutlery and prepare breakfast.

8.50 a.m. When breakfast is ready, everyone must sit down together. A morning prayer or grace before meals should be said.

No T.V. or music played until everyone is finished and given permission to leave the table.

Breakfast duty boy clears the tables leaving one set up with four chairs.

Staff and breakfast duty boy wash, dry and count cutlery and record in log before locking away. No boy must leave the area (even to the toilet) until all cutlery is checked and locked away.

(See smoking rules)

9.30 a.m. On school days, boys go to school together. Boys going to the open school are escorted. Any absences or planned withdrawals to be reported to the teacher involved.

10.45 a.m. Break - Boys come down from class with teacher and class back-up staff. Boys from the open education to be escorted back to unit. Boys will be given mid-morning snack by staff.

- 40 -

- 11.00 a.m. Boys go back to class.
Open school boys to be escorted.
- 12.55 p.m. Open school boy escorted back to unit. Other boys back to unit as at 10.45.
Boy on lunch duty sets table - same procedures for breakfast apply.
After lunch other boy on cleaning duty hoovers unit and sweeps kitchen.
- 1.30 p.m. Same procedure for cutlery.
Boys remain in the unit with other staff.
- 1.35 p.m. Meeting of staff and boys. All boys and staff on duty must be present. Full attention is required from everyone. As individual comments are made, the boy concerned is encouraged to provide positive contributions. After 24 hour review and job allocations are completed, boys may introduce any other matters for general discussion. When the meeting is over, boys may request staff to collect personal items from their rooms. Boys may use the recreation area.
- 2.00 p.m. Boys back to class-same as after breakfast.
Escorts etc.
Staff changeover. All staff meet in the unit. Co-ordinator ensures smooth transfer of information to the next shift. i.e. appointments, general behaviour, 24 hour review and the nature of the atmosphere on the shift etc.

- 41 -

- 3.30 p.m. School finishes. Boys escorted back to unit etc.
Laundry duty boy to tidy boot room and laundry
before coming into the unit (lounge).
- 3.40 p.m. Break (snack provided by staff and selected boy).
Boys may use recreation area from now to 4.30.
Smoke rules apply.
- 4.30 p.m. Boy on tea duty sets table.
Usual procedure applies.
- 4.45 p.m. Prepare for activities
Staff should ensure suitable back-up for transport.
- 5.00 p.m. Activities.
- 6.00 p.m. Back to the unit and tea.
- 6.30 p.m. Tuck shop open. Boys may have access to parcels sent or
brought in to them. All unconsumed food or remainder
of parcels to be returned to office by staff. At
this stage staff should organise the evening's
activities in the unit. These may include table-tennis
small games, T.V. use of kitchen, Key Worker, counsell-
ing etc. A boy may wish to go to his room to read
or listen to music. The use of the "mini gym" will be
allowed only when there is unobtrusive supervision of
one boy. If more than one boy requests the use of this
facility there must be a member of staff supervising
at all times.
- 8.00 p.m. Boy on supper duty prepares supper, with staff
supervision. Recreation area to be tidied prior to
supper.
- 8.30 p.m. Supper and last cigarette. Supper duty boy clears up
kitchen - under supervision.

- 42 -

8.45 p.m. Boys go up stairs together with staff. Boy on laundry duty brings up clean clothing in basket. All boys go to rooms and change into pyjamas. Collect towels and wash-bags from Night Control Office. Wait in rooms until staff have wash facilities ready. Slippers to be worn outside of rooms. No more than two boys to wash at one time. Once a boy is settled in his room the door must be locked.

9.55 p.m. Last check on boys with night supervisor who now becomes the duty officer.

N.B: Each day should begin and end with a prayer. This time will also afford an opportunity for religious/moral guidance.

- 43 -

RULES FOR BOYS

At this stage you should already know why you are in this unit. You have now the opportunity, which you may not have taken before, to face your problems and to rethink your future.

You have been appointed a Key Worker who will discuss with you a programme for your benefit. However, all the staff are here to help work through your problems.

While you are with us we expect you to behave in an acceptable manner so that boys and staff get along together for the good of the smooth running of the unit.

Staff will always be available if you have any doubts or queries or even for a quiet chat. Do not hesitate to ask.

Boys will not leave any area within the unit without the permission of a member of staff.

Personal possessions will be taken from you and kept safely until you leave or when it is considered in your interest to have them back.

You will be given the opportunity to earn an agreed amount of pocket money. Good behaviour will be rewarded. You are not to carry cigarettes, matches or lighters at any time.

(See smoking rules).

- 44 -

You are expected to keep your bed-room clean and tidy. At all times you are expected to show concern and consideration for others in the unit by being mannerly and using proper tone of voice

When moving around the unit you are expected to do so in a quiet manner.

At all times we expect a high standard of general hygiene. Boys will attend classes during term time. There will be organised activities and boys will be expected to participate in them.

There will be daily meetings between staff and boys immediately after lunch. These meetings are an opportunity for both staff and boys to air opinions. Take this opportunity of voicing your opinions.

One of the first questions you might ask is, "When will I be getting out of here"? The answer will be, "That will be entirely up to yourself". The staff are here to help you change some of your ways but they will not succeed if we do not work together. You will be told that you will not be considered for outside education in the main school for at least three weeks and, when you have proven your trust there, you will be eligible for out of school visits. If you refuse to attend class or behave in a manner unacceptable in the classroom or are a danger to yourself or any other person (boy or staff) we will then have to put you in your own room. If you continue to misbehave in your own room we will have to isolate you in another room. These are measures that we do not enjoy using but we must remind you that they are at our disposal if we cannot work things out together.

- 45 -

RIGHTS OF BOYS

As a continuum of residential care we must ensure that the rights and needs of the boys in our care are respected.

All boys have a right to the following:

Food, clothing and comfortable accommodation

Review of their situation

Education

Medical Care

Safety

Access to legal representation

Uncensored mail

Access to phone

Privacy

Social Worker access

Complaints procedure

Protection from the use of solitary confinement

Access to family and friends where appropriate

Diet - food, if necessary

Compensationship

Exercise and fresh air

Smoking (if over 16)

Personal possessions and money

Reasons/explanation, plans, decisions

Access to personal information

Retain own identity and religious beliefs.

- 10 -

STAFFING

"In the Secure Unit the staff are the fulcrum around which everything rotates for the child". (Hoghugh, "Troubled & Troublesome".)

Slemish House should promote a simple message in its methodology - it is as good as the people working in it! The most important resource is the staff and the process is the interaction between staff and boys and the relationships developed thereof.

The number, quality and deployment of staff very largely determines the value of the work in any residential unit and, in conditions of security, this becomes even more important as there is little or no escape from continual contact between staff and boys.

There is a very real danger that staff who have formerly worked in open conditions tend to let the physical security supervise the boys. This in turn creates lack of job satisfaction and high staff turnover. It is essential then to choose high quality staff who are supportive of each other and are fully supported by their seniors to work as a team. Differences of opinion which can occur, such as, for example, between teachers and care staff even in the open setting, become more intense under secure conditions and management skills will be constantly in demand to play down such conflicts and build up the staff team committed to the unit and boys. Adequate meetings will be provided to clear the air and alleviate staff anxieties. It must be noted that in secure conditions boys will be quick to notice staff who model any sort of anxiety and in turn they will try harder to create stress and

5. THE ARRANGEMENTS FOR **SPT 81**'S CARE AND SUPERVISION IN ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

Physical Care

- 5.1 When **SPT 81** was transferred to St Patrick's he was placed in Aisling House, the reception and assessment unit. It is a new building which was opened in May 1994 to accommodate 11 boys referred from the care system. It is pleasant with a fairly domestic atmosphere. The facilities include a recreation room, dining room, kitchen and single bedrooms for all the boys. In addition there is a general office for all the staff, plus separate ones for the Team Leader and Intake Social Worker, interviews and meetings.
- 5.2 Aisling is an open unit and although there is a considerable emphasis on locking and unlocking doors it tends to be to prevent the boys gaining access to some rooms rather than to stop them leaving the building. In fact, it has five external doors which would be difficult for staff to supervise if any of the residents did show a tendency to want to leave by them. The Inspectors did have some concern about the two fire exits which are a considerable distance from most of the activities going on in the house. They were assured that they are not currently used for absconding but if it does become a problem **the Inspectors suggest that consideration should be given to fitting the doors with alarms so that staff would be aware whenever they are opened.**
- 5.3 Although this review did not include an examination of all the arrangements for the care of the boys they appeared to be well dressed and cared for. The food provided was ample and nourishing.

The Assessment Process

- 5.4 Aisling House is described by St.Patrick's as its assessment unit for "care" children. All the boys admitted to it are the subjects of Place of Safety Orders or Interim Orders for Detention. Place of Safety Orders last for a maximum of 35 days and, if it is deemed necessary to keep a boy in the unit for longer than this period, the Board or Trust that arranged for him to be admitted under the Place of Safety Order must apply to the court for an Interim Order. Each Interim Order lasts for a maximum of 35 days and up to two consecutive ones can be granted. In this way a boy can be held in Aisling for up to 15 weeks. In order for a boy to remain in the training school for longer than 15 weeks an application must be made to the court for a Training School Order and at this point he will be transferred to a long stay unit.

5. THE ARRANGEMENTS FOR **SPT 81**'S CARE AND SUPERVISION IN ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

Physical Care

- 5.1 When **SPT 81** was transferred to St Patrick's he was placed in Aisling House, the reception and assessment unit. It is a new building which was opened in May 1994 to accommodate 11 boys referred from the care system. It is pleasant with a fairly domestic atmosphere. The facilities include a recreation room, dining room, kitchen and single bedrooms for all the boys. In addition there is a general office for all the staff, plus separate ones for the Team Leader and Intake Social Worker, interviews and meetings.
- 5.2 Aisling is an open unit and although there is a considerable emphasis on locking and unlocking doors it tends to be to prevent the boys gaining access to some rooms rather than to stop them leaving the building. In fact, it has five external doors which would be difficult for staff to supervise if any of the residents did show a tendency to want to leave by them. The Inspectors did have some concern about the two fire exits which are a considerable distance from most of the activities going on in the house. They were assured that they are not currently used for absconding but if it does become a problem **the Inspectors suggest that consideration should be given to fitting the doors with alarms so that staff would be aware whenever they are opened.**
- 5.3 Although this review did not include an examination of all the arrangements for the care of the boys they appeared to be well dressed and cared for. The food provided was ample and nourishing.

The Assessment Process

- 5.4 Aisling House is described by St.Patrick's as its assessment unit for "care" children. All the boys admitted to it are the subjects of Place of Safety Orders or Interim Orders for Detention. Place of Safety Orders last for a maximum of 35 days and, if it is deemed necessary to keep a boy in the unit for longer than this period, the Board or Trust that arranged for him to be admitted under the Place of Safety Order must apply to the court for an Interim Order. Each Interim Order lasts for a maximum of 35 days and up to two consecutive ones can be granted. In this way a boy can be held in Aisling for up to 15 weeks. In order for a boy to remain in the training school for longer than 15 weeks an application must be made to the court for a Training School Order and at this point he will be transferred to a long stay unit.

- 5.5 During 1994 thirty boys were admitted to St Patrick's for assessment. The numbers of boys and their various ages are shown below:

3 boys of 11 years of age at the time of admission
5 boys of 12 years of age at the time of admission
7 boys of 13 years of age at the time of admission
5 boys of 14 years of age at the time of admission
6 boys of 15 years of age at the time of admission
4 boys of 16 years of age at the time of admission.

Eight boys representing over a quarter of admissions were of pre-teen children but if this group of younger boys is extended to include the 13 year olds, who are also legally categorised as children rather than young people, it represents half of all admissions.

- 5.6 When a boy is admitted to Aisling House he is allocated a key worker. In SPT 81's case this was a woman with a Certificate in the Residential Care of Children and Young People and long experience of residential work with children. Unless there are particular reasons otherwise, the choice of keyworker is usually based on providing an equitable distribution of work among the staff.
- 5.7 The keyworker takes a particular interest in the boy during his stay. These responsibilities include basic tasks such as checking that he has adequate clothing and ensuring that he has an adult in whom he can confide. In these aspects SPT 81 was undoubtedly well looked after. The keyworker role also entails taking the lead in the assessment process. The keyworker attempts to get to know the child both as a member of the group and during one to one sessions which are held once a week. In SPT 81's case his keyworker had three such sessions with him during his stay. Brief reports were written on these sessions which show that after the first few days he began to settle in the unit.
- 5.8 Following SPT 81's admission the Aisling House staff encouraged the Western Board staff to continue to maintain an active interest in him and they responded to this. The day after SPT 81's admission to Aisling his key worker there telephoned the Harberton keyworker and SPT 81 also had an opportunity to speak to her. Two days later the keyworker again contacted Harberton House and arranged for the staff there to keep in contact with SPT 81 every few days. Subsequently his Board keyworker telephoned SPT 81 once and wrote to him on another occasion. Contact with Mrs [REDACTED] was also encouraged.
- 5.9 The Aisling House staff and particularly SPT 81's key worker provided a number of other benefits for him during his stay. His threats to injure himself were specifically mentioned to the APRU psychologist who explored them with him and advised that they did not appear to be particularly significant. He was encouraged to behave in a manner

appropriate to his age by playing with the toys that he had brought from Harberton House and apparently this had benefits for some of the other boys who then felt able to play in such a manner. His interest in helicopters was also encouraged through material sent by the Irish Air Corps and visits to the Model Shop in Belfast. There were also other outings to Jungle Jims, to play football, to Derry to collect another boy and to Ballycastle to go fishing, all of which he appears to have enjoyed and increasingly responded well to. The reports suggest that he settled more rapidly than would be expected from the reports about him emanating from Harberton House and he was building positive relationships with the staff.

- 5.10 The move from Londonderry inevitably meant some disruption in SPT 81's education. He had been at a school that showed a large measure of tolerance for his bad behaviour but the placement in training school at least meant that his educational needs would receive attention from the teaching staff on the campus. Similarly the school was able to provide for his spiritual needs and comment is made in the records of the satisfaction that he gained from being able to act as a server at Mass.
- 5.11 The Aisling House staff kept a case file on SPT 81. When it was read by the Inspectors it was orderly and up to date but most of the entries tended to be limited to description of events that occurred and few conclusions were drawn from them. It did not sufficiently demonstrate what the residential social workers were doing, the progress that was being made in the assessment or the achievement of other objectives.
- 5.12 The use of a more structured approach to the assessment such as the Problem Profile Analysis that is in use in another training school might provide the assessment process with a greater focus. At present it is not always possible to determine the basis on which the recommendations have been made to the courts and referring agencies during and at the end of the assessment. **The Inspectors recommend that consideration should be given to providing a more structured approach to the assessment process.**
- 5.13 From the other end the Western Board continued to show a commitment to SPT 81. Three members of its staff attended the initial case review and brought Mrs [REDACTED] with them. Two weeks later one of the residential social workers from the children's home visited SPT 81 in St. Patrick's. There is no evidence to suggest that the Board interest in him would have diminished if the placement had continued as planned or that they would not have fully co-operated in any plans to return him to their care if such a course of action had been recommended.

Control and Discipline

- 5.14 The Inspectors were told that the preferred sanctions for misbehaviour in Aisling House are small deductions of pocket money or the loss of

privileges such as trips out of the school. However, the low staffing levels sometimes mean that when a child has lost such a privilege he has to be taken anyway because there are insufficient people on duty to supervise both the group going out and anyone being made to remain behind.

- 5.15 Aisling House has two rooms, known as "quiet rooms". They are in fact secure accommodation in that they are used to lock up a child so that his liberty is restricted. The furniture is limited to a mattress on the floor and a soft upholstered cube. The records show that between the time that Aisling House was opened and the Inspectors' visit these rooms were used 92 times, on occasions as a response to quite minor misbehaviour. **SPT 81** was only placed in a quiet room once for eight minutes when he threatened to hit another boy with a pool cue and was verbally abusive to members of staff. In the Inspectors' view the use of locked rooms is an unacceptable response to misbehaviour by disturbed children who may be as young as ten years of age. If a child needs to be removed from the group either for his own protection or the protection of others he should be taken to his bedroom by a member of staff who should remain with him.
- 5.16 Reference to paragraph 2.26 shows that **SPT 81** was removed to Slemish House on his second night at St Patrick's. The records show that he had been demanding to have his light left on and that he had used "spicy" language to the night supervisor. This behaviour does not appear to justify the use of secure accommodation. **Consequently it is recommended that the use of such accommodation as a response to misbehaviour should be reviewed.**
- 5.17 Currently there is no legislation in force on the use of secure accommodation in Northern Ireland. However, Article 44 of the new Children (NI) Order 1995, which will be implemented within the next two years states that a child may not be placed in secure accommodation unless it appears that:
- "(i) he has a history of absconding and is likely to abscond from any other description of accommodation; and
- "(ii) if he absconds he is likely to suffer significant harm; or
- "that if he is kept in any other description of accommodation he is likely to injure himself or other persons."
- 5.18 In addition it is anticipated that when the Order is implemented it will be accompanied by Regulations similar to those emanating from the English Children Act 1989 which further restrict the use of secure accommodation. In the Inspectors' view many of the situations in which the quiet rooms and Slemish House are currently being used will not be possible under the new legislation and are not desirable as good practice today.

privileges such as trips out of the school. However, the low staffing levels sometimes mean that when a child has lost such a privilege he has to be taken anyway because there are insufficient people on duty to supervise both the group going out and anyone being made to remain behind.

- 5.15 Aisling House has two rooms, known as "quiet rooms". They are in fact secure accommodation in that they are used to lock up a child so that his liberty is restricted. The furniture is limited to a mattress on the floor and a soft upholstered cube. The records show that between the time that Aisling House was opened and the Inspectors' visit these rooms were used 92 times, on occasions as a response to quite minor misbehaviour. **SPT 81** was only placed in a quiet room once for eight minutes when he threatened to hit another boy with a pool cue and was verbally abusive to members of staff. In the Inspectors' view the use of locked rooms is an unacceptable response to misbehaviour by disturbed children who may be as young as ten years of age. If a child needs to be removed from the group either for his own protection or the protection of others he should be taken to his bedroom by a member of staff who should remain with him.
- 5.16 Reference to paragraph 2.26 shows that **SPT 81** was removed to Slemish House on his second night at St Patrick's. The records show that he had been demanding to have his light left on and that he had used "spicy" language to the night supervisor. This behaviour does not appear to justify the use of secure accommodation. **Consequently it is recommended that the use of such accommodation as a response to misbehaviour should be reviewed.**
- 5.17 Currently there is no legislation in force on the use of secure accommodation in Northern Ireland. However, Article 44 of the new Children (NI) Order 1995, which will be implemented within the next two years states that a child may not be placed in secure accommodation unless it appears that:
- "(i) he has a history of absconding and is likely to abscond from any other description of accommodation; and
- "(ii) if he absconds he is likely to suffer significant harm; or
- "that if he is kept in any other description of accommodation he is likely to injure himself or other persons."
- 5.18 In addition it is anticipated that when the Order is implemented it will be accompanied by Regulations similar to those emanating from the English Children Act 1989 which further restrict the use of secure accommodation. In the Inspectors' view many of the situations in which the quiet rooms and Slemish House are currently being used will not be possible under the new legislation and are not desirable as good practice today.

1 didn't treat you well?

2 A. I know they didn't.

3 Q. But the you learned --

4 A. I loved it.

5 Q. -- through that?

6 **A. Yes.**

7 Q. So that was something that St. Patrick's had organised
8 for you to learn. I was discussing with you could you
9 remember Mr Murphy doing these check-ups and you don't
10 really remember that?

11 A. No, I don't remember any welfare officer. It makes me
12 laugh in all honesty. I'm not being disrespectful, but
13 it makes me laugh when I hear "welfare officer", you
14 know, and aftercare.

15 Q. And the -- what I want to do, HIA100, is look at some of
16 the allegations that you have described in your
17 statement, and if we look at paragraph 7 at 048, I want
18 to ask you, first, about the arrangements at night-time
19 in the dormitory.

20 I was asking you could you remember the
21 nightwatchmen, as it were, and I named two to you,
22 SPT23 and SPT150 .

23 A. Uh-huh.

24 Q. You were saying you don't really remember
25 a nightwatchman?

5.28 Incidents of absconding from Aisling House are recorded in a book and on the child's file. The information, together with similar data from the other house units is collected centrally and is forwarded to the NIO. However, it is not analysed and returned to St Patrick's in a form that would enable the senior staff to determine any remedial action that might be appropriate. One of the outcomes of the study in the other training school was the introduction of a more detailed information system to allow the problem to be monitored. In the Inspectors' view similar information should be readily available to staff in St.Patrick's. It could be done by analysing the information currently forwarded to the Northern Ireland Office so that the management staff can adopt a strategic approach to tackling the problem. **It is recommended that an information system should be developed to enable staff to monitor absconding and enable them to adopt a strategic approach to tackling the problem.**

5.29 Where absconding has become established in an institution, as appears to be the case in St.Patrick's, there needs to be a fundamental review of the care arrangements. To some extent this was done in the other training school with beneficial results. A similar exercise should be undertaken at St.Patrick's and the results kept under review. In this way it should be possible to reduce the level of absconding. Failure to take such action would leave the school open to the charge that it had not taken sufficient steps to address what is seen to be a serious problem. **It is recommended that a fundamental review of the care arrangements should be conducted to identify ways of reducing the level of absconding.**

5.30 Nevertheless, since the events covered by this review took place some beneficial changes have occurred. For example, in paragraph 2.42 it is mentioned that an hour elapsed between the time it was noticed that the boys were missing and their disappearance was reported to the police. The staff used this time to search the surrounding area. Since then the staff have been instructed to notify the RUC as soon as a boy's absence is noticed. **It is, however, recommended that this change in procedures should be incorporated into a revised manual of guidance for staff.**

Staffing

5.31 The Northern Ireland Office funds St.Patrick's to staff the school according to the Castle Priory formula. At the time of SPT 81's placement the calculations were based on an assumption that there was a waking week of 80 hours in all the units but the ratio of staff to bed spaces varied between them. In Slemish the ratio was 1:2; in Aisling, 1:3.5 and in the long stay units, 1:4. In the case of Aisling NIO allowed for 7.5 staff including the Team Leader. In fact only 6 staff were employed within the unit for 11 boys, which compares poorly with Harberton House's 9.5 for 10 children. **It is recommended that St Patrick's management should ensure that Aisling House is at least staffed to the levels allowed for in the funding provided by the Northern Ireland Office**

- 6 -

SUMMARY OF CONCLUSIONS

(1) The level of staffing was adequate and in keeping with staffing policy. However, the necessity to take two boys back from weekend leave placed extra stress on staff and group of boys.

(2) The reason for deciding to take the boys on an outing was good child care practice for the following reasons:

(a) Staff were aware that two boys were unsettled after returning and took steps to alleviate the situation. The decision to take them out would have been a good diversionary tactic.

(b) It would have minimised the effect of the bands, parades and general festivities which were clearly audible in the Unit.

(3) The Investigatory Committee examined Mr Brady's decision to leave five boys and go to seek out **NL 260**. **NL 260** is a seriously disturbed boy so Mr Brady's anxiety about his sudden disappearance was justified. The difficulty Mr Brady experienced was how to harmonise his concern for the boy out of sight and at the same time observe the five boys on the nearby pitch. Whatever decision he made in this dilemma was likely to have repercussions.

*help from
other units?
- eg, RSW from
Chapel St. helped
our earlier
leaving 2 RSWs
in charge of 4
boys 0 left in
charge of 5 at
one stage!*

- esp when admission of boys of unstable status amongst the gp.

(4) The time it took **SPT 57** to collect the minibus was checked by the Investigatory Committee. They walked from Aisling House to the point where keys are collected and found that 12/15 minutes was the minimum time in which this exercise could be carried out.

(5) RECOMMENDATION

THE MANNER OF COLLECTING THE MINIBUS WAS EXAMINED AND WE RECOMMEND THAT IN SUCH CIRCUMSTANCES CARE STAFF SHOULD TAKE THE BOYS WITH THEM WHEN GOING TO COLLECT THE MINIBUS, SO AS TO HAVE MAXIMUM SUPERVISION.

(6) The Board recognises that even with maximum supervision, boys may still abscond.

The supervision could hardly be described as 'maximum'.

5.28 Incidents of absconding from Aisling House are recorded in a book and on the child's file. The information, together with similar data from the other house units is collected centrally and is forwarded to the NIO. However, it is not analysed and returned to St Patrick's in a form that would enable the senior staff to determine any remedial action that might be appropriate. One of the outcomes of the study in the other training school was the introduction of a more detailed information system to allow the problem to be monitored. In the Inspectors' view similar information should be readily available to staff in St.Patrick's. It could be done by analysing the information currently forwarded to the Northern Ireland Office so that the management staff can adopt a strategic approach to tackling the problem. **It is recommended that an information system should be developed to enable staff to monitor absconding and enable them to adopt a strategic approach to tackling the problem.**

5.29 Where absconding has become established in an institution, as appears to be the case in St.Patrick's, there needs to be a fundamental review of the care arrangements. To some extent this was done in the other training school with beneficial results. A similar exercise should be undertaken at St.Patrick's and the results kept under review. In this way it should be possible to reduce the level of absconding. Failure to take such action would leave the school open to the charge that it had not taken sufficient steps to address what is seen to be a serious problem. **It is recommended that a fundamental review of the care arrangements should be conducted to identify ways of reducing the level of absconding.**

5.30 Nevertheless, since the events covered by this review took place some beneficial changes have occurred. For example, in paragraph 2.42 it is mentioned that an hour elapsed between the time it was noticed that the boys were missing and their disappearance was reported to the police. The staff used this time to search the surrounding area. Since then the staff have been instructed to notify the RUC as soon as a boy's absence is noticed. **It is, however, recommended that this change in procedures should be incorporated into a revised manual of guidance for staff.**

Staffing

5.31 The Northern Ireland Office funds St.Patrick's to staff the school according to the Castle Priory formula. At the time of SPT 81's placement the calculations were based on an assumption that there was a waking week of 80 hours in all the units but the ratio of staff to bed spaces varied between them. In Slemish the ratio was 1:2; in Aisling, 1:3.5 and in the long stay units, 1:4. In the case of Aisling NIO allowed for 7.5 staff including the Team Leader. In fact only 6 staff were employed within the unit for 11 boys, which compares poorly with Harberton House's 9.5 for 10 children. **It is recommended that St Patrick's management should ensure that Aisling House is at least staffed to the levels allowed for in the funding provided by the Northern Ireland Office**

- 5.32 The 80 hour working week assumes that house units are not staffed during school hours. This is probably a reasonable assumption in long stay units particularly if the boys remain in school for their lunches. However, in an assessment unit there is a considerable amount of work to be done in addition to the direct care of the boys as a group. The process requires one-to-one work, report writing, attendance at intake and case reviews and liaison with the staff of Boards and Trusts. In the past the school has argued that the waking week is in excess of 100 hours per week. There is some validity in this argument although, in the Inspectors' view, it is probably not necessary to have three people on duty during the time that the boys are school. It would, however, be justified during the school holidays. If the argument for a 100 hour waking week is accepted it would bring Aisling's staffing needs to over 11 people, almost double the current six. **It is recommended that the funding made available by the Northern Ireland Office for staffing Aisling House should be reviewed.** This would, however, need to be tied to an increased staffing level generally.
- 5.33 It appears, then, that Aisling is significantly understaffed both in terms of the needs currently accepted by the NIO and considerably more in terms of the waking week that the school argues is justified. Possibly partly because of this level of understaffing there are some aspects of the cover provided in Aisling which cause the Inspectors some concern. The staff of the unit are divided into two teams of three, one of which includes the Team Leader. This arrangement means that he is only regularly on duty with half his team which must create difficulties for his supervision of the other half. Reports in other parts of the United Kingdom have also highlighted the dangers of small closed groups of staff working together. **The Inspectors recommend that the Team Leader be removed from the duty rota to enable him to devote his time to the management of his staff.**
- 5.34 The present staffing complement of six barely allows for the normal number of hours in a week to be covered without taking into account additional demands created by sickness and leave commitments. Possibly because of this a considerable number of "additional hours" are worked. These are hours in addition to the normal 37 hour week that staff work. Reference to paragraphs 2.37 to 2.39 shows that one of the members of staff on duty the day that **SPT 81** and the other four boys absconded was actually based in Saul but worked additional hours in Aisling. He told the Inspectors that in the past he has worked as many as 100 hours per month in addition to his normal hours. In the Inspectors' view the practice of moving staff between units in this way significantly undermines the benefits of accommodating children in small house units rather than in a large school setting. **It is recommended that each house should be staffed to provide adequate cover without having to rely on the assistance of others.**

1 **A. Increased.**

2 Q. -- increased. It doubled effectively from what you were
3 saying to me.

4 **A. Yes. When I started off, there was -- there were two**
5 **Brothers and myself on one shift and two Brothers and**
6 **another lay member of staff on the other shift.**

7 Q. And then it became the case that you had six?

8 **A. Then it came -- it was practically double then, yes.**

9 Q. I was just asking just what your role as a
10 actually entailed in the training school.

11 **A. Well, what it actually entailed at that time was getting**
12 **the boys up in the morning. There were four**
13 **dormitories, and when I started, they were open**
14 **dormitories. They subsequently became single rooms, but**
15 **there were about -- I think about fifteen in each dorm**
16 **and there were four dorms, L-shaped, two L-shaped dorms**
17 **on each floor. You had to get the boys up in the**
18 **morning, washed, down to breakfast and subsequently sent**
19 **to their various departments.**

20 Q. Those are the departments you were talking about, the
21 building trade --

22 **A. Yes.**

23 Q. -- and the metalwork and so forth?

24 **A. That's correct, yes.**

25 Q. Then during the time the boys were engaged in their

1 I can't stand over the figure exactly, but maybe up in
2 the region of twenty staff. We were putting three or
3 four staff through every year, which is quite a big
4 commitment, given the costs involved.

5 Q. Uh-huh, and generally about staff, the issue of staff
6 meetings and staff supervision, what was your experience
7 of that?

8 A. Well, there were regular staff meetings. I think they
9 were weekly meetings. I would have attended some of
10 those. Staff supervision probably wasn't at the -- that
11 might have been one of the criticisms -- probably wasn't
12 as intense and as focused as it should have been. So
13 ...

14 Q. Uh-huh.

15 A. And it wasn't -- I mean, we were working under
16 regulations that didn't require and insist that you had
17 -- the regulations were very archaic. They were 1953,
18 the training school regulations. They were never
19 changed until the 1990s actually.

20 Q. So do you feel there was sufficient opportunity for
21 staff to discuss practice issues about, you know, their
22 own practice and how they were working with the boys or
23 was that --

24 A. Well, the meetings generally would concentrate on --
25 there was a marks system. I am talking about in the

PRIVATE

HIA REF: SPT 52

Witness Name: SPT 52

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF SPT 52

I, SPT 52, will say as follows:-

1. I was employed as a housemaster at St Patrick's Training school in 1967 and worked there in various roles until my retirement in 1996. I was promoted to the position of Assistant Director (Justice) during the 1980s and was then appointed as Deputy Director (Care) in the early 1990s. This was the position I held until my retirement.
2. I am now aware that allegations have been made against me by HIA 384 who was previously known as HIA 384. I am aware of who HIA 384 is and recollect him fairly well. I considered him to be quite vulnerable and was always seeking attention. I am aware that HIA 384 was the subject of proceedings in Dublin on two occasions after he absconded from the Training School. I do recollect that I had to attend a number of hearings in relation to his cases. I believe that I had contacted the Northern Ireland Office in relation to these cases. I also believe that on one occasion I had to ask members of staff to go to Galway to collect him on an occasion when he absconded.
3. It has been alleged that HIA 384 approached me and made a complaint about abuse/bullying which he was supposed to be suffering in the Training School. I can categorically state that any complaint he made to me was dealt with in accordance with the protocols in place. I would always make the other staff

1 St. Patrick's for many, many years.

2 **A. They were totally committed to the work and to the**
3 **well-being of the young people that they were working**
4 **with.**

5 Q. And you found that both with Brothers, because it was
6 their vocation, but also with many of the civilian staff
7 --

8 **A. Absolutely.**

9 Q. -- who came to work in St. Patrick's?

10 **A. Absolutely, and some of them would have told me on their**
11 **retirement that the happiest years of their life --**
12 **their working life was in St. Pat's, difficult and all**
13 **as it was at times, and there were times it was**
14 **extremely difficult, yes.**

15 Q. There were certain matters that the Panel is aware of
16 that the Order accepts were not dealt with appropriately
17 in St. Patrick's. One example of that was DL137, the
18 [REDACTED], who came to BR95, who was then the
19 [REDACTED], attention in [REDACTED] for propositioning boys
20 and then again in [REDACTED] brought by SPT53 to his attention
21 and ultimately this sequence of events that result in
22 his resignation. I think it was you and SPT53 who
23 witnessed him -- his resigning in effect. The Panel is
24 aware that BR95 does not seem to have reported that --
25 those issues about DL137 either to the Board of

1 us, and I think we should record, although I think we
2 did record before, that you have been here I think
3 virtually every day when evidence was given in relation
4 to St. Patrick's. Thank you very much for coming again
5 today.

6 **A. Can I finally, Chairman, say one other thing?**

7 Q. Of course.

8 **A. If I were to start all over again, the one place I would**
9 **have liked to work would be St. Patrick's Training**
10 **School, be it Milltown and the Glen Road. Thank you.**

11 Q. Thank you.

12 (Witness withdrew)

13 MR AIKEN: Chairman, that concludes today's oral evidence.

14 (3.15 pm)

15 (Inquiry adjourned until 10 o'clock tomorrow morning)

16 --ooOoo--

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

1 one wing was the junior wing and one wing was the senior
2 wing and they were quite separate --

3 **A. Yes.**

4 Q. -- at that time. This is before --

5 **A. There is a full corridor separating the two, two**
6 **schools.**

7 Q. And I wondered how many staff looked after the junior
8 school that you were in?

9 **A. When I went in, I would say five or six --**

10 Q. Okay.

11 **A. -- and that would be split between two shift.**

12 Q. So there might have been three on a shift?

13 **A. There could have been two started early in the morning,**
14 **someone coming in between and then two the rest of the**
15 **evening.**

16 Q. So maximum maybe about five in total all day?

17 **A. You would never have five on.**

18 Q. Together?

19 **A. No.**

20 Q. So maximum of three?

21 **A. Until later -- until later years, you know.**

22 Q. But in the early days?

23 **A. No. It was ...**

24 Q. I was wondering if -- how -- how many lay staff there
25 would have been in comparison to Brothers or -- can you

- 5.28 Incidents of absconding from Aisling House are recorded in a book and on the child's file. The information, together with similar data from the other house units is collected centrally and is forwarded to the NIO. However, it is not analysed and returned to St Patrick's in a form that would enable the senior staff to determine any remedial action that might be appropriate. One of the outcomes of the study in the other training school was the introduction of a more detailed information system to allow the problem to be monitored. In the Inspectors' view similar information should be readily available to staff in St.Patrick's. It could be done by analysing the information currently forwarded to the Northern Ireland Office so that the management staff can adopt a strategic approach to tackling the problem. **It is recommended that an information system should be developed to enable staff to monitor absconding and enable them to adopt a strategic approach to tackling the problem.**
- 5.29 Where absconding has become established in an institution, as appears to be the case in St.Patrick's, there needs to be a fundamental review of the care arrangements. To some extent this was done in the other training school with beneficial results. A similar exercise should be undertaken at St.Patrick's and the results kept under review. In this way it should be possible to reduce the level of absconding. Failure to take such action would leave the school open to the charge that it had not taken sufficient steps to address what is seen to be a serious problem. **It is recommended that a fundamental review of the care arrangements should be conducted to identify ways of reducing the level of absconding.**
- 5.30 Nevertheless, since the events covered by this review took place some beneficial changes have occurred. For example, in paragraph 2.42 it is mentioned that an hour elapsed between the time it was noticed that the boys were missing and their disappearance was reported to the police. The staff used this time to search the surrounding area. Since then the staff have been instructed to notify the RUC as soon as a boy's absence is noticed. **It is, however, recommended that this change in procedures should be incorporated into a revised manual of guidance for staff.**

Staffing

- 5.31 The Northern Ireland Office funds St.Patrick's to staff the school according to the Castle Priory formula. At the time of SPT 81's placement the calculations were based on an assumption that there was a waking week of 80 hours in all the units but the ratio of staff to bed spaces varied between them. In Slemish the ratio was 1:2; in Aisling, 1:3.5 and in the long stay units, 1:4. In the case of Aisling NIO allowed for 7.5 staff including the Team Leader. In fact only 6 staff were employed within the unit for 11 boys, which compares poorly with Harberton House's 9.5 for 10 children. **It is recommended that St Patrick's management should ensure that Aisling House is at least staffed to the levels allowed for in the funding provided by the Northern Ireland Office**

- 5.32 The 80 hour working week assumes that house units are not staffed during school hours. This is probably a reasonable assumption in long stay units particularly if the boys remain in school for their lunches. However, in an assessment unit there is a considerable amount of work to be done in addition to the direct care of the boys as a group. The process requires one-to-one work, report writing, attendance at intake and case reviews and liaison with the staff of Boards and Trusts. In the past the school has argued that the waking week is in excess of 100 hours per week. There is some validity in this argument although, in the Inspectors' view, it is probably not necessary to have three people on duty during the time that the boys are school. It would, however, be justified during the school holidays. If the argument for a 100 hour waking week is accepted it would bring Aisling's staffing needs to over 11 people, almost double the current six. **It is recommended that the funding made available by the Northern Ireland Office for staffing Aisling House should be reviewed.** This would, however, need to be tied to an increased staffing level generally.
- 5.33 It appears, then, that Aisling is significantly understaffed both in terms of the needs currently accepted by the NIO and considerably more in terms of the waking week that the school argues is justified. Possibly partly because of this level of understaffing there are some aspects of the cover provided in Aisling which cause the Inspectors some concern. The staff of the unit are divided into two teams of three, one of which includes the Team Leader. This arrangement means that he is only regularly on duty with half his team which must create difficulties for his supervision of the other half. Reports in other parts of the United Kingdom have also highlighted the dangers of small closed groups of staff working together. **The Inspectors recommend that the Team Leader be removed from the duty rota to enable him to devote his time to the management of his staff.**
- 5.34 The present staffing complement of six barely allows for the normal number of hours in a week to be covered without taking into account additional demands created by sickness and leave commitments. Possibly because of this a considerable number of "additional hours" are worked. These are hours in addition to the normal 37 hour week that staff work. Reference to paragraphs 2.37 to 2.39 shows that one of the members of staff on duty the day that **SPT 81** and the other four boys absconded was actually based in Saul but worked additional hours in Aisling. He told the Inspectors that in the past he has worked as many as 100 hours per month in addition to his normal hours. In the Inspectors' view the practice of moving staff between units in this way significantly undermines the benefits of accommodating children in small house units rather than in a large school setting. **It is recommended that each house should be staffed to provide adequate cover without having to rely on the assistance of others.**

- 5.32 The 80 hour working week assumes that house units are not staffed during school hours. This is probably a reasonable assumption in long stay units particularly if the boys remain in school for their lunches. However, in an assessment unit there is a considerable amount of work to be done in addition to the direct care of the boys as a group. The process requires one-to-one work, report writing, attendance at intake and case reviews and liaison with the staff of Boards and Trusts. In the past the school has argued that the waking week is in excess of 100 hours per week. There is some validity in this argument although, in the Inspectors' view, it is probably not necessary to have three people on duty during the time that the boys are school. It would, however, be justified during the school holidays. If the argument for a 100 hour waking week is accepted it would bring Aisling's staffing needs to over 11 people, almost double the current six. **It is recommended that the funding made available by the Northern Ireland Office for staffing Aisling House should be reviewed.** This would, however, need to be tied to an increased staffing level generally.
- 5.33 It appears, then, that Aisling is significantly understaffed both in terms of the needs currently accepted by the NIO and considerably more in terms of the waking week that the school argues is justified. Possibly partly because of this level of understaffing there are some aspects of the cover provided in Aisling which cause the Inspectors some concern. The staff of the unit are divided into two teams of three, one of which includes the Team Leader. This arrangement means that he is only regularly on duty with half his team which must create difficulties for his supervision of the other half. Reports in other parts of the United Kingdom have also highlighted the dangers of small closed groups of staff working together. **The Inspectors recommend that the Team Leader be removed from the duty rota to enable him to devote his time to the management of his staff.**
- 5.34 The present staffing complement of six barely allows for the normal number of hours in a week to be covered without taking into account additional demands created by sickness and leave commitments. Possibly because of this a considerable number of "additional hours" are worked. These are hours in addition to the normal 37 hour week that staff work. Reference to paragraphs 2.37 to 2.39 shows that one of the members of staff on duty the day that **SPT 81** and the other four boys absconded was actually based in Saul but worked additional hours in Aisling. He told the Inspectors that in the past he has worked as many as 100 hours per month in addition to his normal hours. In the Inspectors' view the practice of moving staff between units in this way significantly undermines the benefits of accommodating children in small house units rather than in a large school setting. **It is recommended that each house should be staffed to provide adequate cover without having to rely on the assistance of others.**

- 5.35 The events of that weekend also raise a number of other staffing issues that the Inspectors think need attention. The member of staff mentioned above was planning to work four shifts in a weekend. Reference to the staffing cover for that week shows that **SPT 81**'s key worker was on duty for the following hours in the days before the absconding:-

Thursday 11th August	2pm - 11pm (9 hours)
Friday 12th August	8am - 10pm (14 hours)
Saturday 13th August	8am - 10pm (14 hours)
Sunday 14th August	8am - 3pm (7 hours)

The Inspectors were also told that the normal duty rota entails staff working on two weekends during a four week cycle. It is intended that they should work one shift on the Saturday followed by another on the Sunday. However, it has apparently become common practice for members of staff to arrange between themselves for one of them to cover the whole of Saturday and the other to cover the whole of Sunday. Staff cannot remain fresh and capable of responding adequately to the demands of difficult and disturbed young people if they are working such long hours. These arrangements may suit the staff in giving them either additional payments or days when they do not need to come to work but they are not in the interests of the boys. **It is recommended that double shifts and other long periods of duty should cease.**

- 5.36 Given the inadequacy of the present staffing levels the Inspectors were surprised to note that almost every day at least one person is on what is termed "mid duty", that is they work from about 10.30am to 2.15pm; times when the children should be in school. They were told that these hours are worked in order to make up the 37 hour week. **It is recommended that the staff hours used in "mid duty" shifts should be used to provide better staff coverage at weekends.**
- 5.37 On the morning of 14th August at least three of the house units in St. Patrick's had only one member of staff on duty in each. Such a level of staffing is not adequate to ensure safety in simply supervising the children and certainly does not allow for any individual work to be undertaken with them. **The Inspectors recommend that at least two people should be on duty in each house at all times when children are present irrespective of the number of them.** It would be preferable if staffing were so arranged that there were three staff present at times when children are in the unit.
- 5.38 There are also two matters relating to management that require attention. The first is that the problems over finding adequate cover for Saul on Sunday 14th August appear to have been left to the residential social worker on duty to resolve in spite of the fact that he maintains that he informed a member of the senior management team of the difficulty. Ensuring that there is adequate staff cover is, of course, a primary

responsibility of management and should not be left to RSW staff to resolve. **It is recommended that management should take responsibility for ensuring that house units are adequately staffed**

- 5.39 The second is that there does not appear to be an adequate system of providing senior staff cover in the event of difficulties. The Inspectors were told that if staff on duty need to contact a member of the senior management team they are expected to dial an extension number and then wait until someone gets back to them. They were also told that there is sometimes a delay of up to 20 minutes before anyone responds and, on occasions there has been no response at all and additional time has been spent in seeking assistance from the brothers' house. This arrangement is unacceptable. **It is recommended that a member of the Senior Management Team should always be available on the campus and that staff should have a means of gaining direct and immediate access to him.**

12. It is recommended that an information system should be developed to enable staff to monitor absconding and develop a strategic approach to tackling the problem. (Paragraph 5.28)
13. A fundamental review of the care arrangements should be conducted to identify ways of reducing the level of absconding. (Paragraph 5.29)
14. It is recommended that the recent change in the procedures whereby the Police are informed that boys are missing immediately their absence is noted should be incorporated into a revised manual of guidance for staff. (Paragraph 5.30)
15. St.Patrick's management should ensure that Aisling House is staffed to the levels allowed for in the funding provided by the Northern Ireland Office. (Paragraph 5.31)
16. It is recommended that the funding made available by the Northern Ireland Office to staff Aisling House should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.32)
17. The Team Leader should be removed from the duty rota to enable him to concentrate on the management of his staff. (Paragraph 5.33)
18. Each house should be staffed to provide adequate cover without having to draw staff from other units. (Paragraph 5.34)
19. Double shifts and other long periods of duty should cease. (Paragraph 5.35)
20. The staff hours used in "mid duty" shifts should be used to provide better coverage at weekends. (Paragraph 5.36)
21. It is recommended that at least two people should be on duty in each unit at all times when children are present. (Paragraph 5.36)
22. Management should take responsibility for ensuring that house units have adequate staff cover at all times. (Paragraph 5.37)
23. A member of the senior management team should be available on the campus at all times and staff should have a means of gaining direct access to him. (Paragraph 5.38)

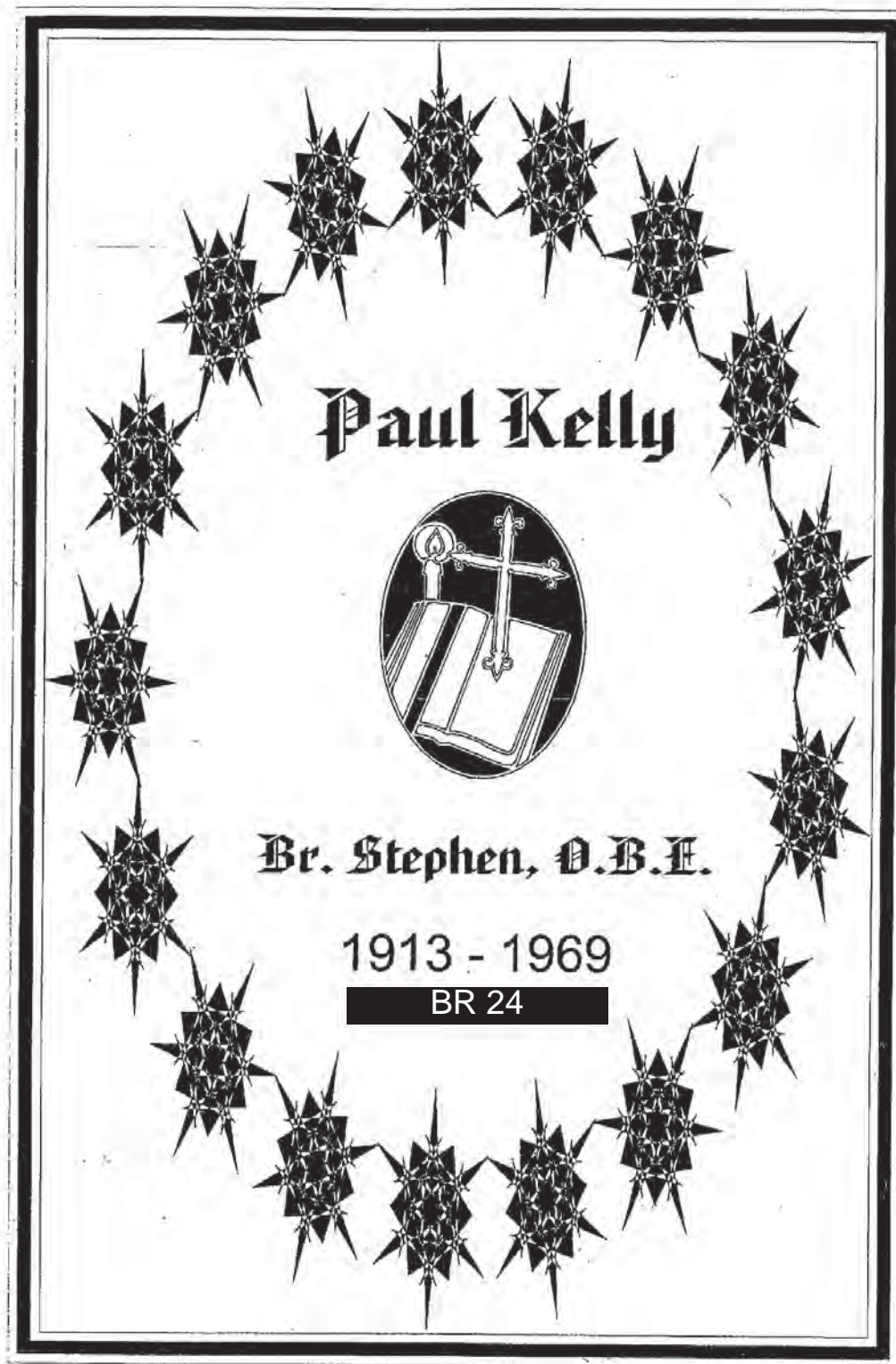
an absconder and did not return to Belfast until after midnight. The RSW told the Inspectors that he had told one of the school's senior management team on Saturday morning and again after Mass on Saturday evening that there did not appear to be anyone available to cover Saul House on the Sunday. As far as he was aware no plans were made to cover this. Consequently when he awoke on the Sunday morning he telephoned the night supervisor in Saul and found that no one had reported for duty. He came to St. Patrick's and telephoned SPT 81's keyworker who was on duty in Aisling and advised her of the problem. She told him that all the boys were still asleep and that she could manage without his help. As a result he decided to let the night supervisor go home and phoned the staff member who had gone to Galway. He agreed to shower and come in to work. The RSW decided that he would cover Saul until he was relieved.

2.39 When the RSW was relieved by his colleague he went to Aisling. By that time it had been reported that the weekend leave arrangements of two Aisling boys had broken down and their parents had requested that they be returned to the school. As a result SPT 81's key worker left to collect them accompanied by another RSW who worked in Chalet 1. This arrangement left Aisling, Saul and Chalet 1 with only one member of staff on duty in each.

2.40 The RSW was left in Aisling supervising four boys (SPT 81, [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]). SPT 81 and [REDACTED] were playing with a football, [REDACTED] was playing with a frisbee on the other side of the building and the RSW was talking to [REDACTED].

2.41 SPT 81's key worker and the RSW from Chalet 1 returned with the first boy ([REDACTED]) at about 12.45pm and he went into the house. They then left again to collect the other ([REDACTED]), returning at about 2.50pm after which the key worker went off duty having been relieved by another residential social worker who had come on duty at 2.30. For the first time that day there were two members of staff in Aisling House. They both felt that the group was becoming increasingly unsettled and decided to take them out in the minibus. At that stage four of the boys (SPT 81, [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]) were outside playing football and [REDACTED] was still playing with his frisbee. The Saul House RSW arranged to get the keys for the minibus from the brothers' house. He suggested that the four boys who were playing football should accompany him but they did not want to. He then left his colleague with the six boys. This RSW entered the house apparently wanting to check on the whereabouts of the boy [REDACTED], although in fact he was still outside playing with his frisbee where he had been for some time. While they were thus unsupervised the five boys absconded. This was at 3.30pm.

2.42 When the Saul RSW returned his colleague told him that "all" the boys had gone although one of them, [REDACTED], turned out still to be there. When asked, he said that he did not know where the others had gone. The two RSWs



*Mourn for the man of amplest influence,
Foremost captain of his time,
Rich in saving common-sense,
And, as the greatest only are,
In his simplicity sublime.*

- Tennyson

This account of the work of Brother
Stephen Kelly, O.B.E., on behalf of young
people in need was written by the late

BR 24

Brother Canice Cantwell designed the cover.

In memoriam

BROTHER STEPHEN PAUL KELLY

The poet tells us that, "Some there are, by their good works exalted, lofty minds and meditative, authors of delight and happiness, which to the end of time will live, and spread, and kindle: such minds haply have received that first mild touch of sympathy and thought, in which they found their kindred with a world where want and sorrow were. Praise be to such, and to their slumbers peace."

The young fair-haired student who in the early thirties set out from his native home in Tipperary to blaze a trail and to enlighten social thinking on one of our major social problems is surely one of the number eulogised by Wordsworth.

In his youthful, humble sincerity and devotion Brother Stephen could hardly for a moment have imagined that during his own lifetime, his name would become a household word throughout the land and particularly in Northern Ireland where he laboured with young people for almost thirty years. He was years in advance of his times. But we are anticipating.

The young student, William Kelly, entered the congregation of the Brothers of the Christian Schools and henceforth became known as Brother Stephen. After further years of training and assimilation of Lasallian ideas and methods of instructing and leading the young, Brother Stephen set out, very much unknown to himself, to commence his own very special work.

In 1940, at twenty-seven years of age, the promising young man was appointed on the staff of the establishment then known as Milltown Industrial and Reformatory School in the city of Belfast, Northern Ireland. To modern ears the very name of such official centres may sound like an echo from the dark ages, but the schools and their ideas for re-educating wayward youths were the very abyss of darkness, and Milltown, Belfast, was the Cinderella of them all.

In September 1941 the Manager of the Milltown Reformatory School died rather suddenly. The various appointments for the school year throughout the District had already been made and thus, at very short notice, Superiors were obliged to look around for a suitable man to fill the office of Manager at the Milltown School. For such appointment in the past, it was usually a man around the fifties who would be nominated. But during his first year or two on the staff of the School, Brother Stephen's ideas and methods of dealing with young deprived children and youths and his keen and determined interest in their welfare had not gone unnoticed.

The Provincial, while still somewhat attached to the prevailing conceptions of the "Establishment", nevertheless decided to give the very (in his eyes) young Brother Stephen a chance to put his theories into practice, while at the same time determined to keep a sharp eye on results. So carefully were the eyes of the "Establishment" upon him, that towards the end of his first year as Manager of the school he received a curt reminder from the Major Superiors that, "things were moving a little too fast" in Milltown.

Brother Stephen was not to be discouraged or deflected from what he felt he knew to be the right path. High office interested him not at all, and

while obedient and respectful to his lawful Superiors, he was not going to be bogged down with old and out of date thinking. He felt that he had found his purpose in life and that was to love, befriend and encourage the delinquent child. To quote his own words, shortly after taking up office, "Things have got to change around here," and change they did.

To get an idea of the massive task he was undertaking and the need for "things having got to change", let us digress a while and take a brief look at the so-called Industrial and Reformatory Schools in these islands around about the '40s.

The Victorians were bourgeois, self-confident, and in their fashion wanted to be humanitarian. As rationalists they were convinced that if the result of an action was painful, the individual would refrain from it. To represent a painful deterrent against crime, institutions were deliberately designed as repressive and humiliating establishments where persons unfortunate enough to offend against society could be kept suitably out of sight. As deterrents against the prevalence of crime, however, these ideas failed and in the early part of the twentieth century authorities began to notice that, because they demoralised and brutalised their inmates, the grim buildings acted as a breeding ground for new crime. The Victorian belief in the rationality of all human behaviour crumbled; Freud had initiated his revolution in psychological outlook and slowly, very slowly, during the 'thirties, the emphasis in penal thinking was shifting from retribution to rehabilitation. But the progress of enlightenment was neither swift nor uniform.

When Brother Stephen took over command at Milltown, the humiliating skin-head crop and depressing corderoy short-pants uniform still lingered on and in the life of the country the system remained always a little outside the pale and the regime of discipline imposed retained its repressive Victorian pattern. Youths were herded together with little or nothing to occupy their time. The building was about a century old and its walls and flaking whitewash seemed to preserve the whole claustrophobic atmosphere of gloom and humiliation and nineteenth century sanitary arrangements. The only rehabilitation training for youths of sixteen, seventeen and frequently eighteen years, was boot repairing and tailoring and mending the uncouth corderoy uniform, plus farming, although ninety per cent of the inmates were town or city dwellers.

For the under sixteens there were two hours schoolroom lessons each day in an old mill loft, with untrained and under-paid personnel. For the rest, the youngsters lolled and scrounged around in a great big open yard and discussed and thought up new delinquencies and further depravity.

There was only one supervisor for as many as two hundred lads on these demoralising sessions. There was almost a complete absence of recreation facilities and the supervisor considered (and who could fault him) that his job was simply that of jail warder to keep these criminals moving round and round and splitting up any seemingly possible trouble making groups.

The whole staff, including domestic staff, for two hundred boys whose ages ranged from ten to eighteen years was less than a dozen persons. They were over-worked and under-paid. Who can blame them if they had little time and less understanding of social re-insertion and psychiatric treatment.

Things had got to change and Brother Stephen had had enough of the cruel unenlightened system in his early years on the staff. He was determined to

break it and to introduce anything, no matter what, to replace it. His determination was such, and his preparedness to meet any and many discouragements, that a single one of these incidents of discouragement that he was to meet with down the years, will suffice to help the reader understand the stature of the man.

It was right at the beginning of his Managerial appointment and Brother Stephen was taking the first steps in his methods of reform.

The boys were being sorted out individually and set to congenial work according to age and ability. One of these boys, aged about sixteen years, had average plus ability and, if given a chance, would seem to be very promising material. Brother Stephen arranged for him to have special lessons and at the same time to assist in the office work and take instruction in typewriting. After some weeks had passed, Brother Stephen arrived in the office one morning and found that both protégé and typewriter were missing. The machine had been pawned (it was later recovered) and the boy played truant for a couple of days. He was brought back to school and of course lost some of his rewards and privileges. But there was no heavy-handed punishment and the manager's interpretation of the offence was simply, "Let's begin again".

He did begin again and today that young man is a respected and prosperous second-hand dealer in the city. He is married and has a lovely home with a very charming wife and three delightful children.

During Brother's thirty years working for deprived children nothing ever discouraged him. There were many disappointments. But when a boy's welfare was at stake, he fought for and persevered with that boy even when all others on the staff had written him off as a failure.

After a year or two Milltown Industrial School was beginning to take on a new look. People in the city were already talking of the Milltown Boys' Town. But this was only the beginning. Brother Stephen was primarily a man dedicated to the welfare of underprivileged youth. But he was also a keen observer, a shrewd business man, a wily manipulator of men and a terrific worker. One feels that in the corridors of Stormont, on many occasions, senior officials must have commented, as did their colleagues in the childrens' department in Whitehall, (so the story goes) when a confrere of Brother Stephen, doing the same work in England some years before, was spotted in the corridors; a bush telegraph was immediately set in motion: "He's here; look out or you'll be persuaded to agree to something which you never intended to yield on."

With a sharp eye to better future plans for his dear beloved delinquents, the manager got wind of the sale of a farm of about one hundred acres just outside the city boundary and going for a song (so he maintained). What possibilities, what scope, what a splendid outlet for the young people of the future. Such were his dreams and visions, and in his world dreams very quickly became realities. He badgered superiors and the local Bishop to purchase the land, and when they asked what possible use would it be to the Congregation, he blandly informed them that it would be the new St. Patrick's. Anyway, the land was purchased and the way was now clear for the complete fulfilment of Brother Stephen's ambitions.

In the '40s the existing legislation made no provisions for giving financial assistance to this type of school and the brother had to carry on his improvements in Milltown on a shoestring budget from voluntary

subscriptions. But carry on he did and even before the School came under the Ministry of Home Affairs of the Government of Northern Ireland, Brother Stephen's work and ideas were becoming recognised and applauded by the juvenile courts and the judiciary, the police department and the police, the leading city personages and the public in general throughout Northern Ireland.

In 1947 the N.I. Government passed a bill in parliament entitled "The Children and Young Persons' Act". From then on the old designation of Industrial and Reformatory Schools disappeared and these establishments are now known as Training Schools. This act completely changed the financial position and provided generous grants towards capital expenditure, teachers' salaries, maintenance, etc. Brother Stephen could now really move forward.

Five new classrooms were erected for the junior boys. The woodwork shop was extended and re-equipped with modern machinery and cabinet making was included in the instruction. An engineering and metal shop was set up. Painting and brick-laying shops were created. A new recreation hall was built and new toilets with washroom with hot and cold showers installed. A central heating plant was introduced and a new oratory for the boys was built.

Meantime, during the years of all this activity he had built up and created the well-known St. Patrick's Boys' Band. This development was a splendid outlet for the ability and musical talent of a large number of boys during their leisure hours. The neat turn out of these lads, their very attractive band uniform of green and saffron, their splendid marching and figure drill displays, soon became known and sought after throughout the country, North and South. Outside engagements were so numerous that several had to be turned down each year as it was impossible to accept them all.

In 1956 he rented part of a large mansion situated in one of the most beautiful of the Nine Glens of Antrim and about ten minutes walk from the sea. Again a further corner of the youthful dream is unfolded, and Brother Stephen is founding the Cushendall holiday camp. This holiday centre is now one of the amenities for St. Patrick's, unique in its existence. Over the years he toiled and planned until he managed to get complete possession of the whole property. The mansion was decorated and re-furnished as he considered appropriate (the visitor would say luxuriously) for a holiday centre for his precious boys. Lawns and paths were laid out and landscaped with shrubs, tarmac courts, games huts, swings and slides and all other conceivable amenities for outdoor or indoor recreation.

All this activity during those years had the personal and detailed attention of Brother Stephen. He was everywhere. He advised and directed, he counselled and encouraged, he talked seriously and laughed heartily with every member of his staff. The staff leaned on him for support, help and guidance and he was forever at their service.

But it was the welfare of the boys that occupied all his thoughts and the greater part of his time. They came first in every consideration. He knew each and every boy personally and addressed him by his Christian name. He was always moving amongst them, during their working hours and their recreations. He contrived to see each one of them privately every week, to discuss their worries and problems, their hopes and desires, their interests and ambitions. Nine to five was not on his program. Rather his timetable, where the boys were concerned, was eight to ten, including Saturdays and

Sundays.

It was this respecting, loving and caring, including the caring expressed in firmness, that really counted with them in the long run. They were somebody, they felt that they were wanted and that they counted. Out of this there grew a respectful familiarity on the part of the boys and amongst themselves they expressed this feeling with a sort of pet name: "Wee Stevie". "Wee Stevie said"; "Wee Stevie says"; "You will have to do it; Wee Stevie wants it done". For many a boy indeed, this easy informality was his first sensible contact with adults for years.

In 1951 Brother Stephen made the first approach to the Ministry of Home Affairs regarding his proposed erection of a new St. Patrick's. Already he had accomplished the spade-work in the field he had set out to cultivate. The paths for the future were laid down. The governing principles and the lines of communication were established. There was little more he could do within the confines of the old premises. But the early, seemingly impossible dreams had envisaged very much more.

Just as away back in '43, when he blandly informed the Lord Bishop and Superiors that the hundred acre farm was for the new St. Patrick's, he now approached the Ministry of Home Affairs with the self same visionary confidence. After all, he had the site, situated very appropriately on the Glen Road. Surely the little matter of building the new premises could hardly be much of an obstacle. As always, his confidence was not mistaken and within a year of his first approach to Stormont the plans for the general outlay were approved and work on the project commenced. In 1954 the foundation stone of the new school was laid by the Most Reverend Daniel Mageen, D.D., Lord Bishop of Down and Connor.

These were hectic years for Brother Stephen. While continuing to attend to the everyday needs and problems of his young charges in Milltown, he supervised every detail of the building work going on at the new St. Patrick's. His ten or twelve years of experience of the essential requirements of a Training School led him to do battle with architect and contractors until each and every detail of the building was exactly as he wished it to be. To-day the result of his great love and terrific energy stands as his monument and present staff and boys are continuing his work in palatial and functional surroundings.

The visitor to the new St. Patrick's in the '60s would feel conscious of a contradiction if the purpose of his journey had been to visit a penal institution. The drive through the ornamental gates and along the wooded and heather-bordered winding avenue gives the impression of a stretch of secluded, peaceful countryside. The school itself, in ultra modern architectural outline, stands in green and spacious parkland. The landscaped lawns, tastefully flowered and shrubbed, provide a restful panorama of scenic beauty and a veritable botanical garden where the boys can observe and study several thousand specimens.

The first impression at the main entrance and ground corridors is a bewildering one of boys of all sizes in jeans, bell-bottoms, overalls, hipsters or shorts, milling about in what seems like a market-place activity. They come and go in every direction in the untidy manner of school-boys. They look well fed, good physical specimens. Above all, there is an eagerness about them that one remembers from one's own school days; those extra quick movements, the raised voices, the look of keen interest, in fact that air of market-place activity. It is hard to believe that these are a

scattered collection of problem boys who, not so long before, had been brought in by the police or removed from their homes for their own protection.

The entrance hall and corridors in chrome and arcs of plate glass give the impression of a modern university rather than a Training school. Everything looks bright, colourful, airy. The common rooms and television rooms are brightly decorated with modern wallpaper and colour prints - Cezanne, van Gogh, Breughel. The billiard rooms, games rooms, library and class-rooms equally bright, cheerful and homely. Some boys are playing table-tennis; others crouched over a billiard-table; some, beyond an open door, are watching television, others just standing about; most of them appear noisy and unrestrained; the supervisory adults present look informally at ease.

Around the recreation rooms, the halls and class-rooms, the visitor comes upon an aquarium or two, several cages of gerbils, a glass show case with live native-bred locusts under an electric light bulb. A dog is dashing about in a tarmacked yard seemingly as determined about the outcome of a seven-a-side football game as any boy on the teams and, from the beautiful indoor heated swimming pool we hear the hoisterous shouts of joy from some forty or fifty youngsters splashing and revelling in the water.

Intent on their games or their work, the boys take little note of the entry of a stranger. If the stranger has the time to wander round the workshops or the class-rooms he will discern the same interest in every department. The painters are too busy mixing correct colour contrasts for a particular wall, or stencilling a sign for an imaginary discotheque, to take much notice of a visitor. The joiners are so rushed to have their table, dumb-waiter, bed-side lamp, or what have you, finished before the Xmas, Easter or Summer holidays. They will be taking these home with them and, since they have to attend to all the wood-work requirements around the house at the same time, there is little desire to waste five minutes fooling around.

The Juniors are so occupied with their arts and crafts, their pets, their rural science, their efforts at producing their very own books (This is the Life of Walter Jones - sometimes called 'Onion-head') and with their lessons, there is little time to waste. They too want to have their framed pictures, their trays and their potted flowers and table lamps ready for taking home at holiday time.

"The Old Order Changeth", but the new is welcomed as the dream of many years come true. The training is designed to equip the boy to face the world and the future; to meet the challenge and the test. Primary and further education, vocational and physical training, music, sport and recreation, are geared to the boy's present and future needs. An infusion of the sense of spiritual values, apart from its primary importance, supplies the ingredients for character building and discipline, without which the path will be hard and narrow.

Throughout the latter part of his Managerial years and when St. Patrick's was operating as he considered a Training School should operate, there were still one or two parts of the early dream of child and delinquent welfare that bothered him a lot. In his mind and in his conversations he returned to them time and time again. The after-care of his own boys from the day of their discharge from residential care, and a Catholic establishment for the Catholic children in the care of the State Welfare authorities, were very much in his mind.

The latter, as we shall see later on, he brought to complete fruition. For the former, the correct and only solution as he very clearly saw and understood, was a youth hostel. Again, in this thinking, we see the man another ten or twenty years in advance of his times.

In his great wisdom and know-how, he clearly understood that captive love must be rigorously excluded from all relationships between educator and child; oblation of love of the educator for the child is itself the very pledge of the worth of his efforts. The delinquent child is very often a frustrated child; as such he has need of being surrounded with the warm affection of the re-educator. But to be efficacious this latter must be disinterested; the educator does not seek any reward in return; he looks for neither satisfaction nor personal compensations; his essential virtue in this field is detachment which necessitates a veritable affective asceticism. Frequently we have to observe and re-educate children who present an important retardation, conditioned by a retardation of the affective development; the mission of the re-educator is none other than to make the child die to itself on the affective plane and thus seek to extend the personality. If the child becomes for the educator a compensatory instrument for his own personal frustrations there is every chance at arriving at a diametrically inverse result; an exclusive fixation affective, in a more or less unwholesome context, risking in effect, to compromise definitely the equilibrium of the child.

He knew that detachment is particularly indispensable to the re-educator in a training school where a child or youth remains only for rather a short and limited period. It is not at all desirable for a child or youth to attach himself to the training school or any member of its staff, in such a manner that he finds it difficult to leave and start to adjust himself to the world outside; there would be the risk of his whole future development being compromised. On this very important point, as Brother Stephen very clearly understood, the training school service must be a service of statistical technique and eventual rehabilitation, but never a past pupils' club. Moreover, the golden rule of all after-care service is that the youth returns to his teacher according only to the measure of his needs.

He knew the correct long-term answer. He was well aware of the gap in the delinquent rehabilitation work. From the time of discharge from the school until the lad reaches his maturity, are very difficult years for these boys. They must learn to grow up, they must go to the halls and the dances and meet the opposite sex. Say what you may, they will be late and sometimes very late coming in at night. But they have to learn life through living it. He knew that the hostel with a house father and a house mother and a small staff, giving a twenty-four hour service, seven days a week, is a necessity for these deprived children and young persons to carry them over the difficult years. There is a priority need to advise and befriend them during those early years of social re-insertion.

But Brother Stephen also knew that as a member of a religious

congregation he could not do this work. Neither could he involve any of the members of his religious staff in it. It was an undertaking for devoted lay people if they could be found. He frequently discussed the hostel idea with Ministry officials, but if he himself, the officials felt, could not undertake it, they would be slow to consider the proposition.

Meantime he carried on himself as best he could with the after-care of the boys. There was only one full-time welfare officer on the staff. But Brother Stephen gave a lot of his attention to the work by 'phone and by letter and, with as much time as he could possibly give, by visits. If a past pupil had a problem or was in need, the Brother was quite prepared to add several hours to his already overcrowded working day, prepared even to go on into the night if necessary.

He directed and counselled the welfare officer and persuaded a number of voluntary workers to interest themselves in the after-care of "his boys". Throughout the city and Northern Ireland generally he co-ordinated groups of employers, regardless of creed or class, who never failed to provide employment and encouragement for the "idle hands" which otherwise might find other work less meritorious to do. He had his mothers of families in the city who were prepared to open their homes and their hearts to the youths who, in many instances, had nowhere else to go. Many of the Old Boys cherish the memory of those Mothers and frequently re-visited the "substitute home" that is more to them than the name implies. Voluntary team work, co-operation with the home, community and employers are some of the facets he set in motion to influence the future well-being of the boy who had been adversely affected by his past. In the last analysis, of course, the decision for good or ill rests with the youth himself. That many have chosen wisely is evident in the position that so many of them have attained in the social, industrial and commercial life of the community.

Of Brother Stephen, we might say with Lincoln, "One person with a belief is a social power to equal ninety-nine who have only interest". Or with Emerson, who more than a hundred years ago, also dreamed of a Land of Heart's Desire, and hoped, "that each person has felt his own call to cast aside all evil customs, timidities and limitations, and to be in his place a free and helpful man, a reformer, a benefactor, not content to slip along through the world.... but a brave and upright man, who must find or cut a straight road to everything excellent in the earth, and not only go honourably himself, but make it easier for all to follow him, to go in honour and with benefit".

For a number of years, Brother Stephen had been turning over in his mind the position regarding Catholic children in the State Welfare Homes. There was a number of these children in care of the Welfare throughout Northern Ireland. The children were well cared for and looked after in the Welfare Homes and as conscientiously trained and encouraged in their own religious observances as the authorities were able to do.

There was no Catholic Home anywhere in Northern Ireland for orphan boys between the ages nine to fifteen years and these children were placed in the State Welfare Homes, which were more or less under Protestant management. The Brother was very worried about this and felt that something must be done whereby these children could be looked after by Catholic authorities and surrounded by Catholic influences.

Down the years the Diocesan authorities made no move towards any amelioration of the situation. When the Brother approached them on the

matter he was unable to make much headway. There were plenty of fine words but very few concrete proposals. Certainly the proposition was worthy of serious attention; but who would put up the money? Yes indeed, who would come forward with the necessary financial help? With his sharp business perception for sizing up a situation, Brother Stephen realised at once that there was little hope of financial help from diocesan funds.

He turned to the Ministry of Home Affairs. But there was no legislation under which their Department could give any grants to Voluntary Homes. But knowing the man that they were dealing with and the great work he had already accomplished, they gave him every encouragement to go ahead on voluntary subscriptions. The officials suggested to him, that if a voluntary home were already in existence, they could authorise the Welfare Authority to board out some of the children to the voluntary home and then the Ministry could foot the bill for some of these children. That would give him a nucleus around which he could begin to finance the project, and they added, "Who knows what changes in the law may come about in the future?"

This was encouragement indeed. Nevertheless, encouragement alone was not sufficient for the initial expenditure for the purchase of a suitable premises. His profound faith in Divine Providence came to his assistance. He decided that if he worked as if everything depended on him and considered the outcome as if everything depended on Almighty God, the project must succeed.

He looked around for a suitable purchase. He discovered an ideal mansion situated in beautiful countryside and overlooking Strangford Lough. Rubane House, with its beautiful lawns and gardens and its massive wide open spaces, was on the market. He viewed the premises and was satisfied that it had all the necessary requisites for his purpose, and was situated only about twenty miles from the capital. Here could be combined the wonder and the freshness of the countryside and the nearby amenities of the city.

He obtained a loan from the bank and purchased the estate. (As simple as that.) But in that sentence there is expressed and implied a profundity of faith that so few of us can lay claim to. He was again at the foundation of a colossal undertaking. Rubane House would have to be adapted and equipped for its new requirements and a bank loan, with interest, would have to be repaid.

He set about the work with the same initiative and drive that characterised the early years of his labours at Milltown. He organised voluntary committees to collect funds. He consulted the police authorities and established flag days throughout the cities and towns of Northern Ireland. He designed collection boxes and had them placed in hotels and business premises. His trust in Providence and indeed in the goodness of human nature was not mistaken. Funds started to come in and in ever increasing totals. In April 1956, the official opening of the first voluntary Catholic Home was performed by the Lord Bishop of Down and Connor and the first group of Catholic orphan boys was in residence at Rubane House.

The work for the orphan boys had commenced. No longer would Catholic orphan youths have to be placed in Protestant Welfare Homes. But this was only the beginning. Over the ten years or so, until his sudden death, he built class-rooms and workshops; playing fields were laid out; he managed the adjoining farm and developed it on modern farm methods and made handsome yearly profits. Year by year Rubane House was extended.

During these same years Brother Stephen was continually labouring and manoeuvring for some sort of official recognition for the Rubane Voluntary Home. He badgered government departments, year in and year out, until finally the earlier words of encouragement from senior officials came to pass and in 1969 the parliament of Northern Ireland introduced an amendment to the Education Act. The school at Rubane came under the Four and Two committee and thus became eligible for the generous government grant of 80% for all future extensions and equipment, plus 100% for every day running and overhead costs.

The voluntary collections could now go towards paying off the huge debts already incurred and the new official grant was used to extend the classrooms and workshops; a new gymnasium and recreation hall were erected. A library was established and fitted out. A swimming pool and tennis courts were added.

The cottage system of small family units was introduced, and today, conditions for the orphan boy at Rubane outdistance the provisions and amenities at St. Patrick's.

The children came from all over Northern Ireland and at the moment nearly one hundred orphan boys are being cared for and looked after in true Lasallian charity. Again quoting Emerson, "... Love will creep where it cannot go, will accomplish that by imperceptible methods - being its own lever, fulcrum and power - which force can never achieve".

In the foregoing pages we preferred to study the man at work; follow him through a quarter of a century of activity and selfless devotion for the neighbour, rather than begin our narrative with the Religious Brother, the Man of Faith.

Faith comes from outside ourselves, by hearing (Galatians 3:2; Hebrews 5:11); each one's awakening to the Divine Light, prompted though this be by grace, can only come from within his own spirit. The Christian creed is usually sung congregationally, but its commitment, by one man, one vox, is personal, not collective. (It is 'I' who believes.)

Countless factors conspire to make the individual rather than the group the focal point of interest. Democracy itself, theoretically at least, is a vindication, in the name of the people, of the rights of the one, if not against the many, at least against despotism. It is not so much the uniqueness of each, as that each must be regarded as a centre of initiative, which characterises our way of life. This situation has both its attractions and its drawbacks. Existentialism, with its emphasis on independent choice, psychoanalysis, with its stress on the individual as the plaything of circumstance, may be regarded respectively as active and passive aspects of the same phenomenon.

In the face of these secularising forces, religious approaches which ignore the individual's prized, yet dreaded aloneness, but strive to regiment him in the name, let us say, of "brotherly love", into some community of believers, betray unawareness of the basic problem. If modern man is to be persuaded to take seriously his relationship to God, his aspirations must be met with complete realism and careful particularity.

Brother Stephen never for a moment betrayed unawareness of this basic problem, either in his dealings with the boys or with the religious members of the community entrusted to his care. He was a deeply religious man. But

his piety was not based on formalism or the externality of religion. It was sustained by personal prayer, hard work and a profound spirit of Faith.

In his religious community the work part of religious life (usually ambiguously referred to as regularity) was for him a duty of honour as well as a religious duty. At spiritual exercises, conferences, recreations, he led the way. At the little now-and-then get-togethers, for a little relaxation on feast days, he was the leading spirit in the laughter and the merriment. If he was unavoidably called away from some or other exercise of the community, he hastened back as soon as the business was completed, to continue to take his part at the work in hand.

He directed his community with that realism and particularity referred to and in his eyes of Faith each member of the community was an individual, with individual worries and problems and with an individual outlook and viewpoint. For him, as he saw it, in his capacity of Director, self had to be, and was, completely eliminated and the whole coalesced into one solid unit for the greater glory of God and the Institute.

On these lines he succeeded admirably, and many of the young Brothers under his direction for long or short periods have profited immensely in their own religious life in the years that followed. Again, Brother Stephen was far in advance of his times; Vatican II was in the future and the subsidiarity sputnik had not yet been launched into orbit around the Congregation.

In all his activity in the spiritual or temporal order he was the man of Faith. He exemplified, to the highest degree, the spirit of the Congregation of the Brothers of the Christian Schools: "The Brothers shall look upon everything with the eyes of faith." Writing to Brother Stephen's mother at her home in Toomavara, County Tipperary, to express deepest sympathy on behalf of the Ministry of Home Affairs, Northern Ireland, the senior official of the Department, a Protestant gentleman and devout church-man, said among other things, and we quote,

When St John Baptist de La Salle founded the Order he could not have expected or indeed wished to have a more faithful and devoted follower than Stephen Kelly.

Departmental officials would not be aware of the details of his community life. But, for the devoted Director, the oratory was the powerhouse for all his efforts with the youths across the way and this spirit of Faith and prayer in his directing and guiding of the young charges, shone out for all to see.

Twice a week he assembled them, for practical, down-to-earth spiritual talks. These talks were certainly not speculative and the spiritual motif was woven into all the exigencies of their work and play. He got across to them the need and importance of prayer and sacrifice in their daily lives. He explained to them the wonderful help that prayer and the faithful practice of their religion would be to them in the early years after they had left the school.

They listened to him and were determined to try their utmost, because they knew that he was sincere and had only their welfare at heart. With that sharp observation of youth, they had many and many a time "spotted" him with his beads, when he thought he was unobserved; they took note when he slipped into their oratory for a little moment (as was his wont) when he was moving among them during their work or leisure hours.

Officials, on their frequent visits to the school, felt that there was an overall pervading influence which could hardly be just the result of good instruction and training. They knew that the Brother was a man of deep Faith and that all his work had a spiritual motivation. It was to be seen in the behaviour of the boys. Their openness and friendliness, their eagerness and interest, their straightforward answers to questions or a greeting and their respectful politeness without any trace of subservience. Above all they appreciated the effect of his efforts as best shown in the eighty-plus percentage of delinquent youths who made good in the years after training and were never a further charge on public funds.

The Government of Northern Ireland expressed this appreciation of his service to the community, quite early in his years of office, and suggested that he should allow his name to go forward for mention in the honours list. He was astonished, the very idea of publicity, not to mention honours, was unthinkable. All his life he had shunned the public eye and carried on his work in the background. Self-effacement could be listed as one of his chief characteristic traits. Anyway, in those days of foundation-laying, he was far too busy to spare the time to join "those whom the King wished to honour" and after all he was only doing the job for which he was paid and in his diary of good deeds, "the job for which I am paid" was his first priority.

Nevertheless in later years, when he relinquished the arduous task of Managership to make room for, and to train new blood, so that the good work would continue without interruption of progress, the government again approached him. This time they were somewhat more insistent to him that they too felt that they had a duty to recompense a work of national importance carried out far and beyond the normal expectation. He consented to place the matter before his superiors and they persuaded him that for the honour of the school and the Congregation at large, he must consent to accept the very gracious award of the Government of Northern Ireland.

In 1966 his name appeared in the Honours List and in March of that year he travelled to London to receive the O.B.E. from Her Majesty the Queen. While terribly proud of the honour, he nevertheless insisted that it was the school and the Congregation, not himself, that received it.

After relinquishing the managerial office, he held himself at the disposal of the new manager, the school and the Ministry, for whatever capacity wherein he might be of help and usefulness. All three leaned heavily on his opinions, advice and particularly his know-how, right up to the time of his sudden and lamented death.

The day to day problems continued for the school and indeed in increasing number and variation. The new manager, as also ministry officials, passed them on to Brother Stephen, for his advice and ideas for their solution. This he readily continued to give, and for most of the new problems he was able to draw on his vast experience down the years and would quote a similar problem that he had had to deal with at such and such a time in the past.

His official post was deputy manager and during his remaining years, while giving a lot of his time to the welfare work, it was the boys in St. Patrick's that always tugged at the heart strings. He was forever planning for better and better conditions and further amenities for these deprived children and youths.

The last of his many projects for their well being was to obtain sanction

from the department for the erection, on an experimental basis, of two or four chalets, or cottages, where eight or ten lads would live as a family unit with a house father and a house mother. They would dine and sleep and spend their leisure hours in the cottage and go out to class and to work, just like any ordinary home.

As usual, the Ministry let him have his way, knowing very well from many past experiences that his vision of the future was invariably the correct view. Plans were submitted and approved and already he was immersed in the details of siting and tendering for the construction work to start in the early spring of 1970. He was not to know that he was starting work on the very last part of the youthful dream of thirty years before.

The Monday morning would have found him in his office with the problems, the letters, the plans, to be attended to with the usual meticulous attention to detail. But it was not to be. On the Saturday afternoon he was suddenly called away; peace-rapt to where the Lamb stands, beckons familiar, Godhead in Glory, in love enfolding him. He died "in harness" just as he would have wished to die.

From the innumerable tributes received after his death, a short quote from the press, radio and television release, on behalf of the Government of Northern Ireland, by

The Rt. Hon. R.W. Porter, Q.C, M.P., Minister of Home Affairs, N.I., very aptly summarises his life and work:

"Brother Stephen, a member of the De La Salle Order, devoted his life to children in need."

VALE ATQUE AVE

The bell
Again tolls
In the Antrim scene;
Ageing yet young it calls
Those it sent forth it seems
Must come again.

Muffled
It speaks now,
Haltingly, thoughtfully:
Tells,
In its own way,
A rosary of years;
Years when through sorrow
And cheerful occasions
It told a great Servant
The will of his Lord;
Saw him with steady step,
Head bent in reverence,
Shoulders in purpose bent
To serve God above all.

Yet, did it know the fire that burned -
Zealously perfect,
In great things,
In small?
What could it know of the fierce desolation,
The Garden of Olives
He lived through
For all?

And when its notes fell,
Like petals in summer,
Over the lawns that lay in the sun,
Could it admire his child-like wonder
Alert to the Godhead in flower and tree,
Eyes for Creator in form, in structure?
Artist, Scientist: both he could be.

In paradisum...
(The bell censes mourning,
Celestial carillon takes up the chime.)
In paradisum deducant te Angeli:
Radiant, ecstatic, peace-rapt and free -
See where the Lamb stands,
Beckons familiar,
Godhead in glory, in love is enfolding you,
Queenly, the beautiful Mother is greeting you,
Friends crowd around you in heavenly accolade -

But we, we must now leave you,
(The bell has ceased tolling.)
The vineyard needs tending,
The flock calls for care.

'Leave you' - foolish expression!
Heaven is around us, and you are there:
Out from your resting place,
Back to the schools again
Comes inspiration,
Support of your prayer;
Long we'll remember you,
And in recalling
Try your achievement,
Your glory,
To share.

At this point some six pages from the Visitors' Book of St. Patrick's are appended to the 'Life'. These record distinguished visitors in the years 1950 - 1970. Invariably they remark: 'A real inspiration, 'Most impressed', etc. It is quite unnecessary to reproduce them here, but the variety of people who visited St. Patrick's and who were so much in admiration of the work done there is quite remarkable.

Also appended to the biography are copies of letters congratulating him on receiving the O.B.E., and letters of sympathy received on the occasion of Brother Stephen's death. They serve to record the influence he had on so many people, "even those," as the old Catechism put it, "who differed from him in religion". And in politics too it seems!

Stormont Castle,
Belfast 4
31st December 1965.

Dear Brother Stephen.

I am delighted to learn that Her Majesty the Queen has been graciously pleased to award you the O.B.E., and that your name will appear in the New Year Honours List.

Yours sincerely,
Terence O'Neill

The Rev. Brother Stephen Kelly,
St. Patrick's Training School,
Glen Road,
BELFAST 11

~~~~~

Stormont,  
Belfast 4  
3rd January 1966

Dear Brother Kelly,

Please accept my warmest congratulations on the award of an Honour to you by Her Majesty the Queen. I am delighted that the splendid work that you are doing has been recognised in this way.

Best wishes for the New Year,  
Yours sincerely,  
RWB (?) McConnell

The Rev. Brother Stephen Kelly, O.B.E.,  
St Patrick's Training School,  
Glen Road,  
BELFAST, 11

~~~~~

Royal Courts of Justice, Ulster,
Belfast,
5th January 1966.

Dear Brother Stephen.

May I send you my hearty congratulations on the decoration which you received in the New Year's Honours and which is so well-deserved. I know how well-deserved it is for our acquaintance goes back many years when I was appearing regularly at the Belfast City Commission and we always knew, just as everyone always knows, the good and most important work done by you.

I am so glad about this.
With kind regards.

The Rev. Brother Stephen Kelly, O.B.E.,
St. Patrick's Training School,
Glen Road, BELFAST 12

[illegible][illegible]

From an old pupil

Belfast Telegraph,
Belfast 1,
January 4th 1966.

The Rev. Brother Stephen Kelly,
St. Patrick's Training School,
Glen Road,
Belfast 11.

Dear Brother Stephen.

Our editorial on Saturday last tried to express our pleasure at the recognition which you received in the New Year Honours.

May I say personally how my spirits rose to think that the Government is so sensible of the great value of your work, and that you yourself made it possible for it to give public expression to its appreciation.

With every good wish,
Yours sincerely,
John E. Sayers, D.Lit.

~~~~~

0/12 Lisburn Road,  
Belfast 9  
1st January 1966

Dear Brother Stephen.

I started writing this in my own fair hand, but after the first half page I found it had become so illigible that I tore it up and started de novo on the machine. I have become so shaky that my hand-writing, which was always on the obscure side, is now a meaningless scrawl after the first few lines.

I want to say what a delight it was to me to learn of your very well deserved honour and I was particularly pleased at the way it was featured in the Newsletter. It restores a somewhat tottering faith in the future of mankind to find that there is, after all, genuine recognition of unselfish devotion to the well being of the community even where it has been given by so modest a person as yourself, and one who has consistently dodged publicity in any form. It might well be said that it has been late in coming - an aspect of the matter that somehow reminds me of the story of the 100% non-churchgoer, who, in his extremity, prayed, "O Lord, you can't say that I have bothered you much in the past, so I do hope you will listen to me now" - but I well know that Honours have never been in your mind; indeed, I doubt if such things would ever mean as much to you as they would to most other people, but this has certainly given tremendous satisfaction to the great number of people who look upon you as their friend, and you will be pleased that others have been given pleasure. The definitive accolade, placing you in the ranks of Royalty, will be when "the Rev." Ian Paisley heads a "monster Procession of protest". I feel we will both be disappointed if this does not happen, for it would be sad if Ulster's Greatest Unconscious Comedian would appear to be slipping.

I have been harbouring a feeling of guilt that I have not seen you since









Dear BR 5

.....

Ministry of Home Affairs,  
Stormont Castle,  
Belfast BT4 3SU,  
29th December 1969

Dear [REDACTED] BR 5

I write on behalf of the Chairman and Members of the Child Welfare Council to convey to you and your staff their very deep regret at the death of Bro. Stephen, who for many years was a well loved and respected member of that body.

His death, coming as it did with such tragic suddenness, must have been a tremendous shock to you all in St. Patrick's, as indeed it was to all who knew him.

I, personally will miss him very much and I shall always remember with gratitude his unfailing courtesy, kindness and consideration to me throughout the years.

Yours sincerely,  
(illegible)

Rev. [REDACTED] BR 5  
St. Patrick's Training School,  
Glen Road, Belfast, BT11

!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Borthern Ireland Council of Social Welfare

60 Martines Avenue,  
Belfast, BT5 5LY

My Lord Bishop,

I have just learned of the death of my friend and colleague Brother Stephen of St. Patrick's Training School and write to express my most sincere sympathy with you and the many people associated with his work. We have lost a fine, wise and generous hearted man and one whose service to the community has been of great value, not only to St. Patrick's but to all organisations working in the field of Child Care.

I first met him, when at the request of the late Judge Maginness, a small working party was formed to advise the Ministry of Home Affairs on the proposed first Children & Young Persons Act and later he served under my chairmanship for six years on the N.I. Council of Child Care. His experience and deep understanding of young people were of great value and I was personally most grateful for his unflagging interest and glad that, through the Council's recommendations, we were able to further some of the projects so near to his heart. Only two days ago I received his usual Christmas Message and I am sad to think that this long association is now severed in this world.



You will forgive me writing direct to you when you are so busy, but I felt impelled to express my deep sense of loss which I know will be shared by all who had the privilege of knowing Brother Stephen. I was one of those who had the pleasure of welcoming you to Bryson House on your first visit there, when you made such a brilliant extempore speech on Social Services matters.

Yours very sincerely,  
Maj. A.F.E. Naughten

!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Northern Ireland Council of Social Services

Bryson House,  
28 Bedford Street,  
Belfast BT2 7FL  
31st December 1969

BR 5

St. Patrick's Training School,  
Glen Road, Belfast 11.

Dear BR 5

The sudden death of Brother Stephen came as a great shock to all who valued and admired his work.

I desire to offer you and the community at St. Patrick's the warmest sympathy of my Council.

Brother Stephen was associated with the Council for over twenty years and made many invaluable contributions to the work of its Childrens' Committee; we shall miss his wise counsel and advice.

Yours sincerely,  
G.B.Newe,  
Secretary

!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Tyrone County Welfare Committee

County Hall,  
Mountjoy Road,  
Omagh, Co. Tyrone.  
7th January 1970.

Dear Brother Prior [sic],

At our Children's Committee meeting held earlier this week, sympathetic reference was made to the sudden passing of Brother Stephen Kelly, who had an outstanding record in the field of children's work in Northern Ireland for many years. Glowing tributes were made to his exceptional qualities and his service to the young in this community.

I was directed to convey to your Order the deepest sympathy of the Committee members on the great loss it, in particular, and the community in general, have sustained, through Brother Stephen's passing.

Yours sincerely,  
signed  
(illegible)

County Welfare Officer

Rev. Brother Prior,  
St. Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast 11.

~~~~~

Petty Sessions District of Belfast

Petty Sessions Courts,
Chichester Street,
Belfast BT9 3JB
1st January 1970

Dear BR 5

We were all shocked by the sudden passing of Brother Stephen and would like to convey to you and to his other colleagues our very sincere sympathy. This letter should have gone to you sooner, but I was away for a few days over Christmas.

I only had the privilege of knowing Brother Stephen over the past six years, but no one could have been more friendly or helpful in the work connected with the Juvenile Court. It was a pleasure to work with him - always cheerful, always efficient and ever with the best interests of the boys at heart. His work in connection with St. Patrick's, I know, goes back for many years and equally he will be remembered in connection with it.

I would like on behalf of all those connected with the Belfast Juvenile Court to convey our deep sympathy at your loss.

Yours sincerely,
C.H. Mullan

Chairman Belfast Juvenile Courts

BR 5
St. Patrick's Training School,
Glen Road, Belfast 11.

~~~~~



Rev. BR 5

Yours sincerely,  
P. McMahan  
Senior Probation Officer  
for Mr C.A. Duke.

[illegible]

## DOCTOR BARNARDO'S

Head Office,  
414 Antrim Road,  
Belfast.

BR 5

St. Patrick's Training School,  
Glen Road, Belfast.

Dear [REDACTED] BR 5

May we here at Doctor Bernardo's express our very deep regret on the death of Brother Stephen. We heard this tragic news this morning on the radio. We all had a very high regard for Brother Stephen and his Christian qualities, and we realise that this will be a great loss to St. Patrick's. We would appreciate it if you would express our condolences to his family.

With renewed sympathy.

Yours sincerely,  
W.R. Andrews

L.R. Andrews  
Divisional Children's officer

Maurice A. Nelson,  
Asst. Divisional Children's officer

1     **A. Oh, they were, yes.**

2     **Q. -- in that respect?**

3     **A. More than technically. Fully accountable.**

4     **Q. Right, and you controlled the budgets [REDACTED]**  
5       **as well?**

6     **A. That was part of it, yes.**

7     **Q. Right. How did that fit in with what the chaplain did?**

8     **A. The chaplain didn't -- the chaplain was purely and**  
9       **simply there in the context of being available to them,**  
10      **being available for mass and services and advice and**  
11      **whatever, but he didn't have any role in the context of**  
12      **material provision for the community or financial**  
13      **provision.**

14    **Q. And was the chaplain a full-time chaplain?**

15    **A. For a number of years there was and then the post became**  
16      **part-time.**

17    **Q. Right. We have heard that there was mass on a Wednesday**  
18      **evening and I think on a Saturday as well. Is that what**  
19      **you experienced?**

20    **A. Midday -- sorry -- Wednesday, Wednesday midday and for**  
21      **years and years it was on a Sunday, but then that**  
22      **switched to Saturday night --**

23    **Q. Right.**

24    **A. -- because I think the chaplain had other duties**  
25      **elsewhere on the Sunday.**

1     **A. Oh, they were, yes.**

2     **Q. -- in that respect?**

3     **A. More than technically. Fully accountable.**

4     **Q. Right, and you controlled the budgets** [REDACTED]  
5     **as well?**

6     **A. That was part of it, yes.**

7     **Q. Right. How did that fit in with what the chaplain did?**

8     **A. The chaplain didn't -- the chaplain was purely and**  
9     **simply there in the context of being available to them,**  
10    **being available for mass and services and advice and**  
11    **whatever, but he didn't have any role in the context of**  
12    **material provision for the community or financial**  
13    **provision.**

14    **Q. And was the chaplain a full-time chaplain?**

15    **A. For a number of years there was and then the post became**  
16    **part-time.**

17    **Q. Right. We have heard that there was mass on a Wednesday**  
18    **evening and I think on a Saturday as well. Is that what**  
19    **you experienced?**

20    **A. Midday -- sorry -- Wednesday, Wednesday midday and for**  
21    **years and years it was on a Sunday, but then that**  
22    **switched to Saturday night --**

23    **Q. Right.**

24    **A. -- because I think the chaplain had other duties**  
25    **elsewhere on the Sunday.**

St. Patrick's School, Milltown, Belfast.

This school was inspected on the 29th November, 1950, on which day there were in residence 134 boys (81 including 6 voluntary pupils in the junior school, 47 in the senior school). The figures for 1949 were 117 boys resident (75 junior and five voluntary, 37 senior).

Details of admissions and discharges during the year are as follows:-

1. Number admitted:

Junior 24      - Total 53  
Senior 29

2. Number discharged:

Junior 22      - Total 34  
Senior 12

3. Number on licence:

Junior 1      - Total 9  
Senior 8

4. Number admitted to hospital and subsequently discharged during the year:

Junior 2      - Total 3  
Senior 1

5. Number absconded and recovered:

Junior Nil      - Total 1  
Senior 1

The general health of the boys was good during the year, and there were no epidemics. A regular quarterly medical inspection of the pupils is made by the School Medical Officer, Dr. Harrington. He also visits the school daily and is on call for any emergency. He ensures that every boy has been vaccinated and immunized. Brother Stephen informed us that recently arrangements had been made to have all boys medically examined immediately prior to discharge from the school.

As recorded in last year's report, all the boys at the school have received a Mantoux test and negative reactors have been given B.C.G. inoculation. An excellent card index system of medical records is kept in a filing cabinet in a well equipped medical and dental surgery. The Matron is responsible for attending to all minor ailments. The school dentist visits once a week. Brother Stephen, the School Manager, reported that the existing stock of printed medical cards had now been used up, and suggested that this would be an opportune time to introduce a uniform medical card for all training schools. He has delayed ordering a further stock of the existing cards in the hope that something might be achieved in this direction. At the same time, Brother Stephen also expressed a desire for the organisation of a closer association between officers of all training schools, pointing out that the exchange of ideas and the knowledge of methods used in other schools would inevitably lead to a general improvement.

The problem of enuresis was discussed with Brother Stephen. He says that there are always a certain number of pupils who suffer from this complaint and at Dr. Elder's suggestion I provided him with details of an electrical apparatus designed for the treatment of this complaint. I understand that the Ministry's sanction has already been

/given



given to the purchase of one such apparatus for trial purposes. Should this prove successful, Brother Stephen says he can arrange to have the apparatus made in the School workshop.

#### Accommodation:

Linoleum has been laid to cover the old wooden floors in the dormitories. A new stainless steel double sink has been installed in the scullery annexe to the kitchen. Apart from this there has been little change since last year. As a new site has been obtained on the Glen Road and approval obtained for the provision of new premises on this site, it is not proposed to recommend any further changes in the existing school. The entire premises were adequately equipped and were clean and tidy at the time of the inspection. The bathroom and lavatory accommodation is adequate and well kept.

#### Training Facilities:

A public elementary school education is provided for the boys of school age in classrooms which are adequate and suitable. Classification of boys is necessarily on the basis of attainment, and there is inevitably a undesirable mixture of older and younger boys in one class. Educational ascertainment was discussed with Brother Stephen, and he seems to be of the opinion that at present at any rate there would not be much object in having any of the present pupils ascertained by the approved school medical officers of the Health Committee. In our opinion boys should be ascertained before they are admitted to school and indeed as far as possible before the children are referred to the courts. We think that all children of school age who are to be brought before the court for an offence sufficiently serious to render it probable that they may be committed to a training school, and whose educational report suggests some degree of mental defect or who have a record of psychological or mental disturbance should be ascertained by a medical officer approved by the Local Health Authority for the ascertainment of handicapped children if this has not already been done. A copy of this medical officer's report should be sent to the Local Welfare Officer and be submitted by him to the magistrate as part of the educational and medical reports to be provided by him under Section 37(ii) of the Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland). Provided the ascertainment is effected in this way at the request of the Local Welfare Officer following his study of the educational report we do not think this procedure will conflict in any way with the provisions of Section 36 of the Mental Health Act, but suggest that this aspect should be carefully studied before any directive is sent to Local Welfare Officers.

For children or young persons already committed, Sections 50 and 53 of the Education Act (Northern Ireland) 1947 and Section 37 of the Mental Health Act (Northern Ireland) 1948 would appear to be applicable and the necessary examinations carried out in the cases of children of school age by the school Medical Officer approved by the Local Health Committee and in the case of young persons by a medical officer of the Northern Ireland Hospitals Authority. We do not think that this procedure would conflict in any way with the provisions of Section 37 of the Mental Health Act (Northern Ireland) 1948, but suggest that discussions with the Ministry of Health on this aspect would be advisable.

We saw boys being trained in tailoring, shoemaking, shoe-repairing, carpentering and leather work. We saw products of the workshop and were much impressed by the high standard of workmanship. The training in joinery is particularly good, each boy's drawings being carefully filed so that he may take them with him as a proof of his competence when he proceeds to his apprenticeship. A sewing-machine for the shoemaker shop has also been obtained on hiring terms since our last visit.

/An

Dealt with in separate file  
25/3/50  
25/4/50



An excellent after care system has been organised by [REDACTED] the After Care Officer. Details of past pupils, at present serving their apprenticeship and who are placed in employment, are given as an appendix to this report. Brother Stephen is making fresh efforts to have the school trade training recognized for apprenticeship purposes. He again referred to the scheme for immigration to Australia, mentioned in our last report, saying that it was excellently organised, and that he had heard from two boys now in Australia, both of whom were doing well and earning good wages.

Since the last inspection, the hobbies room has been developed considerably. Several pupils were working there at the time of our visit, and were being supervised by one of the staff, an obvious enthusiast at this type of work. Several additional items of equipment have been obtained including an electrically driven lathe.

#### Recreation Facilities:

These are as described last year and there is little change. The provision of a new school on another site should enable better playing fields to be provided. The school band was rehearsing at the time of our visit and we were informed that the band had recently taken part in a broadcast performance.

#### Statutory Books:

The Statutory Books were inspected and were found to be written up-to-date, with the exception of the Medical Register, which, Brother Stephen informed us, Dr. Harrington considers to be unnecessary, in view of the detailed records maintained in the card index system. While the Register is undoubtedly convenient from the point of view of inspectors, it seems to us that provided detailed medical records are kept in the card index system, the maintenance of duplicate records in the Medical Register is not essential.

In general, this remains an excellent institution with a cheerful homely atmosphere. The training received is obviously of the highest order, and all the boys looked healthy and were happily engaged in some form of activity.

/IE.

*Norman J. Simpson* 21.12.50  
*Kathleen A. Fawcett* 22.12.50



St. Patrick's Training School, Milltown, Belfast.

This school was inspected on the 18th December, 1951, on which day there were in residence 150 boys including 2 voluntary pupils. The figures for 1950 were 134 boys including 6 voluntary pupils. Details of admissions and discharges during the year are as follows:-

|                                   |    |
|-----------------------------------|----|
| Admitted during the year          | 66 |
| Recalled " " "                    | 2  |
| Discharged " " "                  | 47 |
| Licensed " " "                    | 21 |
| Sent to Hospital " "              | 5  |
| In hospital at date of inspection | 1  |
| Absconded                         | 7  |

Six recaptured. One still at large.

The general health of the boys was good during the year and there were no epidemics. A regular quarterly medical inspection of the pupils is made by the School Medical Officer, Dr. Harrington. He visits the school daily and is on call for any emergency. All boys are medically examined immediately prior to discharge from the school. A modern card index system of medical record cards which incorporates the new medical record card for Training Schools is kept in a filing cabinet in a well equipped Medical and Dental Surgery. The Matron attends to all minor ailments. The school Dentist visits once a week.

Accommodation

Brother Stephen stated that in view of the new school building which is at present in course of erection it was undesirable to spend much money on the existing building. In general the present premises are adequately equipped and were clean and tidy at the time of inspection. The bathroom and lavatory accommodation is adequate and well kept. We would suggest the use of a deodorant solution in the sanitary annexes to the dormitories. There is no central heating in the dormitories. As electric light and power have been laid on to most of the dormitories we would suggest that some form of electric heater of modern design should be installed in each dormitory. It should be noted that some parts of the building are constructed entirely of wood and the heater should, therefore, be of suitable fireproof design.

We were particularly impressed by the kitchen and dining room accommodation. Considerable ingenuity has been displayed in the design of the new chairs which are sturdily made of laminated wood and tubular steel. It is worth noting that the surface of the dining room tables is so designed as to eliminate crevices where particles of food may collect.

We visited the site of the new school where work is now in progress. A concrete roadway has been laid from the main road and a gatehouse partially erected.

Training Facilities

A public elementary school education is provided for the boys of school age in classrooms which are adequate and suitable. We visited two of the class rooms when classes were in progress and saw samples of the work being done. We also saw boys being trained in tailoring, shoe-making and shoe-repairing and carpentry. As mentioned last year the training in joinery is particularly good, each boy's drawings being carefully filed so that he may take them with him as proof of his competence when he proceeds to his apprenticeship. Brother Stephen stated that he was not satisfied with the opportunities available for boys trained in shoe-making and repairing, and that he hoped to replace training in this trade in the near future. He mentioned training in metal work as a possible alternative.

Recreation Facilities

These are as described last year. Brother Stephen stated that the playing fields at the new school would be a great improvement.

Statutory Books

Statutory Books were inspected and found to be written up-to-date.

C { As a minor criticism we thought one or two of the senior boys were rather untidy in their dress and while we do not expect boys working at their benches to be quite spick and span we would like to see their working clothes kept in better repair.

In general this remains an excellent institution with a cheerful homely atmosphere. The training received is obviously of the highest order. All the boys seen appeared healthy and happy.

Thomas J. Simpson  
Kathleen B. Fournier 14/1/52

Seen.  
17/1/52



1960

## WEEK LONG INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought up

Date of  
Visit  
1960

NAME

Complaint.

December 1

2

3

4

5

[REDACTED]

S. 476

admitted

196

6

[REDACTED]

S. 358

admitted

196

7

[REDACTED]

S. 325

[REDACTED]

S. 121

[REDACTED]

S. 59

admitted

196

R B family  
1945 Simpson  
15.12.608 Annual Inspection by Dr Simpson & Miss Forrest, Ministry of Home Affairs

9

10

11

12

13

14

15 Conclusion of Inspection by Dr Simpson & Miss Forrest

JUNE 1971

14 MONDAY

WEEK 25  
165-200

[redacted] house was visited (By Bernardino this morning) ~~no one~~ came to the door.

[redacted] returned to the School this afternoon and permission from the Manager to stay at home for the night.

[redacted] returned to the school, but was not there at retiring time.!

[redacted] returned to the school at 10.00 p.m.

see note.

NES add.

65 PARIV ST.

34. ROAD

All boys put to bed at 9.15 p.m.

The Manager requested that all boys should be neat & well dressed to-morrow as there are some visitors coming to the school. Boys with dirty or torn clothes should have them changed & those with bad shoes should be given new ones. Also beds & dormitories should be well made & brushed in the morning, & the place left neat, clean & tidy. (Boys)

15 TUESDAY

WEEK 25  
166-199

Home office officials visited the school today. I understand it was the Annual Inspection.

65 Boys for Breakfast.

[redacted] apparently got permission from someone to go out with his mother this afternoon. He has not returned & his whereabouts causes a lot of anxiety.

News that Home office officials have not completed their school inspection - and will have another go - to try & sort things out.

65 Boys for Dinner

64 " " Supper.



| Date of<br>1953 | NAME                                                      | Complaint |
|-----------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|-----------|
| 1953            | <b>VISIT + MEETING OF MGT BOARD</b>                       |           |
| 28th January    | Miss Miller, Ministry of Home Affairs, visited the school |           |
| 29th            |                                                           |           |
| 30th            |                                                           |           |
| 31st            | [REDACTED] (S.I.B.) licensed                              |           |
| 1st February    |                                                           |           |
| 2nd             |                                                           |           |
| 3rd             |                                                           |           |
| 4th             |                                                           |           |
| 5th             |                                                           |           |
| 6th             |                                                           |           |
| 7th             |                                                           |           |
| 8th             |                                                           |           |
| 9th             |                                                           |           |
| 10th            |                                                           |           |
| 11th            |                                                           |           |
| 12th            |                                                           |           |
| 13th            |                                                           |           |
| 14th            |                                                           |           |
| 15th            |                                                           |           |
| 16th            |                                                           |           |
| 17th            |                                                           |           |
| 18th            |                                                           |           |
| 19th            |                                                           |           |
| 20th            |                                                           |           |
| 21st            |                                                           |           |

### MEETING OF BOARD OF MANAGEMENT

Meeting of Board of Management, His Lordship, Mpt Rev. Dr. Mageau presided and there was a full attendance of members present. Bro. Stephenson instructed to forward the plans of the new Training School to the Ministry for final approval. It was decided to purchase Ballinlurg House, Glenvariffe, as a Holiday Home for the boys. A letter was read from the Ministry drawing attention to Rule 14 of Training School Rules (1952) which required at least 2 members of the Board of Management of a Boys' Training School to be ladies. The Manager was instructed to write to the Ministry informing them that the Board did not consider it advisable to change its present constitution.

Bro. Stephenson, Mr MacLandal & Mr. McGeagh went to the Ministry of Home Affairs for a conference regarding the plans for the proposed new Training School at Glen Road (Mr McGeagh being unable to attend). Also present at the conference were: Mr A. Robinson (Per. Sec.), Mr Jackson (Vice Principal) & Mr Knight (Architect)

# 1954 ANNUAL INSPECTION

ider

his care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment,                                                                                 |            | Orders and Remarks                    |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|---------------------------------------|-----|
| 1954                                                                                       |            |                                       |     |
| October 17                                                                                 | -          |                                       |     |
| " 18                                                                                       | [REDACTED] | J. 68) licensed                       | 14  |
| " 19                                                                                       | [REDACTED] | (S. 118) admitted                     | 14  |
| " 20                                                                                       | -          |                                       |     |
| " 21                                                                                       | -          |                                       |     |
| " 22                                                                                       | -          |                                       |     |
| " 23                                                                                       | -          |                                       |     |
| " 24                                                                                       | -          |                                       |     |
| " 25                                                                                       | -          |                                       |     |
| " 26                                                                                       | [REDACTED] | (S. 63) licensed                      | 14  |
| <u>Ministry Inspectors (Dr. Simpson &amp; Macdonald)</u><br><u>make annual inspection.</u> |            |                                       |     |
| " 27                                                                                       | [REDACTED] | (S. 119) [REDACTED] (S. 120) admitted | 149 |
| " 28                                                                                       | -          |                                       | 26  |
| " 29                                                                                       | -          |                                       |     |
| 30                                                                                         | -          |                                       |     |

K.B. Foster

H.A.C. Wright

W. J. Simpson



## 1955 ANNUAL INSPECTION

is care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment.                                                                         | Orders and Remarks                                           |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|
| November 17 [REDACTED]                                                             | (J. 158) admitted 156 + 1                                    |
| " 18 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 19 [REDACTED]                                                                    | (J. 14) discharged                                           |
| " [REDACTED]                                                                       | (S. 65) discharged 154 + 2                                   |
| " 20 [REDACTED]                                                                    | (J. 14) recalled 155 + 1                                     |
| " 21 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 22 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 23 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 24 [REDACTED]                                                                    | (J. 24) absconded                                            |
| " 25 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 26 [REDACTED]                                                                    | (J. 24) returned to school & remanded to H.M. Prison 154 + 1 |
| " 27 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 28 Mr. P. Fitzsimons & Mr. P. Kinnegan resumed duty                              |                                                              |
| " 29 Annual inspection by Dr. Simpson & Miss Wright<br>Mr. P. Fitzsimons off sick. | H. E. L. Wright.<br>November 1955                            |
| " 30                                                                               |                                                              |

# 1956 ANNUAL INSPECTION

K. B. Fennell  
 30/11/56  
 17/12/56

his care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment.                                                               | Orders and Remarks    |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| November 16 [REDACTED] (J. 94) [REDACTED]                                | 142                   |
| 17                                                                       |                       |
| 18                                                                       |                       |
| 19                                                                       |                       |
| 20 All boys received chest X-ray [REDACTED] (S. 134) returned            | [REDACTED] [REDACTED] |
| 21 [REDACTED] (J. 199) [REDACTED] (J. 180) [REDACTED] (J. 181) admitted. | 145                   |
| 22                                                                       |                       |
| 23                                                                       |                       |
| 24                                                                       |                       |
| 25                                                                       |                       |
| 26                                                                       |                       |
| 27                                                                       |                       |
| 28                                                                       |                       |
| 29                                                                       |                       |
| 30 Annual [REDACTED] [REDACTED]                                          |                       |

## 1957 ANNUAL INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought unde

| Date of Visit<br>1957 | NAME                                                                                                                          | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| December 1            | [REDACTED] (J.16) discharged after recall                                                                                     | 146        |
| 2                     |                                                                                                                               |            |
| 3                     | By Simpson & Miss Forrest, Ministry of Home Affairs Inspectors,<br>made their annual inspection of school.                    |            |
| 4                     | [REDACTED] (J.210) committed                                                                                                  | 147        |
| 5                     | [REDACTED] (J.77) recalled                                                                                                    | 148        |
| 6                     |                                                                                                                               |            |
| 7                     | [REDACTED] (J.30) recalled                                                                                                    | 149        |
| 8                     |                                                                                                                               |            |
| 9                     | [REDACTED] (J.211) & [REDACTED] (J.212) committed. [REDACTED] (J.99)<br>discharged. [REDACTED] (S.158) returned from hospital | 150        |
| 10                    | [REDACTED] (J.213) [REDACTED] (S.200) [REDACTED] (S.201)<br>[REDACTED] (S.202) committed                                      | 154        |
| 11                    |                                                                                                                               |            |
| 12                    | [REDACTED] (J.142) licensed                                                                                                   | 153        |
| 13                    |                                                                                                                               |            |

K.B. Forest  
WS  
3-12-57

1958

## ANNUAL INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought und

| Date of Visit<br>1958 | NAME                                                                      | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| December 1            | -                                                                         |            |
| 2                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 3                     | [REDACTED] S. 245, [REDACTED] S. 246 admitted                             | 1125       |
| 4                     | [REDACTED] S. 253 admitted                                                | 1125       |
| 5                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 6                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 7                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 8                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 9                     | Annual Inspection by Ministry of Home Affairs, by Simpson & Miss Forrest. |            |
| 10                    | [REDACTED] S. 254, [REDACTED] S. 255 admitted                             | 1141       |
| 11                    | -                                                                         |            |
| 12                    | [REDACTED] S. 154 licensed                                                | 1141       |
| 13                    | -                                                                         |            |
| 14                    | -                                                                         |            |

Miss Forrest  
with me on  
9/12/58.



1960

## WEEK LONG INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought up.

Date of  
Visit  
1960

NAME

Complaint.

December 1

2

3

4

5

[REDACTED]

S. 476

admitted

196

6

[REDACTED]

S. 358

admitted

196

7

[REDACTED]

S. 325

[REDACTED]

S. 325

[REDACTED]

S. 359

admitted

196

R B family  
1945 Simpson  
15.12.608 Annual Inspection by Dr Simpson & Miss Forrest, Ministry of Home Affairs

9

10

11

12

13

14

15 Conclusion of Inspection by Dr Simpson & Miss Forrest

1962

## ANNUAL INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1962 | NAME                                                    | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| December 1            |                                                         |            |
| 2                     |                                                         |            |
| 3                     |                                                         |            |
| 4                     |                                                         |            |
| 5                     |                                                         |            |
| 6                     |                                                         |            |
| 7                     |                                                         |            |
| 8                     |                                                         |            |
| 9                     |                                                         |            |
| 10                    |                                                         |            |
| 11                    | Annual Inspection by Miss K. Forster B.V. N. H. Ambrose |            |
| 12                    |                                                         |            |
| 13                    |                                                         |            |
| 14                    |                                                         |            |
| 15                    |                                                         |            |

1966

## INSPECTION VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1966 | NAME                                                               | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| March 1               | [REDACTED] (Tailor) retired                                        |            |
| 2                     |                                                                    |            |
| 3                     | Bro Stephen receives O. B. E from the Queen Mother                 |            |
| 4                     |                                                                    |            |
| 5                     |                                                                    |            |
| 6                     |                                                                    |            |
| 7                     | Rev A. O'Hagan (Chaplain) resigned. Rev. A. Farquhar replaces him  |            |
| 8                     | Visit of Miss Forest, Mr. Blackburn & Mr. Westhead (Ministry A.A.) |            |
| 9                     |                                                                    |            |
| 10                    | Concert by School Band                                             |            |
| 11                    |                                                                    |            |
| 12                    |                                                                    |            |
| 13                    |                                                                    |            |
| 14                    |                                                                    |            |
| 15                    |                                                                    |            |

1967

## INSPECTION

and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment, | Orders and Remarks                                          |
|------------|-------------------------------------------------------------|
| August 17  |                                                             |
| 18         |                                                             |
| 19         |                                                             |
| 20         |                                                             |
| 21         |                                                             |
| 22         | <u>Inspection by Miss H. Forest &amp; Dr. N. H. Simpson</u> |
| 23         |                                                             |
| 24         |                                                             |
| 25         |                                                             |
| 26         |                                                             |
| 27         | Mr. Denis O'Brien, Painting Instructor, commenced           |
| 28         |                                                             |
| 29         |                                                             |
| 30         |                                                             |
| 31         |                                                             |



JUNE 1971

14 MONDAY

WEEK 25  
165-200

[redacted] house was visited (By Bernardino this morning) ~~no one~~ came to the door.

[redacted] returned to the School this afternoon and permission from the Manager to stay at home for the night.

[redacted] returned to the school, but was not there at retiring time. [redacted] returned to the school at 10.00 p.m.

see note.

NES add.

65 PARIV ST.

34. ROAD

All boys put to bed at 9.15 p.m.

The Manager requested that all boys should be neat & well dressed tomorrow as there are some visitors coming to the school. Boys with dirty or torn clothes should have them changed & those with bad shoes should be given new ones. Also beds & dormitories should be well made & brushed in the morning, & the place left neat, clean & tidy. (Boys)

15 TUESDAY

WEEK 25  
166-199

Home office officials visited the school today. I understand it was the Annual Inspection.

65 Boys for Breakfast.

[redacted] apparently got permission from someone to go out with his mother this afternoon. He has not returned & his whereabouts causes a lot of anxiety.

News that Home office officials have not completed their school inspection - and will have another go - to try & sort things out.

65 Boys for Dinner

64 " " Supper.



| Date of<br>1953 | NAME                                                      | Complaint |
|-----------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|-----------|
| 1953            | <b>VISIT + MEETING OF MGT BOARD</b>                       |           |
| 28th January    | Miss Miller, Ministry of Home Affairs, visited the school |           |
| 29th            |                                                           |           |
| 30th            |                                                           |           |
| 31st            | [REDACTED] (S.16) licensed                                |           |
| 1st February    |                                                           |           |
| 2nd             |                                                           |           |
| 3rd             |                                                           |           |
| 4th             |                                                           |           |
| 5th             |                                                           |           |
| 6th             |                                                           |           |
| 7th             |                                                           |           |
| 8th             |                                                           |           |
| 9th             |                                                           |           |
| 10th            |                                                           |           |
| 11th            |                                                           |           |
| 12th            |                                                           |           |
| 13th            |                                                           |           |
| 14th            |                                                           |           |
| 15th            |                                                           |           |
| 16th            |                                                           |           |
| 17th            |                                                           |           |
| 18th            |                                                           |           |
| 19th            |                                                           |           |
| 20th            |                                                           |           |
| 21st            |                                                           |           |

### MEETING OF BOARD OF MANAGEMENT

Meeting of Board of Management, His Lordship, Mpt Rev. Dr. Mageau presided and there was a full attendance of members present. Bro. Stephenson instructed to forward the plans of the new Training School to the Ministry for final approval. It was decided to purchase Ballinlurg House, Glenvariffe, as a Holiday Home for the boys. A letter was read from the Ministry drawing attention to Rule 11 of Training School Rules (1952) which required at least 2 members of the Board of Management of a Boys' Training School to be ladies. The Manager was instructed to write to the Ministry informing them that the Board did not consider it advisable to change its present constitution.

Bro. Stephenson, Mr MacLandal & Mr. MacLough went to the Ministry of Home Affairs for a conference regarding the plans for the proposed new Training School at Glen Road (Mr MacLough being unable to attend). Also present at the conference were: Mr A. Robinson (Per. Sec.), Mr Jackson (Vice Principal) & Mr Knight (Architect)



## MGT. BOARD MTR CONT.

1953

After a long discussion on the proposed plans for the new Training School, it was agreed to omit the two lifts in the main school building and substitute a hoist for the purpose of conveying laundry baskets to the linen room on the top floor. It was also agreed to omit the gallery in the chapel and large Assembly Hall and provide accommodation for the Brothers on a rostrum at the rear of the chapel. It was decided to provide isolation in both Senior and Junior Sick-Bays. The Architect was instructed to make provision for an Engineering Shop and Woodwork Shop as two separate bldgs. on the ground floor. Mr. Robinson queried the necessity for the small recreation yard and the number of lavatories annexed thereto. After much discussion it was decided not to change the arrangements as shown on the plans. It was also decided to omit the back entrance road and substitute instead a branch road leading from the Administration Block to the rear of the building. This was thought advisable in order to have a check on goods being delivered to the school.

5th February

-

6th

-

7th

-

8th

-

9th

-

1953

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit | NAME                                                                                             | Complaint.                                       |
|---------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------|
| 1953          |                                                                                                  |                                                  |
| 0th February  | [REDACTED]                                                                                       | (J.38) sent to Hospital for operation.           |
| 1th           |                                                                                                  |                                                  |
| 2th           |                                                                                                  |                                                  |
| 3th           | <u>Visit of Probation Officers</u>                                                               |                                                  |
| 4th           |                                                                                                  |                                                  |
| 5th           |                                                                                                  |                                                  |
| 6th           |                                                                                                  |                                                  |
| 7th           |                                                                                                  |                                                  |
| 8th           | [REDACTED]                                                                                       | (2007) sent to Hospital for treatment.           |
| 9th           | [REDACTED]                                                                                       | (J.38) returned from Hospital                    |
|               | [REDACTED]                                                                                       | (J.80) discharged on appeal to Recorder's Court. |
|               | [REDACTED]                                                                                       | (67) also appealed. Appeal dismissed.            |
|               | [REDACTED]                                                                                       | (2049) recalled from Kinscubbin                  |
| 0th           | [REDACTED]                                                                                       | (S.31) licensed.                                 |
|               | [REDACTED]                                                                                       | (S.40) removed to Hospital for operation.        |
|               | Bro Stephen & Mr. Murphy attended the inaugural meeting of new Advisory Council on Child Welfare |                                                  |
| st            |                                                                                                  |                                                  |



1953

remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment, | Orders and Remarks                                                      |
|------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 16th       | <u>The Advisory Council on Child Welfare visited the school to day.</u> |
| 17th       | -                                                                       |
| 18th       | [REDACTED] (S. 24) licensed                                             |
| 19th       | -                                                                       |
| 20th       | [REDACTED] (J. 48) licensed                                             |
| 21st       | -                                                                       |
| 22nd       | -                                                                       |
| 23rd       | -                                                                       |
| 24th       | -                                                                       |
| 25th       | -                                                                       |
| 26th       | -                                                                       |
| 27th       | -                                                                       |
| 28th       | [REDACTED] (J. 3) discharged                                            |
| 29th       | [REDACTED] (S. 28) licensed                                             |
| 30th       | [REDACTED] (S. 73) admitted                                             |

| 1953    |                                                                     | Treatment,                                        | Orders, and Remarks |
|---------|---------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|---------------------|
| October |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| Nov. 15 | [REDACTED]                                                          | (S.85) admitted                                   |                     |
| 16      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 17      | [REDACTED]                                                          | (J.15) discharged & w. called                     |                     |
| 18      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 19      | [REDACTED]                                                          | (S.42) licensed                                   |                     |
| 20      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 21      | [REDACTED]                                                          | (J.100) admitted                                  |                     |
| 22      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 23      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 24      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 25      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 26      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 27      | [REDACTED]                                                          | (J.18) licensed                                   |                     |
| 28      | [REDACTED]                                                          | J.101 [REDACTED] J.102 [REDACTED] (S.86) admitted |                     |
| 29      | Dr. Winners & Miss [REDACTED] (Therapy Instructors) visited school. |                                                   |                     |
| 30      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |
| 31      |                                                                     |                                                   |                     |

Very Respectful

## 1954 VISIT

his care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment. | Orders and Remarks          |
|------------|-----------------------------|
| May 16     |                             |
| " 17       | 141                         |
| " 18       |                             |
| " 19       | 5-3) 141                    |
| " 20       |                             |
| " 21       |                             |
| " 22       |                             |
| " 23       |                             |
| " 24       | (2092) licensed 140         |
| " 25       | 142                         |
| " 26       | 144                         |
| " 27       |                             |
| " 28       | 143                         |
| " 29       | Mr. P. Jimenez resumed duty |

# 1954 ANNUAL INSPECTION

ider

his care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

|                                                                                           |    | Treatment, | Orders and Remarks                                                                            |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1954                                                                                      |    |            |                                                                                               |
| October                                                                                   | 17 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 18 | [REDACTED] | J. 68) licensed 14                                                                            |
| "                                                                                         | 19 | [REDACTED] | (S. 118) admitted 14                                                                          |
| "                                                                                         | 20 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 21 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 22 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 23 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 24 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 25 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 26 | [REDACTED] | (S. 63) licensed 14                                                                           |
| <u>Ministry Inspector (Dr. Simpson &amp; Macdonald)</u><br><u>make annual inspection.</u> |    |            |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 27 | [REDACTED] | (S. 119) [REDACTED] (S. 120) admitted 149<br>K.B. Foster<br>H.A.C. Wright<br>W. J. Simpson 26 |
| "                                                                                         | 28 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 29 | -          |                                                                                               |
| "                                                                                         | 30 | -          |                                                                                               |



1955

# QUARTERLY MEETING OF SCHOOL GOVERNING BOARD

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit | NAME                                                                                         | Complaint.     |
|---------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|
| 1955          |                                                                                              |                |
| May 1         | -                                                                                            |                |
| " -           | Quarterly Meeting School Governing Board                                                     |                |
| " 2           | -                                                                                            |                |
| " 3           | [REDACTED] (S. 132) admitted                                                                 | 157+3          |
| " 5           | -                                                                                            |                |
| " 6           | -                                                                                            |                |
| " 7           | -                                                                                            |                |
| " 8           | -                                                                                            |                |
| " 9           | [REDACTED] (S. 124) [REDACTED] (S. 125) returned after Appeal. [REDACTED] (S. 133) admitted. | 156+3          |
| " 10          | [REDACTED] (S. 134) admitted                                                                 | 154+3<br>158+3 |
| " 11          | -                                                                                            |                |
| " 12          | [REDACTED] (2055) discharged                                                                 | 159+3          |
| " 13          | Dr Basil Pennington visited the school.                                                      |                |
| " 14          | -                                                                                            |                |
| " 15          | -                                                                                            |                |

# 1955 VISIT TO SUMMER CAMP

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought in.

| Date of Visit | NAME                                                                      | Complaint. |
|---------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| 1955          |                                                                           |            |
| August 1      | -                                                                         |            |
| " 2           | -                                                                         |            |
| " 3           | [REDACTED] (J. 141) committed                                             | 150+2      |
| " 4           | -                                                                         |            |
| " 5           | -                                                                         |            |
| " 6           | -                                                                         |            |
| " 7           | -                                                                         |            |
| " 8           | -                                                                         |            |
| " 9           | [REDACTED] (J. 149) admitted                                              | 151+2      |
| " 10          | <u>Mr. B. Hanna, Minister of Home Affairs, visited camp at Glenariffe</u> |            |
| " 11          | -                                                                         |            |
| " 12          | Last group return from camp                                               |            |
| " 13          | -                                                                         |            |
| " 14          | -                                                                         |            |

## 1955 ANNUAL INSPECTION

is care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment.                                                                         | Orders and Remarks                                           |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|
| November 17 [REDACTED]                                                             | (J. 158) admitted 156 + 1                                    |
| " 18 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 19 [REDACTED]                                                                    | (J. 14) discharged                                           |
| " [REDACTED]                                                                       | (S. 65) discharged 154 + 2                                   |
| " 20 [REDACTED]                                                                    | (J. 14) recalled 155 + 1                                     |
| " 21 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 22 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 23 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 24 [REDACTED]                                                                    | (J. 24) absconded                                            |
| " 25 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 26 [REDACTED]                                                                    | (J. 24) returned to school & remanded to H.M. Prison 154 + 1 |
| " 27 -                                                                             |                                                              |
| " 28 Mr. P. Fitzsimons & Mr. P. Kinnegan resumed duty                              |                                                              |
| " 29 Annual inspection by Dr. Simpson & Miss Wright<br>Mr. P. Fitzsimons off sick. |                                                              |
| " 30                                                                               | H. E. L. Wright.<br>November 1955                            |

# 1956 ANNUAL INSPECTION

K. B. Fennell  
 30/11/56  
 17/11/56

his care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment.                                                               | Orders and Remarks                                    |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------|
| November 16 [REDACTED] (J. 94) [REDACTED]                                | 142                                                   |
| 17                                                                       |                                                       |
| 18                                                                       |                                                       |
| 19                                                                       |                                                       |
| 20 All boys received chest X-ray [REDACTED] (S. 134) returned            | [REDACTED] (S. 134) returned<br>[REDACTED] [REDACTED] |
| 21 [REDACTED] (J. 199) [REDACTED] (J. 100) [REDACTED] (J. 181) admitted. | 145                                                   |
| 22                                                                       |                                                       |
| 23                                                                       |                                                       |
| 24                                                                       |                                                       |
| 25                                                                       |                                                       |
| 26                                                                       |                                                       |
| 27                                                                       |                                                       |
| 28                                                                       |                                                       |
| 29                                                                       |                                                       |
| 30 Annual [REDACTED] [REDACTED] [REDACTED]                               |                                                       |



## 1957 VISIT

care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment.                                                          | Orders and Remarks       |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| January 17                                                          |                          |
| 18                                                                  |                          |
| 19                                                                  |                          |
| 20                                                                  |                          |
| 21                                                                  |                          |
| 22                                                                  |                          |
| 23 [REDACTED]                                                       | (S. 168) admitted 11-6   |
| 24                                                                  |                          |
| 25                                                                  |                          |
| 26 [REDACTED]                                                       | (J. 144) re-called 11-7  |
| 27                                                                  |                          |
| 28                                                                  |                          |
| 29 Lord Wakehurst, Governor of Northern Ireland, visited the School |                          |
| 30 [REDACTED]                                                       | (J. 165) admitted 11-8   |
| 31 [REDACTED]                                                       | (J. 31) discharged 11-21 |

| 1957 | Treatment. | VISITS                                                                                                                                              | Orders and Remarks |
|------|------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------|
| May  | 16         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 17         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 18         | [REDACTED] (J. 111) licensed                                                                                                                        | 148                |
|      | 19         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 20         | <u>Visit of Children's Homes &amp; Training Schools Committee</u>                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 21         | [REDACTED] (J. 118) discharged                                                                                                                      | 1104               |
|      | 22         | [REDACTED] (J. 198) [REDACTED] (J. 199) [REDACTED] (J. 200) admitted. 1-11                                                                          |                    |
|      | 23         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 24         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 25         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 26         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 27         | Mr P. J. Fitzgibbon (Manual Instructor) on sick leave.                                                                                              |                    |
|      | 28         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 29         | [REDACTED] (J. 101) admitted.                                                                                                                       |                    |
|      | 30         | -                                                                                                                                                   |                    |
|      | 31         | <u>Visit to School of Rt. Hon. W. W. B. Topping, Minister of Home Affairs, with Mr R. J. Dunbar &amp; Mr A. Alexander, Ministry of Home Affairs</u> |                    |

1957 VISIT

his care, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| 1957<br>Treatment, | Orders and Remarks                                    |
|--------------------|-------------------------------------------------------|
| October 16 -       |                                                       |
| 17 -               |                                                       |
| 18                 | <u>N. J. Child Welfare Council visited the School</u> |
| 19 -               |                                                       |
| 20 -               |                                                       |
| 21 -               |                                                       |
| 22 [REDACTED]      | (S. 124) licensed 11/6                                |
| 23 -               |                                                       |
| 24 -               |                                                       |
| 25 -               |                                                       |
| 26 [REDACTED]      | (S. 119) discharged 11/5                              |
| 27 -               |                                                       |
| 28 -               |                                                       |
| 29 -               |                                                       |
| 30 [REDACTED]      | (S. 196) is committed                                 |

# 1957 ANNUAL INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought unde

| Date of Visit<br>1957 | NAME                                                                                                                          | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| December 1            | [REDACTED] (J.16) discharged after recall                                                                                     | 146        |
| 2                     |                                                                                                                               |            |
| 3                     | By Simpson & Miss Forrest, Ministry of Home Affairs Inspectors,<br>made their annual inspection of school.                    |            |
| 4                     | [REDACTED] (J.210) committed                                                                                                  | 147        |
| 5                     | [REDACTED] (J.77) recalled                                                                                                    | 148        |
| 6                     |                                                                                                                               |            |
| 7                     | [REDACTED] (J.30) recalled                                                                                                    | 149        |
| 8                     |                                                                                                                               |            |
| 9                     | [REDACTED] (J.211) & [REDACTED] (J.212) committed. [REDACTED] (J.99)<br>discharged. [REDACTED] (S.158) returned from hospital | 150        |
| 10                    | [REDACTED] (J.213) [REDACTED] (S.200) [REDACTED] (S.201)<br>[REDACTED] (S.202) committed                                      | 154        |
| 11                    |                                                                                                                               |            |
| 12                    | [REDACTED] (J.142) licensed                                                                                                   | 153        |
| 13                    |                                                                                                                               |            |

K.B. Forest  
WS  
3-12-57



# 1958 MEETING OF GOVERNING BOARD

emark upon any matter affecting the health of the Inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment, | Orders and Remarks                                    |                                             |
|------------|-------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| 14. 16     | -                                                     |                                             |
| 17         | <u>First meeting of Governing Board in new school</u> |                                             |
| 18         | -                                                     |                                             |
| 19         | [REDACTED]                                            | (J. 218) & [REDACTED] (S. 212) admitted 156 |
| 20         | -                                                     |                                             |
| 21         | -                                                     |                                             |
| 22         | [REDACTED]                                            | (J. 141) discharged 155                     |
| 23         | -                                                     |                                             |
| 24         | -                                                     |                                             |
| 25         | [REDACTED]                                            | (J. 128) discharged 154                     |
| 26         | [REDACTED]                                            | (J. 219) & [REDACTED] (S. 213) admitted 156 |
| 27         | [REDACTED]                                            | (J. 220) admitted 157                       |
| 28         | [REDACTED]                                            | (S. 214) admitted 158.                      |

1958

## ANNUAL INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought und

| Date of Visit<br>1958 | NAME                                                                      | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| December 1            | -                                                                         |            |
| 2                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 3                     | [REDACTED] S. 245, [REDACTED] T. 246 admitted                             | 1125       |
| 4                     | [REDACTED] S. 253 admitted                                                | 1125       |
| 5                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 6                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 7                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 8                     | -                                                                         |            |
| 9                     | Annual Inspection by Ministry of Home Affairs, by Simpson & Miss Forrest. |            |
| 10                    | [REDACTED] S. 254, [REDACTED] S. 255 admitted                             | 1141       |
| 11                    | -                                                                         |            |
| 12                    | [REDACTED] S. 154 licensed                                                | 1141       |
| 13                    | -                                                                         |            |
| 14                    | -                                                                         |            |

Miss Forrest  
with me on  
9/12/58.

| Date of Visit<br>1959 | 1959 INSPECTION                                                   | NAME      | Complaint.                             |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------|----------------------------------------|
| December 1            | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 2                     | [REDACTED] S. 192                                                 | licensed  |                                        |
| 3                     | [REDACTED] J. 243                                                 | admitted  |                                        |
| 4                     | Sr. Margaret Barry (Domestic) resigned from staff.                |           |                                        |
| 5                     | Sr. Agnes Morley (Domestic) appointed to staff                    |           |                                        |
| 6                     | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 7                     | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 8                     | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 9                     | [REDACTED] J. 82                                                  | licensed. | [REDACTED] J. 183 committed to Bristol |
| 10                    | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 11                    | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 12                    | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 13                    | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 14                    | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 15                    | —                                                                 |           |                                        |
| 16                    | Annual Inspection by Ministry Inspectors Miss Jones & Dr. Simpson |           |                                        |

K.B. Fawcett  
M.J. Simpson 14/12/59

1960

VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

Date of  
Visit  
1960

NAME

Complaint.

May

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10 Visit to School by Lord Mayo (Mr. Robin Kinahan), Town Clerk (Mr. John Dunlop)  
 & High Sheriff (Mr. Martin Wallace)

11

12

13

14

S.119

discharged

189

S.119  
admitted

189

S.213

to Bristol

28

S.328

admitted.

S.213

S.329

admitted.

S.119

discharged

188



1960

## VISITS

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought in

| Date of Visit<br>1960 | NAME                                                                                                                                                                     | Complaint.   |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|
| October 1             | —                                                                                                                                                                        |              |
| " 2                   | —                                                                                                                                                                        |              |
| " 3                   | —                                                                                                                                                                        |              |
| " 4                   | T. 313<br>[redacted] committed. [redacted] 198                                                                                                                           | licensed 193 |
| " 5                   | T. 315<br>[redacted] J. 316<br>[redacted] T. 317<br>[redacted] S. 346<br>[redacted] S. 347<br>[redacted] committed                                                       | 191          |
| " 6                   | [redacted] 347                                                                                                                                                           | licensed 191 |
| " 7                   | —                                                                                                                                                                        |              |
| " 8                   | J. 186<br>[redacted] J. 241<br>[redacted] S. 242<br>[redacted]                                                                                                           | licensed 191 |
| " 9                   | —                                                                                                                                                                        |              |
| " 10                  | S. 295<br>[redacted] S. 297<br>[redacted]                                                                                                                                | licensed 192 |
| " 11                  | <u>Visit to School by Rt. Hon. Brian Faulkner, M.P., Minister of Home Affairs,<br/>R. G. R. Dunbar, Esq., O.B.E. (Secretary) &amp; Brig. J. M. Wheeler (C.O., N.I.).</u> |              |
| " 12                  | —                                                                                                                                                                        |              |
| " 13                  | S. 243<br>[redacted]                                                                                                                                                     | licensed 191 |
| " 14                  | <u>Visit to School by Messrs R. R. Tyrrell &amp; H. McGrath (Ministry) &amp;<br/>Quang Ho Lee Minister of Justice, South Korea</u>                                       |              |

1960

## WEEK LONG INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought up.

Date of  
Visit  
1960

NAME

Complaint.

December 1

2

3

4

5

6

7

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

R B family  
1945 Simpson  
15.12.60

[REDACTED] 5.476

admitted

196

[REDACTED] 5.358

admitted

196

[REDACTED] 5.325

[REDACTED] 5.325

[REDACTED] 5.359

admitted

196

8 Annual Inspection by Dr Simpson & Miss Forrest, Ministry of Home Affairs15 Conclusion of Inspection by Dr Simpson & Miss Forrest

1961

VISIT M of H.A.

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought und.

| Date of Visit<br>1961 | NAME                                               | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|----------------------------------------------------|------------|
| January 1             |                                                    |            |
| 2                     |                                                    |            |
| 3                     | classes resume after Christmas holidays            |            |
| 4                     |                                                    |            |
| 5                     |                                                    |            |
| 6                     |                                                    |            |
| 7                     |                                                    |            |
| 8                     |                                                    |            |
| 9                     |                                                    |            |
| 10                    |                                                    |            |
| 11                    |                                                    |            |
| 12                    | visit by Mr. R. Sterling, Ministry of Home Affairs |            |
| 13                    |                                                    |            |
| 14                    |                                                    |            |
| 15                    |                                                    |            |

1961

VISIT

e, and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the Inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment.   | Orders and Remarks                                                                                                                                                     |
|--------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| September 17 |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 18           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 19           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 20           | <u>Visit by Most Hon. Bro. Nicet Joseph, Superior General, de La Salle</u><br><u>Brothers accompanied by Very Rev. Bro. Lawrence O'Toole,</u><br><u>Asst. General.</u> |
| 21           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 22           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 23           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 24           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 25           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 26           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 27           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 28           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 29           |                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 30           |                                                                                                                                                                        |



1962

VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1962 | NAME                                                                                                  | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| July 1                |                                                                                                       |            |
| 2                     |                                                                                                       |            |
| 3                     |                                                                                                       |            |
| 4                     |                                                                                                       |            |
| 5                     |                                                                                                       |            |
| 6                     |                                                                                                       |            |
| 7                     |                                                                                                       |            |
| 8                     |                                                                                                       |            |
| 9                     | Mr Bradley Mc Ball, R.M. visited the School                                                           |            |
| 10                    | <u>Lord Mayor (Mr. Martin Wallace) &amp; Town Clerk (Mr John Dunlop)</u><br><u>visited the School</u> |            |
| 11                    |                                                                                                       |            |
| 12                    |                                                                                                       |            |
| 13                    |                                                                                                       |            |
| 14                    | Last group (Juniors) go to Camp                                                                       |            |

1962

## ANNUAL INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1962 | NAME                                                    | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| December 1            |                                                         |            |
| 2                     |                                                         |            |
| 3                     |                                                         |            |
| 4                     |                                                         |            |
| 5                     |                                                         |            |
| 6                     |                                                         |            |
| 7                     |                                                         |            |
| 8                     |                                                         |            |
| 9                     |                                                         |            |
| 10                    |                                                         |            |
| 11                    | Annual Inspection by Miss K. Forster B.V. N. H. Ambrose |            |
| 12                    |                                                         |            |
| 13                    |                                                         |            |
| 14                    |                                                         |            |
| 15                    |                                                         |            |

1963

VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought und.

Date of  
Visit

NAME

Complaint.

March 1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14 Party of Lay Members of Juvenile Court to visit school

15

1963

VISIT

to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

March

Treatment.

Orders and Remarks

ch 17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

Mass X-Ray Unit annual visit  
2 members of Fire Department of Justice pay a visit

29

30



1964

Visit

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought u

| Date of Visit<br>1964 | NAME                                                                                                                       | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| March 1               |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 2                     |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 3                     |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 4                     |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 5                     | Boys receive B.b.h. Injections                                                                                             |            |
| 6                     |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 7                     |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 8                     |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 9                     | 4 teacher students from Stranmillis visit school                                                                           |            |
| 10                    |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 11                    | 10 Uganda students from Stranmillis pay a visit                                                                            |            |
| 12                    |                                                                                                                            |            |
| 13                    | visit of 4 N.P.s: Mr Ighas Stewart, Mr N. Minford, Mr. Boyd & Miss S. Murnaghan, accompanied by Miss Forrest & Mr. Parkes. |            |
| 14                    |                                                                                                                            |            |

1964

VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought up

| Date of Visit<br>1964 | NAME                                     | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|------------------------------------------|------------|
| 1                     |                                          |            |
| 2                     |                                          |            |
| 3                     |                                          |            |
| 4                     |                                          |            |
| 5                     |                                          |            |
| 6                     |                                          |            |
| 7                     |                                          |            |
| 8                     |                                          |            |
| 9                     |                                          |            |
| 10                    |                                          |            |
| 11                    |                                          |            |
| 12                    |                                          |            |
| 13                    | <u>Juvenile Court Panel visit School</u> |            |
| 14                    |                                          |            |
| 15                    |                                          |            |

1964

## VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought in

| Date of Visit<br>1964 | NAME                                           | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|------------------------------------------------|------------|
| December 1            | Mr. A. W. Davis (Bandmaster) takes up duty     |            |
| 2                     | <u>Lord Mayor of Hammersmith visits School</u> |            |
| 3                     |                                                |            |
| 4                     |                                                |            |
| 5                     | Death of Bro Andrew (G'Sullivan)               |            |
| 6                     |                                                |            |
| 7                     |                                                |            |
| 8                     |                                                |            |
| 9                     |                                                |            |
| 10                    |                                                |            |
| 11                    |                                                |            |
| 12                    |                                                |            |
| 13                    |                                                |            |
| 14                    |                                                |            |
| 15                    |                                                |            |

## 1965 VISIT / INSPECTION

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1965 | NAME                                                                                    | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| February 1            |                                                                                         |            |
| 2                     |                                                                                         |            |
| 3                     |                                                                                         |            |
| 4                     |                                                                                         |            |
| 5                     |                                                                                         |            |
| 6                     |                                                                                         |            |
| 7                     |                                                                                         |            |
| 8                     | Lord Evers, Governor of Northern Ireland, visited school and inspected club activities. |            |
| 9                     |                                                                                         |            |
| 10                    |                                                                                         |            |
| 11                    |                                                                                         |            |
| 12                    |                                                                                         |            |
| 13                    |                                                                                         |            |
| 14                    |                                                                                         |            |



# 1965 MEETING OF GOVERNING BOARD

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought up

| Date of Visit<br>1965 | NAME                                                                                          | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| May 1                 |                                                                                               |            |
| 2                     |                                                                                               |            |
| 3                     | Mrs Lillian Larkin appointed as cleaner (Junior Side)                                         |            |
| 4                     |                                                                                               |            |
| 5                     | <u>Quarterly Meeting of Governing Board</u><br>Royal College of Nursing students visit School |            |
| 6                     |                                                                                               |            |
| 7                     |                                                                                               |            |
| 8                     |                                                                                               |            |
| 9                     |                                                                                               |            |
| 10                    |                                                                                               |            |
| 11                    |                                                                                               |            |
| 12                    |                                                                                               |            |
| 13                    |                                                                                               |            |
| 14                    |                                                                                               |            |

1965

## VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit | NAME                                                              | Complaint.         |
|---------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------|
| 1965          |                                                                   |                    |
| September 1   | Bro. <b>BR 5</b>                                                  | appointed Manager. |
|               | Bro. <b>BR 43</b> & Bro. <b>BR 1</b>                              | exchange posts     |
| 2             |                                                                   |                    |
| 3             |                                                                   |                    |
| 4             |                                                                   |                    |
| 5             |                                                                   |                    |
| 6             |                                                                   |                    |
| 7             |                                                                   |                    |
| 8             |                                                                   |                    |
| 9             |                                                                   |                    |
| 10            |                                                                   |                    |
| 11            |                                                                   |                    |
| 12            |                                                                   |                    |
| 13            |                                                                   |                    |
| 14            | At. Hon. G. W. Jones, L.B., M.P. (Attorney-General) visits School |                    |

1965

## MEETING OF GOVERNING BOARD

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1965 | NAME                                        | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------------------|------------|
| October 1             |                                             |            |
| 2                     |                                             |            |
| 3                     |                                             |            |
| 4                     |                                             |            |
| 5                     |                                             |            |
| 6                     | <u>Quarterly Meeting of Governing Board</u> |            |
| 7                     |                                             |            |
| 8                     |                                             |            |
| 9                     |                                             |            |
| 10                    |                                             |            |
| 11                    |                                             |            |
| 12                    |                                             |            |
| 13                    |                                             |            |
| 14                    |                                             |            |
| 15                    |                                             |            |



1965 VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought up

| Date of Visit<br>1965 | NAME                                                         | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| November 1            | Senior boys return to school                                 |            |
| 2                     | Junior .. .. .                                               |            |
| 3                     |                                                              |            |
| 4                     |                                                              |            |
| 5                     |                                                              |            |
| 6                     |                                                              |            |
| 7                     |                                                              |            |
| 8                     |                                                              |            |
| 9                     |                                                              |            |
| 10                    |                                                              |            |
| 11                    |                                                              |            |
| 12                    | Rt. Hon. Lord MacDermott, Lord Chief Justice, visits School. |            |
| 13                    |                                                              |            |
| 14                    |                                                              |            |
| 15                    |                                                              |            |



| 1966 | Treatment. | VISIT                                                 | Orders and Remarks |
|------|------------|-------------------------------------------------------|--------------------|
| May  | 16         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 17         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 18         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 19         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 20         | Students from St Mary's Training College visit school |                    |
|      | 21         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 22         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 23         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 24         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 25         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 26         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 27         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 28         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 29         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 30         |                                                       |                    |
|      | 31         | <u>Sir William Jenkins, Lord Mayor, visits School</u> |                    |

1966

## INSPECTION VISIT

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1966 | NAME                                                               | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| March 1               | [REDACTED] (Tailor) retired                                        |            |
| 2                     |                                                                    |            |
| 3                     | Bro Stephen receives O. B. E from the Queen Mother                 |            |
| 4                     |                                                                    |            |
| 5                     |                                                                    |            |
| 6                     |                                                                    |            |
| 7                     | Rev A. O'Hagan (Chaplain) resigned. Rev. A. Farquhar replaces him  |            |
| 8                     | Visit of Miss Forest, Mr. Blackburn & Mr. Westhead (Ministry A.A.) |            |
| 9                     |                                                                    |            |
| 10                    | Concert by School Band                                             |            |
| 11                    |                                                                    |            |
| 12                    |                                                                    |            |
| 13                    |                                                                    |            |
| 14                    |                                                                    |            |
| 15                    |                                                                    |            |

1966

## VISITS

1 to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment, | Orders and Remarks                                                   |
|------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------|
| April      |                                                                      |
| 16 17      |                                                                      |
| 18         |                                                                      |
| 19         |                                                                      |
| 20         | <u>Ms Warburton, London Juvenile Court Magistrate, visits school</u> |
| 21         |                                                                      |
| 22         | visit of Student Nurses                                              |
| 23         |                                                                      |
| 24         |                                                                      |
| 25         | X-Ray Unit at school                                                 |
| 26         |                                                                      |
| 27         |                                                                      |
| 28         |                                                                      |
| 29         |                                                                      |
| 30         |                                                                      |

1966

MEETING OF SCHOOL  
GOVERNING BOARD

mark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment,       | Orders and Remarks                                                     |
|------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| October<br>ev 17 |                                                                        |
| 18               |                                                                        |
| 19               |                                                                        |
| 20               |                                                                        |
| 21               | Mr D. Mulholland, Building Instructor, resigned<br>owing to ill-health |
| 22               |                                                                        |
| 23               |                                                                        |
| 24               |                                                                        |
| 25               |                                                                        |
| 26               |                                                                        |
| 27               | <u>Meeting of School Governing Board.</u>                              |
| 28               |                                                                        |
| 29               |                                                                        |
| 30               |                                                                        |



1967

MEETING SCHOOL GOVERNING  
BOARD

remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment. | Orders and Remarks                       |
|------------|------------------------------------------|
| February   |                                          |
| Feb 16     |                                          |
| 17         |                                          |
| 18         |                                          |
| 19         |                                          |
| 20         |                                          |
| 21         |                                          |
| 22         | <u>Meeting of School Governing Board</u> |
| 23         | Visit of S.R. Nurses from City Hospital  |
| 24         |                                          |
| 25         |                                          |
| 26         |                                          |
| 27         |                                          |
| 28         |                                          |

1967

VISIT

ad to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment, | Orders and Remarks                                                                                                           |
|------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| May 17     |                                                                                                                              |
| 18         |                                                                                                                              |
| 19         | <u>Visit of Mr J. E. Greaves, Permanent Secretary, Ministry of Home Affairs, with Mr J. H. Larkes &amp; Mr E. Blackburn.</u> |
| 20         |                                                                                                                              |
| 21         |                                                                                                                              |
| 22         | SPT 52 Housemaster, commenced duty                                                                                           |
| 23         |                                                                                                                              |
| 24         |                                                                                                                              |
| 25         |                                                                                                                              |
| 26         |                                                                                                                              |
| 27         |                                                                                                                              |
| 28         |                                                                                                                              |
| 29         |                                                                                                                              |
| 30         |                                                                                                                              |

| Date of Visit<br>1967 | NAME                              | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------------|------------|
| Jun =                 | MEETING SCHOOL<br>GOVERNING BOARD |            |
| 1                     |                                   |            |
| 2                     |                                   |            |
| 3                     |                                   |            |
| 4                     |                                   |            |
| 5                     |                                   |            |
| 6                     |                                   |            |
| 7                     |                                   |            |
| 8                     |                                   |            |
| 9                     |                                   |            |
| 10                    |                                   |            |
| 11                    |                                   |            |
| 12                    |                                   |            |
| 13                    | Meeting of School Governing Board |            |
| 14                    | X-Ray Unit visits school          |            |
| 15                    | Annual School Sports              |            |
| 16                    |                                   |            |

1967

## INSPECTION

and to remark upon any matter affecting the health of the inmates requiring special attention.

| Treatment, | Orders and Remarks                                          |
|------------|-------------------------------------------------------------|
| August 17  |                                                             |
| 18         |                                                             |
| 19         |                                                             |
| 20         |                                                             |
| 21         |                                                             |
| 22         | <u>Inspection by Miss H. Forest &amp; Dr. N. H. Simpson</u> |
| 23         |                                                             |
| 24         |                                                             |
| 25         |                                                             |
| 26         |                                                             |
| 27         | Mr. Denis O'Brien, Painting Instructor, commenced           |
| 28         |                                                             |
| 29         |                                                             |
| 30         |                                                             |
| 31         |                                                             |



1968

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1968 | NAME                                                                                                                                            | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| May 1                 |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 2                     |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 3                     |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 4                     |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 5                     |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 6                     |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 7                     |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 8                     | <u>Most Rev. Dr. Birch, Bishop of Ossory, visited school with Mr. G. B. Newe and Miss Forest &amp; Mr. Parkes from Ministry of Home Affairs</u> |            |
| 9                     |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 10                    |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 11                    |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 12                    |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 13                    |                                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 14                    |                                                                                                                                                 |            |

1968

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1968 | NAME                                       | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------------------|------------|
| July 1                |                                            |            |
| 2                     | <u>Visit of Education Welfare Officers</u> |            |
| 3                     |                                            |            |
| 4                     |                                            |            |
| 5                     |                                            |            |
| 6                     |                                            |            |
| 7                     |                                            |            |
| 8                     |                                            |            |
| 9                     |                                            |            |
| 10                    |                                            |            |
| 11                    |                                            |            |
| 12                    |                                            |            |
| 13                    |                                            |            |
| 14                    |                                            |            |
| 15                    |                                            |            |

1968

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought in

| Date of Visit<br>1968 | NAME                                                                                                                            | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| August 1              | Bro <b>BR 42</b> , Housemaster, commenced duty                                                                                  |            |
| 2                     |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 3                     | Camp closes                                                                                                                     |            |
| 4                     |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 5                     |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 6                     |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 7                     |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 8                     |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 9                     |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 10                    |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 11                    |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 12                    |                                                                                                                                 |            |
| 13                    | <u>Very Rev. Father Provincial O.M.I., Fr McFonagle &amp; Mr McBeirte (Republic of Ireland Dept. of Education) visit school</u> |            |
| 14                    |                                                                                                                                 |            |

1969

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought under

| Date of Visit<br>1969 | NAME                                                                                                                     | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| April 28              | <u>visit to School of Lord Mayor (Alderman Geddis) with Miss Forest &amp; Mr. &amp; Mrs. Blackburn</u>                   |            |
| May 9                 | Stranmillis Students visit                                                                                               |            |
| " 21                  | visit by students of Royal College of Nursing                                                                            |            |
| " 27                  | visit by Child Care Students from Rupert Stanley College                                                                 |            |
| August 20             | classes resume in Junior School                                                                                          |            |
| September 1           | Mr J. O'Reilly (Rural Science) & Mr J. Mcloskey (E.S.N.) commenced duty                                                  |            |
| October 13            | Mr J. McGuinness took up duty as Engineering Instructor in place of Mr B. Mc Carthy who has resigned owing to ill health |            |
| November 7            | <u>visit by members of Juvenile Court Lay Panel</u>                                                                      |            |
| " 14                  | Child Care Students from Rupert Stanley College                                                                          |            |
| December 4            | " " " " " "                                                                                                              |            |
| " 22                  | Death of Bro. Stephen Kelly, Deputy Master                                                                               |            |
| " 24                  | Funeral of Bro. Stephen                                                                                                  |            |



## 1970 - VISITS

Treatment.

Orders and Remarks

1970

|             |                                                                                                    |
|-------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| January 26  | Bro <b>BR 46</b> appointed Deputy Manager                                                          |
| February 14 | <u>visit to school by Mr John Taylor, N.P. Parliamentary Secretary to Minister of Home Affairs</u> |
| " 15        | Mass Radiography Unit here to-day                                                                  |
| " 16        | <u>visit by Probation Officers</u>                                                                 |
| " 24        | <u>Mr Gullenane &amp; Mr Wade from Education Dept of Republic of Ireland visit School</u>          |
| April 23    | Students from Rupert Stanley college visit                                                         |
| " 29        | visit of Queen's University Social Science students                                                |
| May 5       | visit of Rupert Stanley college Students                                                           |
| " 21        | Uganda Students from Stranmillis college visit School                                              |
| June 11     | visit of students from St Mary's college of Education                                              |
| " 18        | Sister O'Brallaghan, Asst. Matron, resigned                                                        |
| " 19        | Sister O'Sullivan appointed Asst. Matron                                                           |
| August 31.  | Bro Joseph Healy (Teacher) & Bro. Patrick O'Leary (Housemaster) resigned.                          |
| Sept. 1.    | Bro Samon Kirk (Teacher) & Bro. Francis Harte (Housemaster) appointed.                             |

## 1971 - VISITS

N.B.—The Medical Officer is required to note the date of Reception and Discharge of every case brought on

| Date of Visit<br>1971 | NAME                                                        | Complaint. |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| February 5            | Mass Radiography Unit here to-day                           |            |
| " 8                   | Trinee Youth Employment Officers visit school               |            |
| " 17                  | visit of students from St. Mary's College of Education      |            |
| " 24                  | " " " " " " " " " " " "                                     |            |
| March 29              | Health visitors from Royal College of Nursing visit school. |            |
| April 29              | visit of students from Rupert Stanley College               |            |
| May 13                | Ugandan students from Stranmillis College visit school      |            |

ST PATRICK'S T.S. INSPECTION 1971 –  
REFERENCE IN LOG BOOK

JUNE 1971

14 MONDAY

WEEK 25  
165-200

[redacted] house was visited (By Bernardino this morning) ~~no one~~ came to the door.

[redacted] returned to the School this afternoon and permission from the Manager to stay at home for the night.

[redacted] returned to the school, but was not there at retiring time. [redacted] returned to the school at 10.00 p.m.

see note.

NES add.

65 PARIV ST.

34. ROAD

All boys put to bed at 9.15 p.m.

The Manager requested that all boys should be neat & well dressed tomorrow as there are some visitors coming to the school. Boys with dirty or torn clothes should have them changed & those with bad shoes should be given new ones. Also beds & dormitories should be well made & brushed in the morning, & the place left neat, clean & tidy. (Boys)

15 TUESDAY

WEEK 25  
166-199

Home office officials visited the school today. I understand it was the annual inspection.

65 Boys for breakfast.

[redacted] apparently got permission from someone to go out with his mother this afternoon. He has not returned & his whereabouts causes a lot of anxiety.

News that Home office officials have not completed their school inspection - and will have another go - to try & sort things out.

65 Boys for dinner

64 " " Supper.



6. Within the training schools all of the teaching staff had professional qualifications in education. Many of the care staff may have had some relevant experience and qualifications in, for example, youth work. However, it was accepted by the NIO and senior staff in the schools that it would be desirable for care staff to obtain professional qualifications in residential social work. It was my role to encourage training for care staff through full and part time courses. I felt like I was pushing on an open door encouraging both the training schools to have their staff qualified and the NIO to fund this training. Over a period of years many staff obtained relevant qualifications. Some of the schools had a majority of male staff. It had been accepted that the presence of female staff could bring some degree of normalisation to the residential experience for young people. I encouraged the adoption of a more balanced gender approach to staffing.
7. Other duties were carried out in relation to various elements within the Criminal Justice System that had a social work component. For example, contact with the Probation Service and Prison Welfare Departments within Her Majesty's Prisons at Maze, Crumlin Road and Armagh Women's Prison.
8. There was no fixed timetable for my visits to the training schools - I probably visited them approximately once a month. From time to time more frequent visits were necessary, usually at the request of the Principals if some matter of urgency emerged. The Principals would have used me as a sounding board to discuss practice and procedure within the schools. Some of the schools experienced more difficulties than others. For example, St Patrick's, because of its location in West Belfast, which for a significant period of the troubles experienced considerable civil disorder, had different needs and difficulties than Rathgael in Bangor, St Joseph's in Middletown and Whiteabbey Girls School.
9. It is perhaps worth remembering that the training schools, largely modelled on the old Approved School system in Great Britain, were trying to function in caring for young people at a time of great civil unrest in Northern Ireland where many of the young people were in danger from some of the paramilitaries, sometimes with serious and indeed fatal consequences as is already known to this Inquiry.
10. The early 1980's saw major changes in relation to services and accommodation for young people in trouble. In other parts of the United Kingdom the Approved Schools became known as Community Homes with Education. Schools were experiencing many problems of coping with very difficult and dangerous residents in their care. The Department of Health and the Home Office embarked on a policy of developing the concept of Youth Treatment. St Charles Youth Treatment Centre in Brentwood, Essex opened in 1971 and the second unit, Glenthorne in Birmingham soon after. These Centres provided secure





ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

Inspection Report

February 1988



## CONTENTS

| Introduction                               | Page |
|--------------------------------------------|------|
| 1. Historical Background                   | 1    |
| 2. The Children and Young Persons Resident | 2    |
| 3. Management and Staffing                 | 4    |
| 4. Location and Premises                   | 13   |
| 5. Justice                                 | 15   |
| 6. Care                                    | 30   |
| 7. Assessment Unit                         | 44   |
| 8. Field Social Work Department            | 47   |
| 9. Education/Vocational Training           | 51   |
| 10. Catering and Diet                      | 54   |
| 11. Health Care                            | 56   |
| 12. Religion                               | 59   |
| 13. Official Visitors                      | 60   |
| 14. Official Records                       | 62   |
| 15. Psychological/Psychiatric Services     | 64   |
| 16. Integration with the Local Community   | 66   |
| 17. Conclusions                            | 68   |
| 18. Recommendations                        | 69   |
| Appendices                                 |      |

**INTRODUCTION**

St Patrick's Training School was inspected by the Social Services Inspectorate largely during the period 11 January - 29 January 1988. The team comprised of Dr K F McCoy, Mr D P O'Brien and Mr C W Donnell. During the course of the inspection time was spent in the school during the evenings and at weekends. A programme of meetings and agendas was arranged with [REDACTED] BR 98 the Director and detailed background information was supplied to the team. The inspection proceeded on the basis of an examination of the premises, resources and records of the school and involved the Inspectors in observation and evaluation of current work being undertaken by the staff. The views of the young people, about their life in the school, were collected and assessed.

The Inspectors would like to express their sincere thanks to the Management Board, the staff and young people at the school for their co-operation. They would especially like to thank [REDACTED] BR 98 and Brother David O'Riordan for their generous hospitality and the full assistance offered throughout the inspection.

It is hoped that this report and the appraisal of the school which it constitutes, will contribute to the future of St Patrick's as a child care resource.



## 1. HISTORICAL BACKGROUND

1.1 In the Staff Handbook and General Guidelines, provided as background information to the inspection the historical prospective of the school is traced. "St Patrick's Boys Home, as it is familiarly known in Belfast, was first established as a Catholic Boys Home in 1862 and was housed in premises in Donegall Street. In 1872 it moved to the premises at Milltown and in the following year it was certified by the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland as the first Industrial School in Ireland. During all those years it catered for 100 boys and was operated by lay masters under the control of the Bishop of the Diocese. In 1917, at the request of the late Cardinal MacRory, the school was placed under the care of the De La Salle Brothers and, in that year, a staff of 5 Brothers took over the work. In 1921 a further change took place due to the partition of the country. As the only Industrial School for Catholic Boys in Northern Ireland was Milltown and as there was no Catholic institution for the reception of Reformatory boys who previously were sent to Glencree, Co Wicklow, the Brothers, at the request of the Bishop, extended their work to cope with this type of boy. As a result of this change the school, which had provided for 100 boys, had now to deal with 160 and the question of providing adequate accommodation became a matter of urgency. Consequently, in 1941, the Bishop of Down and Connor purchased a farm of land on the Glen Road with a view to transferring the school from Milltown. In 1957 the new St Patrick's Training School was opened on a 100 acre farm spanning the Glen Road and Springfield Road."

1.2 St Patrick's is a training school as defined in Section 137 of the Children and Young Persons Act (NI) 1968. It operates within the existing legislation with children only being admitted who are the subject of a Training School Order, a Place of Safety Order, Interim Fit Person Orders and those remanded by the Courts. In accordance with recent Government policy an attempt has been made to segregate the young people committed for care considerations and those adjudicated as offenders (Justice). The segregation has only been partially achieved and this will be dealt with in detail later in the Report.



## 2. THE CHILDREN AND YOUNG PERSONS RESIDENT

- 2.1 On Census Day, 15 December 1987, there were 95 young persons on the St Patrick's roll. However, only 61 boys were in residence. Twelve were temporarily resident in another school (Lisnevin), 1 was boarded out, 3 were in hospital, 8 were on extended leave, 8 were absconders and there were 2 others (1 at home on leave and 1 sick at home). The 8 boys on extended leave were living at home with relatives or guardians.
- 2.2 The legal status of the boys was as follows:- Training School Orders 85, Place of Safety Orders 4, Fit Person Orders 2, Remands 3 and 1 was on a one month committal. The latter disposal is now a seldom used sentence of the juvenile court.
- 2.3 The ages of the boys ranged from 12 to 18+ years, with the main concentration (59) in the 16 to 17 year category. The second largest group (26) was in the 14 to 15 year group. Prior to placement in St Patrick's 63 of the boys had resided at home, 22 had come from children's homes, 3 were admitted following foster home breakdown, 1 had been in hospital, 1 in an assessment unit and 5 others were in a variety of settings which included transfer from Care to Justice and returning from the Lisnevin Remand Unit.
- 2.4 Of the total population of 95, 34 were in the Care side of the school. This number includes education cases and the remaining 61 were attached to the Justice division of the school. Seventeen boys were already the subject of Training School Orders. All of the Health and Social Services Boards had referred young people to the school on Care grounds either by way of Place of Safety Orders or through committal proceedings. The breakdown was as follows: EHSSB 10, SHSSB 7, WHSSB 4 and NHSSB 3. Education and Library Boards had instigated court proceedings, which had led to the committal of 10 young people to the school for non-attendance. The breakdown of these figures were as follows, Belfast Education and Library Board 7, South Eastern Education and Library Board 2, Southern Education and Library Board 1.
- 2.5 All of the young people were engaged in either education, employment or voluntary work. The analysis is as follows:-
- |                        |      |
|------------------------|------|
| Educational/Vocational | - 71 |
| Full-time employment   | - 3  |
| YTP schemes or similar | - 19 |
| Voluntary work         | - 2  |
- 2.6 The length of stay in St Patrick's has come down significantly and this may be due to the development of the policy of extended leave. Despite the efforts of management there are still a few boys whose stay in the

school greatly exceeds the norm. The following table gives details of the length of stay of the total population.

| Length of Stay | No of Residents |
|----------------|-----------------|
| Under 1 year   | 29              |
| 1 year         | 35              |
| 2 years        | 25              |
| 3 years        | 4               |
| 4 years        | 1               |
| 8 years        | 1               |
| TOTAL          | <u>95</u>       |

- 2.7 Further information about the residents, including some indication of the range of the problems which confront the St Patrick's staff is given later in this report. What is significant is that, in total terms, the actual numbers overall have reduced and the number of young people on campus has dropped dramatically.



### 3. MANAGEMENT AND STAFFING

3.1 St Patrick's Training School provides for the education and vocational training of boys who are accommodated on the premises in one of 5 residential units, ie 3 care and 2 justice. An assessment service is provided to the courts and to the residential units by a team specialising in this work. The training school is also responsible for a number of former residents who are living with parents, relatives and guardians while on extended leave, licence or supervision. It discharges this responsibility mainly, though not entirely, through a group of fieldworkers (aftercare) who operate from the school. In order to obtain a comprehensive view of the management and staffing structure of this complex facility the inspectors used a questionnaire to collect information on the sex, age, designation and qualifications of all those contributing to the residential task, and to the aftercare function. This survey was extended to include those teachers and instructors who perform extraneous duties outside of school hours.

3.2 Seventy-three returns were made and the table below classifies them according to the respective designations.

Table 1

|                                  |    |
|----------------------------------|----|
| DIRECTOR                         | 1  |
| SENIOR DEPUTY DIRECTOR           | 1  |
| DEPUTY DIRECTOR                  | 2  |
| ASSISTANT DIRECTOR               | 4  |
| DEPUTY ASSISTANT DIRECTOR        | 2  |
| SENIOR ASSISTANT                 | 1  |
| SENIOR RESIDENTIAL SOCIAL WORKER | 5  |
| RESIDENTIAL SOCIAL WORKER        | 30 |
| SENIOR SOCIAL WORKER (AFTERCARE) | 1  |
| SOCIAL WORKER (AFTERCARE)        | 3  |
| TEACHER/INSTRUCTOR (EDA)         | 16 |
| NIGHT SUPERVISOR                 | 7  |
|                                  | —  |
| TOTAL                            | 73 |

A number of the senior staff, ie the director, deputy directors and two of the assistant directors do not work directly with the young people in the units on a regular basis. This holds also for two residential social workers engaged in assessment and for the four staff providing the Aftercare Service. The night supervisors take over from the unit staff in the evenings after the boys have been settled for the night. This leaves 38 staff providing care at unit level with the assistance of 16 teachers and instructors who have a part-time commitment through undertaking extraneous duties.

3.3 The deployment of the full-time staff at unit level is set out below:-



TABLE 2

STAFF DEPLOYMENT BY UNIT (TOTAL 38 STAFF)

| UNIT DESIGNATIONS                | SENIOR JUSTICE | JUNIOR JUSTICE | SENIOR CARE (CHALET 3) | JUNIOR CARE (CHALET 1) | JUNIOR CARE (CHALET 2) |
|----------------------------------|----------------|----------------|------------------------|------------------------|------------------------|
| Assistant Director               | 1              | 1              | 0                      | 0                      | 0                      |
| Deputy Assistant Director        | 1              | 1              | 0                      | 1                      | 0                      |
| Senior Assistant                 | 0              | 1              | 0                      | 0                      | 0                      |
| Senior Residential Social Worker | 2              | 2              | 0                      | 0                      | 1                      |
| Residential Social Worker        | 6              | 8              | 4                      | 5                      | 5                      |

- 3.4 It can be seen from Table 2 that there is an uneven distribution of senior staff between the units, eg there are 5 posts above residential social worker level in Junior Justice and only one each in Chalets 1 and 2 (Junior Care). There are four promoted posts in Senior Justice though Chalet 3 (Senior Care) comes within the ambit of Senior Justice Management. All of the staff at unit level including those in management positions work on a 2 shift system and broadly speaking this means only half of them are on duty at any one time. The Inspectors did not observe any clear distinction in the role of the four grades of senior staff, ie assistant director, deputy assistant director, senior assistant and senior residential social worker. They concluded that each unit should be managed by a senior residential social worker who would lead a team of residential social workers ie there should be only two grades of staff at unit level, and this is recommended. Further reference will be made to the senior management structure later in this Chapter. However, the Inspectors also found that none of the staff in St Patrick's had job descriptions and this may have contributed to the confusion of senior staff roles at Unit level. At the time of the inspection senior management had just completed a set of job descriptions for all staff but were awaiting the outcome of the inspection before issuing them. Therefore it is recommended that the staff job descriptions are issued as a matter of urgency.

### Staffing Levels

- 3.5 In order to calculate the level of staffing required to provide adequate supervision and care for the residents and others who use the facilities of St Patrick's, it is necessary to determine the overall capacity. Staffing must be sufficient to meet the needs, not only of all the children who are resident on a given day, but also those who are placed in other settings and who may be returned at short notice. In addition there should be some small capacity to cope with the unexpected. For these reasons it is recommended that the capacity of the school (ie the number of residential places to be provided and covered by residential social workers) should be calculated using the following criteria:-
- a. children resident;
  - b. children in hospital;
  - c. children at home on leave;
  - d. children on extended leave for less than 3 months;
  - e. children who have absconded for less than 3 months; plus
  - f. 2 contingency places.
- 3.6 Using the formula set out above, data collected by St Patrick's management over an 18 month period to 31 January 1988 suggests that the capacity of the training school should be 76 places. This has enabled the Inspectors to calculate the level of staffing required for a facility of this size. However, it must be stressed that the number of places provided is a matter for agreement between the St Patrick's Management Board and the Northern Ireland Office.
- 3.7 The Castle Priory method of calculating staffing requirements involves the following equation:
- $$\frac{\text{Children's Waking Week}}{\text{Staff Working Week}} \times \frac{\text{Capacity of Units}}{\text{Number of Children requiring one staff}}$$
- In addition to this basic formula, account is taken of staff leave entitlement and extra staff hours required during the children's school holidays.
- 3.8 St Patrick's staff work a 39 hour week. The children's waking week is approximately 70 hours during term time and an allowance has been made for the school holiday period when full responsibility for them falls to the residential social work staff. It is important to emphasise that the Castle Priory formula is designed to arrive at an overall staffing complement for the training school and does not prescribe staffing levels for each unit. It is a matter for management to determine staff deployment between units in accordance with the needs pertaining there at any time. There may be differences in the needs of children



allocated to the units which necessitate using different staffing ratios. As St Patrick's is presently organised a ratio of one staff to 4 children can be used throughout the facility, though this may have to be reviewed if specialisation occurs ie a unit is made secure or designated for reception/assessment.

- 3.9 Using the formula set out above it is calculated that the whole time equivalent of 44 staff, at senior residential social worker and residential social worker level, are required and this is recommended. This is subject to an agreed capacity of 76 places and to the role of each unit remaining unchanged.

#### LENGTH OF SERVICE

- 3.10 Table 3 indicates the length of time spent in the training schools service by St Patrick's staff. It is clear that there is a low staff turnover, 86% had more than 2 years service, 73% more than 6 years service and 12% more than 20 years service. There is also a very high correlation between staff length of service and length of time spent in residential child care. This should ensure a stable environment at St Patrick's and help to generate a sense of security in the young people living there.

TABLE 3

| DESIGNATIONS                     | LENGTH OF SERVICE |     |     |       |       |       |     |       |
|----------------------------------|-------------------|-----|-----|-------|-------|-------|-----|-------|
|                                  | 0-1               | 2-5 | 6-9 | 10-14 | 15-19 | 20-24 | 25+ | TOTAL |
| Director                         | 0                 | 1   | 0   | 0     | 0     | 0     | 0   | 1     |
| Senior Deputy Director           | 0                 | 0   | 0   | 0     | 0     | 0     | 1   | 1     |
| Deputy Director                  | 0                 | 0   | 0   | 0     | 0     | 1     | 1   | 2     |
| Assistant Director               | 0                 | 0   | 0   | 1     | 1     | 2     | 0   | 4     |
| Deputy Assistant Director        | 0                 | 0   | 0   | 1     | 0     | 0     | 1   | 2     |
| Senior Assistant                 | 0                 | 0   | 0   | 1     | 0     | 0     | 0   | 1     |
| Senior Residential Social Worker | 0                 | 0   | 1   | 3     | 1     | 0     | 0   | 5     |
| Residential Social Worker        | 9                 | 7   | 8   | 4     | 1     | 0     | 0   | 29    |
| Field Social Worker (After Care) | 0                 | 0   | 2   | 2     | 0     | 0     | 0   | 4     |
| Teacher/Instructor (EDA)         | 0                 | 0   | 0   | 9     | 5     | 1     | 1   | 16    |
| TOTALS                           | 9                 | 8   | 11  | 21    | 8     | 4     | 4   | 65    |

## LEVEL OF QUALIFIED STAFF

3.11 The professional qualifications held by St Patrick's staff are set out in Table 4 against their designations.

TABLE 4

| DESIGNATIONS                     | LENGTH OF SERVICE |     |        |         |           |      |
|----------------------------------|-------------------|-----|--------|---------|-----------|------|
|                                  | CQSW              | CSS | CRCCYP | CERT ED | ICSC/ISSC | PCSC |
| Director                         | 0                 | 0   | 0      | 1       | 0         |      |
| Senior Deputy Director           | 0                 | 0   | 1      | 0       | 0         |      |
| Deputy Director                  | 0                 | 0   | 0      | 2       | 0         |      |
| Assistant Director               | 0                 | 0   | 3      | 2       | 0         | 0    |
| Deputy Assistant Director        | 0                 | 0   | 2      | 0       | 0         | 0    |
| Senior Assistant                 | 0                 | 0   | 1      | 0       | 0         | 0    |
| Senior Residential Social Worker | 1                 | 0   | 3      | 0       | 0         | 0    |
| Residential Social Worker        | 3                 | 3   | 4      | 4       | 2         | 0    |
| Field Social Worker (After Care) | 2                 | 0   | 0      | 1       | 0         | 0    |
| Teacher/Instructor (EDA)         | 0                 | 0   | 0      | 7       | 0         | 0    |
| TOTALS                           | 6                 | 3   | 14     | 17      | 2         | 0    |

Twenty two staff (33%) have professional qualifications in social work or residential child care and 16 others (including 7 teachers who perform extraneous duties) hold a Certificate in Education. Two residential social workers have undertaken the In-Service Course in Social Care. However 21 staff, approximately one-third of those engaged in the residential social work task are unqualified. It is recommended that Management should take steps to formulate individual training profiles for all staff and and to seek ways of increasing the number of qualified staff through developing a policy of positive action on training. When the opportunity arises priority shall be given to the recruitment of qualified residential social workers.

## FEMALE STAFF

3.12 One of the senior management group, the assistant director (education), 3 residential social workers are women. There are female staff employed as teachers, nurses, matron and deputy matron and in domestic and ancillary occupations. However at unit level, where much of the care is provided



on a day to day basis the staff is comprised of 3 women (8%) and 35 (92%) men. There are historical reasons for this imbalance but the Inspectors take the view that young people growing up in residential care, whatever their gender, should profit from relating to adults of both sexes. There should be female residential social workers available to the young people in each residential unit and it is recommended that management should give every consideration to employing women, all other things being equal, at the first opportunity.

#### FUNCTIONAL MANAGEMENT

- 3.13 St Patrick's senior management group comprises of a director, a senior deputy director, 2 deputy directors, 4 assistant directors, 2 deputy assistant directors, a senior assistant and a senior social worker. The 3 deputy directors are accountable to the director respectively for the areas of care, justice and education. However, an assistant director who co-ordinates assessment throughout the campus and the senior social worker (aftercare) are also accountable to the director for their specific areas of work.
- 3.14 The deputy director (Justice) has 2 assistant directors, a deputy assistant director and a senior assistant, while the senior deputy director (Care) has only the support of a deputy assistant director. However the assistant director (education) has a straddle role between the classroom and the care units and this will be referred to again later in the report (para 9.8). In effect this means that the justice side of St Patrick's with 2 residential units has 5 managers and the care side with 3 residential units has 2½ managers.
- 3.15 Reference has already been made (para 3.4) to the desirability of having each residential unit led by a senior residential social worker and the need for clarification of senior staff roles at unit level. It would appear that the use of senior managers at unit level has evolved because there were no clearly defined management tasks for them to undertake. The Inspectors concluded that the role and function of those occupying senior management posts were unclear and that the management structure is cumbersome and top heavy in relation to the number of professional staff at unit level. Therefore it is recommended that the Management Board review the role, function and structure of the senior management team above senior residential social worker level.

#### STAFF SUPERVISION

- 3.16 A formal system of staff supervision is considered by the Inspectors to be an essential component of a management system, within any structured organisation, which seeks to

deliver a professional service to its clients. Fundamentally, supervision makes staff at one level accountable to their superiors at a higher level. Through the supervision process managers can facilitate the growth and development of staff and enable them to enhance their knowledge and skills. Although there is hierarchical management structure in St Patrick's the Inspectors were disappointed to find that staff supervision was not provided at any level. Therefore it is recommended that regular staff supervision is introduced for all professional staff and that the supervision sessions are formally recorded.

- 3.17 In paragraphs 3.11 above reference was made to the high level of unqualified staff serving in St Patrick's. The staffing returns have indicated that few staff have had in-service training and only 6 had attended short courses during the 12 month preceding the inspection. The Inspectors were advised that 2 in-service courses were being planned ie one on "child management skills" taken by a psychologist from the Adolescent Psychology and Research Unit, and another on "substance abuse" by staff from Shaftesbury Square Hospital. While this development is welcomed, the Inspectors recommend that training profiles should be compiled for all staff to identify specific training deficits. Thereafter, management should arrange further in-service training and where appropriate release staff to attend relevant short-courses.

#### SENIOR STAFF MEETINGS

- 3.18 The director has business meetings with his 3 deputies whenever the need arises. However, the full senior staff group met together regularly up until Christmas 1987. There was a specific focus for these meetings, ie the refinement of policies and procedures relating to the training school for inclusion in the new staff handbook. There is general agreement that these meetings improve communication between staff from different professional backgrounds and who operate in separate parts of the complex. It is the view of the Inspectors that formal meetings of groups of senior staff are essential in a large multi-functional establishment and this is recommended. Furthermore, to be effective they should be held at regular intervals with an agenda prepared beforehand and minutes should be taken.

#### NIGHT SUPERVISORS

- 3.19 There are 7 full time night supervisors, including one senior, who operate from 9.00 pm through to 8.00 am. Five of them are on duty each week night ie one in each unit, but this is reduced to 3 at weekends when many of the boys are on leave. The senior night supervisor makes a brief written report of occurrences during the night and logs



admissions, abscondings, telephone calls etc. Standing orders for the night's supervisors are as follows:-

- i. report for duty at 9.00 pm;
- ii. check yard gate, all windows and doors, and secure all windows to prevent storm damage;
- iii. attend to heating boilers as directed;
- iv. assist residential social worker in putting boys to bed;
- v. names of new admissions, absentees and absconders of preceding day, should be obtained from the senior residential social worker in charge and entered in report book;
- vi. lights should normally be out by 11.00 pm;
- vii. boys who wet beds require to be called at intervals during the night;
- viii. boys going out to work must adhere to their coming in time, in accordance with the arrangements made by the director, late arrivals should be recorded in the book;
- ix. boys going out to work to be called at a suitable time;
- x. no boy should be in another boy's room after 9.30 pm;
- xi. all misconduct which may be observed during the night, eg smoking, talking, etc should be recorded in the book;
- xii. transistors, tape-recorders, etc should be played at an acceptable volume and discontinued at a reasonable time;
- xiii. care should be taken that no unnecessary lights are allowed on during the night;
- xiv. periodic checks of school surroundings should be carried out;
- xv. report book should be returned to the housemaster's office each morning;
- xvi. attend to telephone and record time and brief summary of all calls;

xvii. off duty according to time stated in rota;

xviii. open main gates in the morning.

3.20 The Inspectors appreciate the advantages of having fresh staff coming on duty and staying awake throughout the night to supervise the residents and to look after the premises. However, when it comes to the care of boys with a problematic background and a history of disturbed behaviour, it is also desirable to have available staff, who are skilled in managing them and who are familiar with their care plans. Therefore it is recommended that at least one of the residential social workers sleeps in each unit during the night.



#### 4. LOCATION AND PREMISES

- 4.1 St Patrick's Training School is located in West Belfast approximately 5 miles from the city centre. It occupies a 100 acre site fronting on to the Glen Road, with the Springfield Road to the rear, and the Monagh Road on one side. The school is situated in a built-up area close to the Turf Lodge and Andersonstown housing estates. St Patrick's is surrounded by amenities which serve the local community ie: schools, churches, shops, etc. and public transport is available from the front gate.
- 4.2 There is a gate lodge beside the Glen Road entrance from which the school is approached, via a steep tarmacadam drive. Four staff houses are clustered in a tree-lined grove just off the drive to the right and further along Chalet 3 is sited to the front of the main building. The grounds are set out in grass and shrubbery which gives way to a plantation of coniferous trees.
- 4.3 On a plinth directly in front of the entrance hall stands a statue of St John The Baptist De La Salle, founder of the De La Salle Order. To one side is a substantial house where the religious community is domiciled. The main building, which is of block design and constructed with rustic brick, occupies an elevated site and dominates the local landscape. From its front steps magnificent panorama of Belfast can be observed below.
- 4.4 A single storey administrative building juts out beyond the site line and is connected to the school by a chapel and a gymnasium which enclose a small garden. The complex is comprised of a 3-storied building running the length of the school with wings at right angles to each side. At their extremities the wings are joined by class rooms which turn inwards to provide 2 enclosed yards separated by the central kitchen and dining rooms. A plan of the ground floor of the main building is attached at Appendix A.
- 4.5 The ground floor provides changing and showering facilities, toilets, recreation, games and leisure areas for use by the boys and office space for the residential social workers. The first and second floors are comprised mainly of cubicles in which the young people sleep and associated living rooms, washrooms and toilets. However, one of the first floor wings provides offices, conference and interview rooms used by the assessment staff. The sick bay, medical and dental rooms are situated centrally on the second floor with a laundry, sewing room and clothing store located below on the first floor. The former cloister, situated above the kitchen, now provides office and storage space for 2 deputy directors, the matron and her deputy.
- 4.6 Steps lead up from the enclosed yards through to the rear of the main block. Beyond there are outdoor sporting facilities provided for the boys ie: a football pitch

with changing rooms, and 2 small all weather playing surfaces enclosed by a chainlink fence. There are also handball alleys in close proximity to the indoor sports area. This is comprised of a large play hall (120 ft x 80 ft) with grey brick walls, a smooth playing surface and a spectators gallery. Juxtaposed, though separate from it, is a 25 metre heated swimming pool and associated changing area with toilet and showers.

- 4.7 Some distance beyond the sports hall stand Chalets 1 and 2. They face the south and are joined by a central entrance hall. These provide accommodation for 2 groups each of 11 boys. Provision is made also for accommodating resident staff and their families in maisonettes attached to the end of each chalet but with separate entrances.
- 4.8 The ground rises from the back of Chalets 1 and 2 towards the Springfield Road exit. Most of it is farmed by boys from the school under the supervision of a qualified instructor. His residence is close to the rear exit as are a number of outbuildings including 2 Dutch barns, a storage shed for machinery, a garage and 2 loose boxes.



## 5. JUSTICE

- 5.1 Generally boys who are remanded to St Patrick's by the courts or committed there on a Training School Order for offending, are placed in one of two Justice units functioning on the campus. Both are located within the main school block ie: junior justice on the west wing and senior justice on the east wing. The boys are classified according to their ages on arrival at St Patrick's ie: all those between 10 and 15 years are juniors and those over 15 years are seniors.
- 5.2 The division between junior and senior justice appears to stem from Section 87 of the Children and Young Person's Act which refers to the duration of Training School Orders, ie: the period varies dependent upon whether or not the young person has attained 16 years of age. However, while the Inspectors feel that the separation of boys committed for care and justice should be absolute, they do not hold with a further division on grounds of age. Therefore it is recommended that in future each of the justice units should cater for boys sent to the training school for offending regardless of their age.
- 5.3 References will be made later in this report (para 6.3) to the practice of transferring recalcitrant individuals on the care side of St Patrick's to the justice units. Although the practice is apparently not widespread the Inspectors find this policy unacceptable and disruptive and recommended that it is reviewed as a matter of urgency.
- 5.4 The general policy objectives for the school including the justice units are as follows:-
1. To provide the best possible service of education, care and treatment of each boy whose needs are not being appropriately met within his social environment.
  2. To develop education and care programmes based upon the identified needs of each boy and to foster in each boy a belief in his ability to make changes in his life and experience success within the framework of society.
  3. To protect the boy from the community and the community from the boy, at times when their respective needs are in conflict.
  4. To rehabilitate each boy within his own family or, where this is not possible, within his own community.

## MANAGEMENT AND STAFFING

- 5.5 A deputy director is accountable to the director for the management of the justice side of St Patrick's. He is assisted by 2 assistant directors, a deputy assistant



director and a senior assistant, who operate mainly at unit level ie: an assistant director plus a deputy assistant director in senior justice and an assistant director and a senior assistant in junior justice. In practice they work on 2 shifts and these are arranged in such a manner as to have an assistant director present in one of the 2 justice units during the waking day.

- 5.6 In addition to the above, senior justice is staffed by 2 senior residential social workers and 6 residential social workers. Junior justice has 2 senior residential social workers and 8 residential social workers. All of these work on shifts. Therefore in numerical terms there are 10 full time staff in one unit and 12 in the other and these are supported in the evenings and at weekends by school staff, mainly teachers and instructors, doing extraneous duties. All professional staff working in the justice units are male and in para 3.12 reference has already been made to the desirability of having female residential social workers in each unit.
- 5.7 There is a wide range of experience, skills and training in both units. The length of service ranges from 26 years at one end of the continuum to a few months in post at the other end with a mean of 8 years service. Altogether 10 staff hold relevant qualifications (1 CQSW, 1 CSS, 8 CCRCCYP), one is presently on a CSS course, and 5 others are graduates or hold teaching qualifications. Six staff are unqualified.
- 5.8 Reference has been made earlier in this report to the lack of clarity of staff roles at unit level. (Para 3.4). It is sufficient to repeat here the need for clear job descriptions for all grades of staff. Also, with such a concentration of senior staff at unit level, it was not surprising to find that the senior residential social workers and the residential social workers felt that they were well supported. However the Inspectors take the view that staff must also be made accountable for their professional practice to their superiors through a regular, structured, individual supervision system and this is recommended.
- 5.9 It was interesting to note that the assistant and deputy assistant directors in the justice side of St Patrick's regarded themselves as providing leadership by example to the unit staff. They also felt that they were responsible for disciplining boys for misbehaviour even when this occurred in the classroom or workshop. To some extent this can be viewed as a paternalistic approach to management, which may usurp the authority of lower rank staff and prevent them from developing appropriate working relationships with the residents.
- 5.10 Each unit has a weekly staff meeting ie: on Wednesdays at 2 pm for senior justice and on Tuesdays at 2 pm for junior



justice. In each case the meetings are led by the appropriate assistant director and all team members are required to attend. The senior justice meeting also embraces the staff group who work in Chalet 3 (care). The Inspectors felt that this was an anomaly and further reference will be made to it in paragraph 6.2 of this report. The staff meetings are used to discuss and to share information about individual boys and their progress/behaviour and any matters of general concern.

- 5.11 The Inspectors concluded that the staff at unit level appeared to have the requisite skills and experience to meet the needs of the boys placed in their charge. They were impressed by the motivation and commitment of some individuals and by 1 or 2 groups of staff. However much more could be achieved through a well structured and cohesive system with clear lines of accountability at all levels of management.

#### THE NEEDS AND PROBLEMS OF THE YOUNG PEOPLE

- 5.12 On 15 December 1987 the justice units in St Patrick's were responsible for 60 boys ie: 28 juniors and 32 seniors. The majority, 57, were committed by the courts by offending, though one of these was on a short term (4 weeks) order. The 3 others were on remand pending court hearings. The director plans to separate boys on short term placements and those who are remanded in custody to St Patrick's from the others by making provision for them in another unit. The Inspectors would wish to support this development.
- 5.13 Only 33 boys were residing in the Justice units census day. 11 had been temporarily placed in Lisnevin Training School, 8 had absconded, 2 were in hospital, one was boarded out with foster parents and 6 who were on extended leave were living at home. Nineteen boys (11 placed in Lisnevin plus 8 absconders), or one-third of all those on roll in the Justice units had not settled in St Patrick's and/or were a danger to others or to themselves. Faced with these seemingly intractable problems, many unit staff appear to accept the high level of unconforming behaviour by the boys and look to structures and agencies outside of St Patrick's to resolve the situation. Later in this report the Inspectors will make recommendations, which if implemented, should go some way towards improving matters.
- 5.14 Nevertheless it is accepted that many boys arrive at St Patrick's having been involved in serious delinquent activities and with a well chronical history of disruptive behaviour in other settings. The following vignettes are indicative of the type of presenting problems facing the St Patrick's staff:-